



MNGUNI AMANDA

DEEPLY OBSESSIONS

By

AMANDA MNGUNI



PROLOGUE

The hooting sounds of cars moving up and down the streets of Johannesburg, but what can you say about it since it wasn't much to be said rather than to wake up and get ready for school,

work and to hustle? Being the child of Nomasonto, Nosi was a humble child full of life. She had dreams to fulfill, a very lovely child you can find. That was before everything! That was before God took her beloved mother, that was before she was kicked out the house back in the village. She immediately changed. Not because she wanted to, but because she had to.

Mapula: "Nosi wake up!" Her best friend roughly shook her from the cardboard she was sleeping on. That was her blankets for the night and she's used to it. For

almost six years living on the streets, Nosi was able to hustle for herself.

She groans on the cold floor just outside of the Shop, luckily the shop owner wasn't able to find them since they made sure to wake up in the early hours of the morning. It wasn't them only, there were other kids too

Nosi: "What time is it Mapula?"

Her only friend from the streets, Mapula. They immediately clicked when they arrived in the streets of Johannesburg. Mapula ran

from home as she was sexually abused by her uncle

Mapula: "it's past 6, Mr Mohale will be here in any minute now wake up" she had a watch which she stole from a fancy woman in town

Nosi: "God we need to go" She dragged herself from the floor

Mapula: "Hurry Nosi"

Nosi: "Yeah I'm done, let's go"

They immediately ran afar from the shop where they had to start their hustle

Nosi walked over to the crowd just at the Mall in her dirty rags but she didn't care about her

looks. She is used to it. She spot a man carrying a briefcase as she followed silently behind him. She looked around for a while before she threw herself on the man. The man caught her before she could hit the ground.

Man: "Oh my God are you alright?" His concern was much visible. Just a sexy man that is, Nosi thought to herself but she wasn't about to entertain that
Nosi: "I..I..It was my fault I'm sorry" She adjust herself as her eyes roamed around

Man: "It's ohk, Just look where you're going" Nosi nods with a

slight smile before she walked away from him.

She walked faster until she decided to run. Her feet took her out of that sight of the man until she felt a tap on her shoulder. When she looked up she was met by a group of buff men in suits.

Nosi: "What do you want from me?" You wouldn't miss her attitude. It hard hard and very rude. Talking about such a hardcore little girl

One Man: "We believe you got something that doesn't belong to you"

Nosi: "What do you mean by that?"

One Man: "Doesn't a wallet ring a bell to you?" She looked at this man before she turned to run.

They immediately followed behind her but Nosi was a fast runner, she is used to this.

She turned to a road which she knew it will take her to their hiding place but it wasn't so long that she was dragged to the car. She was caught!

Nosi: "Take me back!" She shouts

One man: "Not after you made us run like that? Are you seriously a girl?"

Nosi: "Fuck you"

One man: "Fuck you back, I wouldn't mind you moaning my name either way" Nosi spit on his face

One man: "Fuck you!" She looked so proud of herself, she didn't have any regrets

Nosi: "That's what you get from being a bitch, you're an ass"

One man: "I will fuck you off!" She wasn't about to be threatened, that she knew

Nosi: "Fuck off"

AT THE MHLONGO
RESIDENCE

Nhla laughed throwing his head back. He looked at his brother who was whining like some kid. He was telling him about some bitch who outsmart him. That was something new.

Nhla: "I didn't know there are some people who can be this smart on you"

Sizwe: "Fuck you! I didn't think that girl would Rob me my wallet. I was helping her" Oh yeah. Nhla didn't take this very well, to him it was such a joke.

The very powerful Nhlakanipho who is loaded. At his early 30s, he is still a handsome sexy man. He

screamed money and he was a very serious person behind everything, only his family manage to handle him. His friends too.

Nhla: "So she ran into you just do she can steal the wallet? Let me go and tell Mlungisi about this" He takes his car keys from the shiny expensive table

Sizwe: "Nhla you'll cry don't shit on me"

Nhla: "Oh yeah Mama's boy" He made his way out

Finally the car stopped at this High building which belonged to the Dube family. They are the Fifth richest family with the

Mhlongo being the First. Mlungisi Dube is Nhlakanipho's best friend. "Oh Nhla" Bontle hugged Nhla leading him to the living room where Mlungisi was busy with his laptop. He looked up to be met by his best friend.

Mlungisi: "Hey Nhla, how are yo"

Nhla: "Very good, wena zishan?"

Mlungisi: "It's work and my family man, I can't find my first born"

Nhla: "Uthe how old is she?"

Mlungisi: "I think she's 16, the last time I saw her was at the age of 6" He ran his hands on his face looking so frustrated

Nhla: "You shouldn't have left her"

Mlungisi: "I was young and stupid"

Nhla: "Come on you were 24" Nhla reasoned

Mlungisi: "It's still the same"

Nhla: "You will find her man, just pray" Mlungisi bust out laughing looking at Nhla since that was new

Nhla: "Don't look at me like that, I want to tell you about Sizwe's episode"

Mlungisi: "Bab'ngobhozi, let me ask Bontle for some tea"

Nhla: "I want something strong"

CHAPTER 1
NARRATED

The car finally parked outside this big house. Nosi looked at these people as she looked back at this tall building. That was sure a Mansion. The man who has been answering her climbed out of the car dragging her along. They finally made their way inside. The house was pure white with a touch of Gold, it was so clean and beautiful. A type of a house she had dreamt to live in. Fear overcame her as her eyes landed on Sizwe; the guy she stole a wallet from but she wasn't about to back down.

Sizwe: "So? You think you're smart huh?" She looked at him without saying anything until he chuckled
Sizwe: "You don't know how to talk Miss Wallet stealer! Do you know who I am?"

Nosi: "Do you think I care?" he looked at this girl, this was the first time meeting such a girl

Sizwe: "Who are you to give me such an attitude? I can end your life just like that"

Nosi: "I can be your wonderful dream at night then, I wouldn't want to get busy giving you some nightmares"

Sizwe: "Jesus! You're such a

useless bitch"

Nosi: "You're a dog! Get me out of here and leave me alone"

Sizwe: Sigh "I'm giving you one last chance little girl, where's my wallet and do you know who I am?"

Nosi: Shrugged her shoulders "Should I know you? Are you a celebrity or something?" She fold her arms

A woman in her early 50s walked inside the living room as she slowly looked at Sizwe then turned her attention to Nosi.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Sizwe what's going on here?" He looked at Nosi then

at her mom

Sizwe: "Nothing is going on mom, don't worry yourself"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Are you by anyway abusing this child?"

Sizwe: "What!? Mom how can you think of something like that?"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I wouldn't know, how are you my dear!?" Mrs Mhlongo was a lovely woman.

She's from a very religious family and she got married to the mighty James Mhlongo. Your typical Zulu man who is strict and charming.

Nosi: "I'm good, I just want to go home"

Mrs Mhlongo: looks at Sizwe "Sizwe leave the child alone, let her go"

Sizwe: "But Mom this child stole my wallet and there are important things in there"

Mrs Mhlongo: "She doesn't look like a thief to me, she's just..j"

Nosi: "You can say it, I'm dirty. Can I go home now?" She set her eyes at Sizwe

Sizwe: "Not without giving me my wallet, look I need some things from there"

Nosi: "I didn't take your wallet Mr, I'm not a thief and i wouldn't try to be one"

Sizwe: "Y-"

Nosi: "You've just assumed that I stole your wallet hence you don't have evidence, can I please go" Sizwe shook his head because he wasn't about to let her go.

The door was pulled open and Nhla made his way inside looking at the dirty Nosi.

Nhla: "What's up" He directed the question to Sizwe

Sizwe: "This is the chick who stole my wallet, she doesn't want to bring it back"

Nhla: "Oh" She observed Nosi as he could see that she's a resemble of Mlungisi. It was so visible that

you could see it from afar. This girl looked exactly like Mlungisi
Nhla: "I need to make a call"

Nhla dialed Mlungisi's phone number who answered on his second ring. He was annoyed because he was about to make out with his beautiful wife
Mlungisi: "Nhlakanipho you don't have timing, talk I need to smash my beautiful wife"

Nhla: "I think I just saw your daughter, i... I'm not sure if she's your daughter but I could see that resembles man"

Mlungisi: "Are you sure?"

Nhla: "I'm sure, she's the chick Sizwe told me about. The one who stole his wallet"

Mlungisi: sigh "I need to see her"

Nhla: "No take it easy, don't rush"

Mlungisi: "Do you understand that I could lose my daughter Nhla and you're telling me to take it easy"

Mlungisi: "You'll make her run"

Mfethu take it easy"

Nhla: sigh "Fine, I'll see you so we can talk"

Mlungisi: "Sure"

The village of

KwaNongoma, where Nosi was

born. The place where her beloved

mother was buried. The place where she was kicked out by her grandmother whom saw nothing but a curse in Nosi. 'A child of a prostitute that is' She was called just that. Nomsa walked inside the house from Cape Town, she just came to visit her family.

Nomsa is Nosi's step sister but unlike her, she had everything. She's a beautiful girl and very spoilt. At the age of 18, She just got married to one of the business tycoon around South Africa. Her mother smile immediately when she spot her daughter.

Martha: "Oh My daughter you came" She hugged her

Nomsa: "Yes dear mother, my husband is out of town and I thought I should come and see my family"

Martha: "That's very good of you, let's go in and greet your grandma"

Nomsa: "Oh Yeah we can go in"

They walked in finding her

Grandmother drinking her tea.

She has become a little bit old but the evilness is still roaming around her.

Grandma: "Look who came to see us"

Nomsa: "I miss you so much grandma, and my husband is out of town so I thought why not come and see you?"

Grandma: "You're such a lovely child unlike your sister"

Martha: "Let's not talk about her Mom, I don't understand what Mlungisi saw in Nomasono. I was much better than my sister"

Grandma: "You still the, and you need to tell him about Nomsa"

Martha: "I don't know where he is, he won't even believe me since I drugged him"

Grandma: "You had no choice, Mlungisi belonged to you not your

sister. He has to father Nomsa"

Nomsa: "But I'm old Grandma"

Grandma: "That will give your mother an opportunity to marry Mlungisi again, that man has a lot of money"

Martha: "Yeah mom you're right, we should hire something to look for Mlungisi"

Grandma: "Let's not waste anymore time"

Mlungisi was dating Nomasonto but Martha was so bitter to see her sister happy. She drugged Mlungisi and slept with him.

That's how Nomsa was conceived but Martha never dared to tell

Mlungisi, she went to stay with her Aunt. Years passed by and Nomasonto fell Pregnant with Nosibusiso. Seven years later he ran away because of a new love leaving his daughter behind.

That's when Martha came back from Living with her Aunt.

Martha: "I will get onto it"

CHAPTER 2

NOSIBUSISO

Looking at this guy who wasn't about to let me go, I knew he wasn't. That was what I do.

Calling it a hustle. Go to town,

pickpocket a fancy woman or a man and go have something to eat. I really didn't go to school but I'm smart and very careful with things so I really never got caught until recently. Sometimes I wonder on how things would be like if my dearest mother was still here. My mother used to tell me about my dearest father until she took her last breath. Oh Mlungisi, she would always have a wide smile across her face when that name was said. I really don't know what happened in my family; all I knew is that my

Nomsa and I shared a father.
There was no explanation.

Sizwe: "You're not ready to give me my wallet huh? or listen, just give it to me then I will take whatever I want then give it back to you"

That will be an evidence that I'm an actual thief, I really don't want anyone judging the life I'm living whereas they live in such a Mansion

Me: "I didn't steal your wallet Sizwe, what evidence do you have to support that statement"

Sizwe: "Don't play games with me, give me my wallet then I will give

it back after taking whatsoever I want from it"

I sighed looking at him as he was taking my energy and patience, thinking about what I'm going to eat tonight since this guy is not ready to let me go. I'm sure he's not about to dine with me. The gentleman I saw earlier made his way downstairs, I really didn't take a look at him but right now. I can see everything, Such a panty dropper though you won't miss the fact that he's a little bit old. My eyes shifted to this size.

Me: "Siwe or Sizwe whatever you are, I need to leave"

"Let the kid go Sizwe" that was the panty dropper, his voice!

Sizwe: "Nhla don't involve yourself in this, I just need my wallet is that too much to ask?"

Me: "Yes, it's too much because I don't have an idea where your wallet shit is!"

Sizwe: "This girl is so disrespectful, I should just beat the shit out of her until she learns some respect"

Me: "Fuck you, I don't know my father so don't you dare tell me what to do. If I'm disrespectful

deal with it"

He huffs

Sizwe: "God forbid, I'm not really a woman beater but you"

He points at me as he shook his head

Nhla: "Mom would whip your bloody ass then, let the kid go"

"Actually she'll just spend the night" that had to be Mrs whatever the surname was. This woman was so beautiful and elegance. Her walk was on another level, you'd swear that she's one of the Kardashians I used to watch. I smiled at little to get because I wasn't about to

spend a night

Me: "I will go home, it's not a problem"

Mrs: "Nonsense, I wouldn't want anything happening to you and it's late"

Me: "Mam I really don't have a problem walking"

Mrs: "That wasn't a request young lady, go and clean up so you'll have your dinner"

She walked away and a lady in a maid uniform walked over to me

Her: "Mrs Mhlongo said I must show you your room, please follow me"

I have a room already? I didn't

have much choice but to follow her. The room was pink and I hated it immediately. This will give me nightmares, I would do with a purple or royal blue.

Me: "Thank you"

Her: "You're welcome, when you're done you can change into a dress. It's on the closet, then come down for dinner"

Me: "Thank you again"

Her: "You're much welcomed miss"
She walked away without my correction, I wasn't about to be called a Miss.

I was done and settled around

the table while throwing glances at Sizwe who made me so mad! I'm not used to this folk and knife kind of thing. Back when i i was staying with my so called family;I used to wake up with pap and a soup from last night's meat then watch television in my dress or wearing ANC T-shirt which belonged to my mother. At night we would eat pap with anything, but it wasn't enough. Everyone would go and eat in their room. This all is something else to me.

Me:"I... I'm can I eat with my hand? Not that I have a choice or

you would do anything about that"

It went Silence but I don't regret saying that. I'm not about to eat with a fork and a knife

Mrs Mhlongo: "It's Ok my dear you can eat"

Me: "Thank you Mrs Mhlongo, you're too kind"

I immediately dig in without anyone looking at me but they were throwing their glare. I could look at them all but not Nhla, he's too serious and intimidating. The guy is tall with her dark skin and you can see the sexiness behind

that expensive clothes. He was neat, I saw how he would swallow. I immediately shook my head throwing away those thoughts; they ain't important.

NOMSA

At the age of 18, My mother arranged a marriage for me to marry one of the business tycoon; Mvelo. He's so handsome and sexy not forgetting rich.

Things would have been much better if he wasn't in love with someone else. I looked at my mother and grandmother talking about my step sister, I wasn't

really Keen about them using me everytime when there's something but there's no much to be said

Mom: "Nomsa tell me about your husband, is he treating you good?"

I knew I had to lie

Me: "Yes Mom he's such a good husband but I was even thinking of going back to college."

Grandma: "You're a married woman Nomsa, if you go to school who will clean the house and look after your husband? You must give him an heir."

How when he doesn't want to have sex with me? Mvelo is so

different and he's every girl's dream. From his handsomeness to his sexiness.

Me: "But Gogo I want to do something, Mvelo is always away so I need some distraction."

Grandma: "Use your thighs and give him a baby, just then he'll be yours. You won't share him with any business, Angaz ukuthi why ukhala ekbeni uyakondla" (I don't know why you're crying because he's supporting you)

I nod without uttering any word. I always respect both of them since they're the one guiding me but sometimes I feel like they

are living their lives through me. Yes i got everything even Mvelo but I wanted more than that.

NOSIBUSISO

I slowly tiptoed out of Sizwe's bedroom carrying a stack of cash. This will help me for some time that I know, I made my way downstairs hopefully that no one will find me. But I was very good and this, I know that I will be out of here in few minutes. Just as I was about to hold the handle I heard that voice. That thick manly one! I slowly turned to him.

"Ngikubuzile ukuthi uyaphi
weNosi"

(I asked you where you're going)

Me: "I...I.."

...

CHAPTER 3

NOSIBUSISO

I stutter looking at him, I don't know what to say at this moment and this man is looking at me straight in my eyes. I looked at the cash which was in my hands as my eyes travelled back to him.

Me: "I'm sorry" this man is intimidating, unlike Sizwe he's so scary and there's something

which makes you to respect him
volunteery.

Nhla: "That wasn't my question
right? Nosi where are you going?"

Me: "I'm going home"

Nhla: "With that money? did you
have to steal Nosi?"

Me: "You don't understand"

Nhla: "Make me, make me
understand Nosibusiso because
right now I don't understand any
shit" I looked away from him. He's
so serious, so intimidating.

Me: "I left my best friend
behind, I don't have transport and
I had to do something which
would keep us in our toes these

few weeks"

Nhla: "Being a thief wasn't an option, I was going to give you money so you'll do your thing" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "Well I didn't know" he sigh

Nhla: "Tomorrow you'll be meeting someone"

Me: I looked up to him "What do you mean? I want to leave this place"

Nhla: "You will leave, after meeting this person" I nod

Me: "Ohk" There was no answering back with this man. There's that hidden feeling towards him and I don't know what that is.

Nhla: "Now go back to your room and sleep" I nod again making my way upstairs

Nhla: "Bring back the money" He says as I was at the staircase. I sighed handing him the cash before I made my way up

My eyes slowly opened as I scanned around the fancy room until a thought hit my mind that I'm attaching the Mhlongo household. I sighed looking at the clock beside the bed; 06:21. I got off the bed heading to the bathroom. The helper showed me on how it works. I did my hygiene

process walking back to my so called bedroom. I don't understand why everyone treats me better because I'm just a mere streetkid. I know Nhla will tell his brother about last night but they won't understand, they won't! This is my life and it's hard getting out. Pickpocketing has been a habit together with stealing anything. I had to make things happen so I can survive on the street and I did-for 6 years. I've always wanted to be a pilot;travel. I was so smart at school but I had a no choice but to drop out. I sighed dressing up

with one of the dresses and I made my way downstairs

Me: "Good morning" They greeted back as Sizwe eyed me but I brushed that off

Sizwe: "I'm surprised you didn't steal anything" So Nhla didn't tell him? I looked at him turning my attention to Nhla. He wasn't minding me or any of us. I looked back at Sizwe

Me: "I have lot of surprises" I munter chewing my food. It was quite different but so delicious.

Sizwe: "Today you're less rude" No, I'm respecting your mother. If she wasn't here; I was gonna

break your neck. That's what I wish for when my eyes land on you
Me: "When I'm nice" I looked at him

Sizwe: "Great, that's good you know" Nhla suddenly stood up. He was in his expensive formal wear, this man is killing everyone with his looks. I might just die by looking at his sexiness.

Nhla: "I'm leaving for work" he looks at me "I must find you here when i get back, no funny business since I have no time" I can't give him attitude. He's scary!

I just nod my head looking down and I heard footsteps walking

away

Mrs Mhlongo: "Don't mind Nhlakanipho's seriousness, people say he's scary but he's just a sweet boy" yoh you didn't just say he's sweet.

Me: "He's scary Mrs Mhlongo" I stated otherwise

Mrs Mhlongo: "You're overreacting, he's sweet and lovely" She was smiling throughout I didn't know what to say so I settled for a nod.

.

I was watching television since there was nothing to do. I didn't want to be in Nhla's wrong side so

I stayed and waited for him. I heard the door bang a little and my eyes immediately ran up.

Me: "Ummm I..." I really didn't know what to say. He looked at me as he scanned me

Nhla: "We need to leave, you're good?" I nod and he signalized me to follow him and I did just that. We climbed in an Audi RS8. I knew almost everything about cars and it wasn't something important to me but most of the people takes it as a shock. I'm a streetkid man! Nhla didn't even dare to look at me but I remained silently too. The car suddenly stopped and my

eyes travelled looking over the window. It was a big house but not bigger than the Mhlongo Residence. I swear if Nhla is selling me to some human traffickers I won't go down without a fight

He parked and we climbed out, he's a clean gentleman. His walk! He just place both of his hands on his pockets before he catwalk. I was following every move with no questions asked! What if it's my last day on Earth? Oh God Forgive me for whatever bad things I've done. Though I'm not such a bad kid,

I'm sweet.

"Oh Nhlakanipho" It was a woman in her mid thirties. She's so beautiful and simple

Nhla: "Bontle, how are you?" I guess she's Bontle

Bontle: "I'm fine you? And who's this beautiful girl?"

Nhla: "I came here for uhmm Mlu, is he here?" He totally avoided her question

Bontle: "Yes follow me" I followed behind to the living room. There was a man who was busy with his laptop

Nhla: "Man-Lu" They greeted each other as this Mlu looked over to

me.

Mlu: "Sibu" I looked at him, he was the only one calling me that but no it's can't be.

Me: "B..Baba" I shook my head talking few steps back

Mlu: "Sibu, Nosibusiso Sami. I've been looking at you mtanami" (my child) I remember him voice and the name but I really don't recognize him. I was only 6 years when he left so i really wouldn't recognize this man in front of me.

Me: "No..No" I shook my aiming to head to the door

Nhla: "Nosi" His thick voice stopped my tracks and he held my arm

Me: "I don't want anything to do with him Nhlakanipho, please don't let him take me or anything. I don't want anything to do with him, he left me"

He pulled me to his chest. He was smelling so wonderful. I leaned on his chest as tears flowed, with him brushing my hair

Nhla: "You need to calm down, you have to calm down Nosi" tears continued to flow regardless

NOMSA

I was going back home to my husband. I bid goodbye to my family before I drive off heading

to Cape Town, that was at 5am and in few hours I was parking the car on the driveway. I'm glad that my husband will be here soon. I made lunch for him and I heard the opening of the door.

Me: "Good Afternoon my husband" I smile helping him with his jacket

Mvelo: "Good Afternoon"

Me: "I've just prepared Lunch, is there anything you want" he shook his head

Mvelo: "I'm good, I just ate so you didn't have to bother yourself"

Me: "Ow" I sighed looking at him. This man is really handsome,

things would have been better if he was into me but he's in love with someone else. That hurts me: "So anything I could help you with?"

Mvelo: Sigh "Nomisa stop trying so hard, you're my wife but that doesn't mean that I love you nor what. I'm in love with my woman not you" Hearing him saying it, it's something I wasn't looking forward forward for.

Me: "You're hurting me Mvelo"

Mvelo: "You're the one pushing things, stop pushing it" He made his way downstairs. I sat on the

chair with my head on my hands
looking so defeated

...

CHAPTER 4

NARRATED

Nosibusiso finally calmed down and decided to listen to her father. As much as she hated him for leaving her; she had to know his reasons. They were all settled around the table as Mlungisi was busy clearing his throat non-stop. He finally looked at Nosi and sighed.

Mlu: "I loved your mother,

Nomasonto was a special case but

things weren't going very well in our relationship. I found someone whom I fell in love with, that was Bontle" Nosi scoffs looking at him
Nosi: "You decided to leave me? Baba I needed you"

Mlu: "I was stupid and I regret leaving you behind Kodwa things between your mother and I weren't working" She nods looking at him. She didn't want to ask any questions, she had enough and this will take time to sink in.

Nosi: "Mother always talked about you, that you're such a great man but things weren't meant to be"

Mlu: "Look Nosi, I've been looking

for you all over. I was so stressed about you"

Nosi: "I forgive you, I don't know why it's so easy but I forgive you but don't expect me to play daughter" She said with a firm voice. Not caring if it's her father

Mlu: "I guess I deserve that, I will give you time" She sighed

Nosi: "That will be good" Wasn't she suppose to be a little good?

Mlu: "What now? I can't let you go and live on the streets"

Nosi: "Can I" Looks at Nhla "Stay with you guys for few days, I want to settle"

Nhla: "It's Ok, you're my friend's

daughter" Nhla was so handsome and mainly. He handled things so maturely that Sizwe. Sizwe is still a fuck boy in his mid 20s as he'll be turning 26 soon.

Nosi: "I would say thank you, but I would be breaking my own laws"

Mlu: chuckles "You take after your grandfather"

Nhla: "It's a family Gene inheritance" Nosi looked at Nhla as his chuckle was not sounding the same as any other man. Maybe her ears are playing games with her

Mlu: "So Sibu, are you ready to go back to school?" Nosi looked at him

like she just smoked weed

Nosi: "No I'm not, I won't be repeating Grade 8 Mna" She shook her head

Mlu: "You can't sit around here and do nothing"

Nosi: "Then I'll look for work, I'm not about to go back to school and do Grade 8 Mlungisi" She huffs looking at Nhla

Nosi: "Let's go" Nhla gave her a death stare and she swallowed hard.

Nhla: "I'm not one o-"

Nosi: "Look I don't want to fight"

Mlu: "Sibu I will give you time to think about this and next week

you'll come back home"

They made their way inside the Mhlongo residence as they came across with this beautiful lady in a short dress. Nhla looked at her
Nhla: "What are you doing here Boity?"

Boity: "I don't get your question Nhlakanipho, I'm your woman" Nhla sighed looking at Nosi

Nhla: "Ummm Nosi this is uhh Boitumelo"

Boity: "His woman, nice to meet you Nosi. You must be his cousin"

Nosi: "You found me at the wrong

time, I was gonna mop the house with your slutty self" She clicked her tongue making her way to her room

Boity: "Baby who was that?"

Nhla: "None of your damn business, what are you doing here?"

Boity: "I'm here for you, it's been long Nhla" he sighed trying to calm himself down

Nhla: "I want you to get out of here and wait for my call"

Boity: "What? You're kicking me out?"

Nhla: "What do you think? You want me to drag you out myself"

Boity: "Nhla I... fuck you" He turned away from her knowing very well that he's not a womanbeater so he was not about to slap her or something. Boity slammed the door and it went quite

Nosi was worried about Mapula so she stood up heading to Nhlakanipho's room. She wanted him to drive her to Mapula. She knocked but no one dared to answer. She went in coming across with the naked Nhlakanipho. Her mouth formed an 'O' and her eyes travelled down

Nosi: "Oh my God is that a real thing" She spoke too fast and unexpected. Nhla laughed throwing his head back like always. Nosi realized after on what she just said and she quickly turned

Nosi: "Know what? I'll be in my room"

...

CHAPTER 5

NOSIBUSISO

At the dinner table things were a little bit awkward. After what I've saw, I didn't want to look at Nhla. It made me nervous a little and embarrassed. I kept on

playing with my spoon.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Nosi my daughter what's wrong?" I looked up to her and I shook my head

Me: "No there's nothing wrong"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You've been playing with your food Nosi, I don't think there's nothing wrong"

Me: I glanced at Nhla "No, I'm fine I'm just... I thinking I'll call it a night" My eyes travelled to Mrs Mhlongo

Mrs Mhlongo: "Ohk, if there's anything you need. I'm here Ohk?" I nod standing up

Me: "Thank you very much" I walked up to my room. I took a

few deep breath thinking about my best friend, I'm so worried about her and I think she won't have that mind: That I have abandoned her. There was a knock on the door a few minutes after and I welcomed the person in. I was so surprised to learn that it's Mrs Mhlongo, I have never spent a second with her alone.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Hello my daughter" I smile

Me: "Hey Ma"

Mrs Mhlongo: sigh "Nhla told us about your father and I'm glad that you forgive her" I nod

Me: "I'm glad too, I wasn't

expecting this all"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I know, life is too short. I made a mistake with my husband and I don't want you repeating it"

Me: "If I may ask, what happened to him?"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I was mad at him, Soo mad and he went to a pub and drank. On his way back home he was involved in a car accident" that's so bad

Me: "That's bad, I'm sorry"

Mrs Mhlongo: "It heals with time, sometimes I miss him a lot Nosi and I regret fighting with him that day" I nod

Me: "I'm glad you're healing though, your sons loves you" she smile

Mrs Mhlongo: "I love them too, Nhla has been through a lot but he's the best and Sizwe is... that's my last born" I chuckled with understanding. Every last born is a Mama's baby no matter what but Sizwe us arrogant and rude so I don't imagine that at all.

Me: "Thank you for this ma, you've made me realize that life is too short and I was thinking of going home"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I'm glad and I

want you to understand that I'm not kicking you out. You're welcome in my home"

Me: "Thank you Ma, I'll keep that in mind"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You're welcome, let me leave you to it" I nod and she made his way out.

I kept on tossing and turning on the bed and the way no sleep. I guess it's one of the sleepless nights. I've been experiencing these a lot back in that shop, I stood up taking my gown and I made my way downstairs. I was about to go back upstairs when

my eyes landed on Nhla but he called me back

Me: "Ummm you're having sleepless nights?"

Nhla: "Something like that?" I nod drinking some cold water

Me: "Ummm Bhut'Nhla" I called out for him. He looked at me and chuckled

Nhla: "Call me Nhla Nosibusiso" I breath in and out taking few steps to him

Me: "Can you please drive me to town? I need to get my best friend"

Nhla: "Mmmh, there won't be any problem Nosi I will drive you early

in the morning"

Me: "Well I would say thank you b-

"He chuckled again interrupting me

Nhla: "I get it" Oh God! Forgive me for having such thoughts but your son is another creature. He's so sexy! I wouldn't mind having him for a night. His Chuckle

"Nosibusiso!" I looked up

Me: "Mmh? Oh let me go back to my room. I don't know if I should say goodnight or what? It's 1am"

Nhla: "You can take a sit and tell me more about Yourself" I don't know what to say

Me: "There's nothing special about

me Nipho" He smiled and I realized that I've just called him with some nickname. Ohk Nosibusiso Nhla: "Nonsense, you're Special Nosi. More than you think and I..." He looked at me for a while and I held that glare until I couldn't take it anymore so my eyes ran around the room Nhla: "I'm glad you're part of us, I mean you're my friend's daughter" Yeah! That means a lot Me: "I... I guess then" I shrugged my shoulders. Did I tell you on how much this guy is making me so nervous? I wouldn't mind kissing him right now

Nhla: "Know what? You'll tell me about yourself some other time"

Me: "Would that be appropriate? Having you being my father's best friend?"

Nhla: "There's nothing wrong with knowing my friend's daughter, I mean... It will also mean I'm your Uncle"

Me: "Yeah I get it, I'll tell you some other time then" I say making my way up but before I can even take another step he called out for me

Nhla: "Nosi, stop day dreaming about me" I looked at him shocked

Me: "W..What do you mean?" I
stutter

Nhla: "I'm not blind Nosi but y..
you're my friend's daughter and
looking at me like that is
inappropriate" I smiled making my
way up. Nhlakanipho is a special
case in his own

I made my way downstairs after
my hygiene process. I groaned
with the sight of Sizwe.

Me: "Morning" Taking a cup from
the cabinet

Sizwe: "Morning Matjhontjha"

Me: "I'm not about to fight with
you Sizwe, I'm not up for it"

Sizwe: "Oh really?"

Me: "Know what? Fuck you

Sizwe, wena you think you're the
God" I huffs

Sizwe: "What have I done?"

Me: "You're all over my face like
some mosquito Geez it's
irritating"

Sizwe: "You must learn to respect
me Nosi, I'm your uncle"

Me: "Respect is earned not
demanded. Have you seen your
attitude?"

Sizwe: "What about yours?"

Me: "Know what? Know what

Sizwe Know what? Nx!" I made
my way to the living room and the

table was set so I settled down.
I'm slowly adapting to this new environment.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Good Morning" I smiled at her

Me: "Morning Ma" We started eating and Sizwe also came over.

Mrs Mhlongo: "You're dressed up, going somewhere?" Mrs Mhlongo bought me some few clothes and I was great full

Me: "Just going to town to get my Best friend"

Sizwe: "Here's another thief, we have gangsters muc lah"

Me: "I'm not coming back"

Sizwe, yaz you're an idiot and

you're stupid"

Sizwe: "Saying some w-" Mrs Mhlongo banged the table.

Mrs Mhlongo: "SIZWE!! I will beat you up Nina niyTwo" As I was there, Nhla walked downstairs with his tight suite showing off his muscles. I think I'm wet; don't ask me on where I know these things but this guy is a bomb. A volcano, he's so yummy
Nhla: "Good morning"

We replied at he looked at me with his lazy eyes

Nhla: "We have to go, I have a meeting to attend in few hours"
I nod standing up

Me: "Ma, I'm going to fetch my friend then I'll come back for my clothes" She nods with a smile
Mrs Mhlongo: "You're such a great child" Sizwe chuckled and I didn't like it. He's Mocking! I sighed following Nhla behind

NOMSA

I lay on my bed with tears following down my cheeks. He just told me he's about to be a father and there's nothing which hurts more than that. I expected him to love and cherish me but he does the opposite. I've never dreamt of this life but I didn't

want to disappoint my family, the way they kicked Nosi out was something I was afraid they would do to me. My phone rang and the caller ID: Thando. My dear friend.

Me: "T.. Thando I can't do this" I bust out with tears"

Thando: "What's wrong Friend? Is it Mvelo?" She asked so concerned

Me: "Yes, Thando I can't do this anymore. This is too much for me to handle"

Thando: "Oh friend, should I come and check you up?"

Me: "No, I.. I was thinking of filing for divorce. There's nothing left

for me in here"

Thando: "Don't rush, don't make decisions you'll later regret. Just calm down first"

Me: "I wanted him to love me

Thando: "Was that too much to ask?" I sniffed

Thando: "Know what? I'm coming" she hung up and I cuddled with a teddy letting out all my pain through tears.

....

CHAPTER 6

NOSIBUSISO

The drive was wasn't that awkward but you know when

you're in a car with someone like Nhla, your insides starts to boil unnecessary. There was something about him that I couldn't put my finger on but other than that; he's the most handsome guy I've ever seen. He's so sexy. He had his hand on his lap and the other one on the steering wheel. Carefully and clean.

"Nosi.." I looked up to be met by his eyes, he was so handsome.

Those brushy eyebrows and all that. I wouldn't mind to kiss him
Me: "Mmm wh.. what?" I still had my eyes at him

Nhla: "You've been a little tense so

I'm a bit worried about you" He cares

Me: "No I'm good you don't have anything to worry about, I'm good"

Nhla: "So I.. Ummm I will need a direction to your hangouts"

Me: "Oh I'll direct you just drive straight from here"

Nhla: "Ohk, are you fine though?" No I'm not fine, your so fucken sexy and it's driving me nuts. I shifted uncomfortable as I nod. I immediately looked out of the window while he was playing Bea Miller-like that. I didn't think he was a fan of English

Music. The song was quite nice
and the lyrics were so simple even
the beat.

'Can see it from the way you
looking at me
You don't think I'm worth your
time

Don't care about the person I
might be

Offended that I walk the line
So what if I'm not

So what if I'm not everything
you wanted me to be

What if I am

So what if I am more than you
can see'

The lyrics were talking to

someone, it might not be one of us but they were talking about someone.

Me: "I didn't know you love English Music"

Nhla: "There are a lot of things you don't know about me Nosi, so many things"

Me: "Would you mind telling me then"

Nhla: "You will, with time though" I nod directing him as he turned Beethoven-like that as a repeat song. It was quite nice so I didn't have any problem at all. He stopped the car at our hangouts and I quickly climbed

out running

Me: "Mapula!! Mapula!!" I saw her snuggling on the floor with a bleeding leg

Me: "Oh my God what happened to you?"

Mapula: "You left me Nosi, you left me!"

Me: "I.. I'm sorry, I had a little bit trouble but everything will be fine don't worry"

Mapula: "It's painful, they... they came here and beat me up

Mapula. T... they raped me" She was not sobbing of my chest as I felt a painful pain on my chest.

This was all my fault, I blame

Sizwe either!

Me: "Shush I'm here now, I'm sorry" I looked up to Nhla and he knew that he had to help Mapula to the car. I settled on the backseat and Nhla didn't climb out until I saw him puffing a cigarette. I didn't think he's a smoker. In few minutes he walked back to the car and climbed in

Me: "We should get to the hospital"

He nods and drove off

I was pacing up and down the corridor so stressed. It's been

few hours and we haven't heard anything from the doctors

Nhla: "Stop doing that Nosi you're making me dizzy" I stopped and looked at him

Me: "I'm just worried about her"

Nhla: "Your friend will be fine, Calm down"

I nod settling on a seat next to him

Me: "I didn't know you're a smoker?"

Nhla: "Like I said Nosibusiso, there are lot of things you don't know about me and I don't usually smoke"

Me: "Oh, I guess then" I shrugged

my shoulders

Nhla: "Yes,"

Me: "Do you have a girlfriend?" I found myself asking. He chuckled softly and turned to me

Nhla: "No but there's this woman who stole my heart completely though she's not ready for me"

Me: "Ow"

It went silent. The Doctor approached us and I quickly stood up

Me: "Is she Ohk?"

Doctor: "Yes she's Ohk, luckily she has no infection" I sighed relieved in the infection part.

Me: "Thank you can I see her?" He

nods showing me her ward. I ran up to her

Me: "I'm sorry, I'm so sorry"

Mapula: "I was glad that you were not there for a moment you know, they were going to rape you too"

Me: "No, I... God Mapula" A tear escaped but I quickly wiped it off

Mapula: "So who's that hot thing? I wouldn't mind being his side chick"

Me: chuckles "Mapula you don't lose your sense of humor Neh? I will tell you everything about him but now you'll have to focus on

getting better"

Mapula: "I'm fine Nosi I don't want to be here"

"The visiting Hours are over" I sighed Looking at Mapula

Me: "I'll come and see you tomorrow"

Mapula: "Bring something to eat" I nod making my way out

Nhla: "How is she?"

Me: "Mapula is strong Nipho, she'll be fine" He nod looking at me. I looked down and I cleared my throat

Me: "We need to go"

Nhla: "Yeah uhmm it's late"

.

Mrs Mhlongo: "I'm so sorry about your friend Nosi"

Me: "It's hard Ma but everything will be Fine"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I'll pray for her" I smile

Sizwe: "I can't wait for you to leave though, I'm tired of you Nosi"

Me: "Sizwe what do you want from me? You want my heart right now I can see! Or you want my head?"

Sizwe: "You have an ugly head so I wouldn't try and want your head Shem and your heart is

cold, ice! What would I do with it?"

I sighed turning to look at him

Me: "When are you getting married so you can leave? I'm sure everyone is annoyed by you"

Sizwe: "He.e don't lie about people, if you're annoyed that doesn't mean other's are annoyed too"

Me: "I'm going to sleep Mina, Sizwe will wash the dishes"

Sizwe: "What?" I stood up making my way upstairs

Me: "Yes Sweety"

Sizwe: "Fuck come back here Nosi"
I chuckled ignoring him.

NOMSA

Me: "Mvelo can we talk?" We were settled around the table. This is the first and honestly I don't want to be around him

Mvelo: "Ohk"

Me: sighed "I want a divorce, I know I came unexpectedly and all but I didn't expect you to be involved with someone throughout this marriage and I can't compete with someone you love"

Mvelo: "So you thought Divorce is an option?" I nod

Me: "Yes it's an option, we're not meant to be"

Mvelo: "I don't want a divorce"

Me: "What!?"

Mvelo: "You've heard me, I'm not divorcing you or anything"

Me: "Mvelo..." He stood up and he walked away from my sight

....

CHAPTER 7

NHLAKANIPHO

I kept on tossing on the bed with them haunting me.

'Come back here Nhlakanipho!' She shouts looking at me but I didn't want anything to do with her right at this moment

'No leave me alone! Leave me alone Linda' I shout back at her. She's my Pregnant girlfriend but he doesn't trust me.

'I'm sorry, I'm sorry Nhlakanipho
Ohk?' she says to me

'I love you Linda can't you see
that?' I shoot back at her

'I love you too, I'm sorry come
back here' She says that following
me until I heard the car tires and
things weren't totally blank. I
looked at the road and there she
was; she was covered in blood.

'Lindaaaaaaaaaah' I jumped from
the bed looking around the room.

I sighed trying to calm myself.

This has been haunting me for
Three years now and it doesn't
seem to end. I'm just tired. I

looked at the clock and it's 6am. I

need to get ready for work. I did my hygiene process before I walked downstairs. Everyone was settled around the table having their breakfast

Me: "Morning" they greeted back and I sat down. My eyes went to Nosi whom was concentrating on her food. There was something about this girl, she's so special and I like her attitude. She's just perfect.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Nhla I was approached by the Sindane family and there's a Ceremony they would like you to attend"

I shook my head looking at her

Me: "I'm not attending any ceremony"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You have to, they are doing it for Linda"

Me: "Mom no! Linda is not here so I don't want anything to do with that family"

Mrs Mhlongo: "The problem is that you're blaming yourself for her death, you have to move on" I stood up

Me: "It's not that easy" I walked away. Everyone thinks it's easy to move on from Linda when these dreams keeps on haunting me every night. I still love her a lot and on the other side; I don't

really know what's happening with Nosi. My heart just does its own thing when I see her. All I know is that she's not ready for me, my life is so complicated than it seems.

NOMSA

I didn't know what's wrong with Mvelo. I didn't want to get involved with him anymore but he doesn't want to let me go. My phone rang and my mother's name flashed on the screen. I sighed accepting the call

Me: "Ma"

Mom: "Nomsa what's wrong with

you? I've just received a call from your mother-in-law and she said you want a divorce" I knew Mvelo would run to his mother

Me: "Mom I'm tired of this marriage, I want to go and study"

Mom: "You're a married woman Nomsa, focus on that"

Me: "Mvelo has impregnated another woman Mama, how am I supposed to feel?"

Mom: "Maybe if you were a wife enough, giving him kids. He wouldn't have impregnated that girl"

Me: "Mom how can you say that?"

Mom: "I love you my child and I'm

showing you the way, you can't give up on your marriage because of another woman no" I sighed because there was no use of talking to my mother. She's always behind them.

NOSIBUSISO

It seems like this family has a lot of hidden Skeletons. After the thing with Nhla, I made sure that I'll ask Sizwe about it. I made my way to his room and knocked. He welcomed me in
Me: "Hey Sizwe"

Sizwe: "Yebo, such a pleasant surprise huh?" I nod walking over

to him

Me: "Well I wanted to ask you about what happened this morning"

Sizwe: "This morning? Where?"

Me: "At the breakfast table, the conversation Sizwe" He is something else this one

Sizwe: "Oh yeah, it's not my place to tell you" I looked at him

Me: "Please do tell Haw mara" he sighed

Sizwe: "Nhla is a broken man beyond everything, he's broken and when he lost his girlfriend is an accident. Things weren't the same anymore, yes he may hide it

all but he's been through so much"

I didn't know that guys like Nhlakanipho can be broken. He seems fine to me

Me: "Oh, so the Sindane family members wants a ceremony!" He nods

Sizwe: "Yes but Nhla wants nothing to do with it as you saw this morning. He lost someone he loved wholeheartedly and Linda was pregnant, so he lost his love and his first born baby" I stood up as I walked over to stand next to the window looking outside

Me: "It's must be hard on him"

Sizwe: "Very, he blames himself about their death" i didn't realize that there's something wrong about Nhla

Me: "Thank you, I'm just glad that today you weren't a jerk"

Sizwe: chuckles "Arguing with you makes me happy and please don't ask Nhla about this" I nod making my way out of his room

I made my way to Mapula's ward. Thanks to one of the Mhlongo drivers who was kindly enough to drive me here.

Me: "Hello Mapula"

Mapula: "Hey, how are you doing?"

Me: "Fine, what about you?"

Mapula: "I'm getting there" I nod with a sigh

Mapula: "You're not yourself today Nosi, tell me what's wrong?"

Me: "I.. I'm fine"

Mapula: "Try again" I sighed looking at her

Me: "There's someone I'm worried about"

Mapula: "What? The mighty Pickpocketing Guru is worried about someone? That's new"

Me: chuckles "It's not a bad thing and stop calling me that"

Mapula: "It's a guy?" I nod looking away "Oh my goodness! That guy

you came with yesterday?"

Me: "Yea"

Mapula: "I knew it, I grew up on the streets and I couldn't miss the chemistry between the two of you"

Me: "No marn Mapula! It's just a worry. There's no Chemistry between us"

Mapula: "If you say so"

.
After the visit I asked the driver to drive me me to the Dube residence. I climbed out heading to the house. They answered the door in a third knock.

Me: "Good Afternoon"

Bontle: "Good Afternoon my daughter how are you doing?"

Bontle was a lovely soul. It was so obvious

Me: "I'm doing fine you?"

Bontle: "I'm doing fine, You're welcome" She welcomed me in. The house was so beautiful and fancy, it was spotless too

Me: "I love this house, you clean it by yourself?"

Bontle: "Yes dear, u don't want a Helper you know sometimes I don't trust them"

Me: "What made you say that?"

Bontle: "After what happened

with your father, I was an helper and that's how I fell in love with your father then we decided to elope"

Me: "You seem young"

Bontle: chuckles "I was dragged by the circumstances to be a maid, your father was my boss" I understand

Me: "Where is he?"

Bontle: "Upstairs but he'll be here soon, luckily he doesn't have any meetings today"

Me: "Cool, you're a lovely woman Ma" She chuckle

Bontle: "Thank you and call me

Bontle, I'm still young for that

tittle" Her body said it all that she's young and I wonder how old she is.

"Baby didn't y...oh we have a visitor? Or she's moving in" He said with a wide smile. My father is handsome, I would say he's sexy but no- this is my father so it would be so awkward saying that. I understand why all these women were after him

Me: "Ummm I'm here for a visit"

Mlu: "Oh I thought you were supposed to be moving in though"

Me: "I will, there are things in which I need to sort out"

Mlu: "Ohk, we can bond how about

that?"

Me: "It's Cool"

I was humming a song fixing the table for dinner. I spent the whole Afternoon with my father and Bontle; I enjoyed every bit of it. Mrs Mhlongo walked over with a dish placing it in the table. Nhla suddenly made his way in from outside, he just came back from work.

Nhla: "Good Evening, Goodnight"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Nhlakanipho l-"

Nhla: "I'm tired Ma so please" He walked away. I sighed Looking at Mrs Mhlongo

Me: "Let me talk to him"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You don't have to"

I shook my head

Me: "It's Ohk Ma, I'll go and talk to him" she nods and I made my way to Nhlakanipho's room. I knocked and I was invited in.

Me: "Ummm Nipho can I talk to you" He looked at me for a while then he nods

Me: "Look I know what you're going through is bad but you need to talk about it"

Nhla: "Who told you about this?"

Me: "It doesn't matter" I'm not about to snitch Sizwe since he asked me nicely to not ask him.

Stubborn Nosi decided otherwise
Me: "It doesn't matter" He has
changed. Laying on top of the bed.
Nhla: "Come here" He pat a space
for me to join him and I did.

Nhla: "I lost my girlfriend Three
years ago and it still haunts me
every single night"

Me: "Every night?"

Nhla: sighed: "Yes, sometimes I
manage to get through the night
but sometimes it's.. it's difficult"

Me: "That's what causes your
sleepless nights? The other day I
found you in the kitchen it was
one of those days?"

Nhla: "Yes" He pulled me to his

chest as I lay on top of it
listening to his heartbeat

Me: "so bad"

Nhla: "I couldn't sleep, every night
the dream haunts me, I don't
know if I should really call it a
dream or a nightmare"

Me: "You need to see someone, I
don't know. They say there are
these people who talk to.. you
know..." He chuckled softly

Nhla: "I don't need a Shrink

Nosibusiso" I nod because I didn't
have anything to say

Nhla: "You must ask your friend
about the people who raped her"

Me: "What? Why?"

Nhla: "Just do as I say, ask about their description and I'll handle the rest" I nod

It went quite a while before I looked up to him, he was asleep. I tried to shift but he held me

Nhla: "Please don't leave" I nod getting back to his chest as I closed my eyes.

....

CHAPTER 8

NOSIBUSISO

I opened my eyes and they landed on Nhla. Remembering of what happened yesterday, I found myself smiling. I don't know why

but I just found myself doing so. I looked at him, his bushy eyebrows were dark. My eyes travelled to his lips. I could kiss them right now, right here.

Nhla: "Staring is rude Miss" I chuckled softly looking at his eyes

Me: "I wasn't Staring Mr Mhlongo, you're just too handsome" he chuckled

Nhla: "She thinks I'm handsome yaay" I playfully slapped his shoulder

Me: "I didn't say be sarcastic"

Nhla: "Fine" he groaned placing his hand on cheek. That groaned just made something move in me; I

swear!

Me: "I must go to my room before something happens"

Nhla: "What?"

Me: "Your Mother can just bust into this room without knocking and she'll find me here laying on your chest" I was so small in his arms. He was lifting, that was so evident

Nhla: "She won't do that, but you're welcome to go" I nod getting off his bed. It was so great sleeping on his chest, as much as I don't want to admit it. It was so great!

Me: "I'll be going" I made my way

out and I came across with Sizwe, this was so embarrassing and I was so nervous about what he just saw.

Sizwe: "What were you doing in Nhlakanipho's bedroom" I looked at him without uttering any word. What am I going to say now?

Me: "I'm..I.." I started to stutter avoiding his eyes

Sizwe: "Should I repeat myself? What were you doing in there" I sighed looking up to him. I just found a perfect lie

Me: "I was asking him to drive me to the hospital, Mapula will be

discharged today"

Sizwe: "Ow" He looked at me like he didn't believe what I've just said. I'm not up to convince him Shem
Me: "Yeah let me..let me go to my room" I gave him a fake smile before heading to my room. That was so close

We were settled around the table when Nhla walked downstairs to join us. Looks like he's always late for breakfast.

Nhla: "Good morning" We greeted back and he settled on the chair
Mrs Mhlongo: "How did you sleep?" She directed the question

to Nhla who looked at me and smiled

Nhla: "Very good"

Mrs Mhlongo: "The nightmares?"

Nhla: "Didn't have any" He said that and I looked away with a side smile since he was looking at me

Mrs Mhlongo: "That's a first, have you thought about what I've said yesterday morning?"

Nhla: "Mom I don't want anything to do with those people, fair enough that they blame me for that accident. I know it's my fault but they don't have to rub it on my face always" The

atmosphere became tense once more. I signed looking up to him as he was breathing fire

Mrs Mhlongo: "I will talk to them that you won't succeed in that"

Nhla: "That would be good" Sizwe cleared his throat looking at me

Sizwe: "So Nhla ain't you going to drive Madame to the hospital?"

He did that on purpose I know

Nhla: "Hospital? What for?" He looked at Sizwe

Sizwe: "Oh I thought you were going to drive Nosi to her

friend" Nhla looked at me and I guess he saw what was

happening

Nhla: "Oh yeah, not now though. I'm going to attend a meeting"

Sizwe: "I don't mind driving her"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You don't?"

Sizwe: "Yes, I don't have anything to do anyway" I looked at him without saying anything.

Nhla: cleared his throat "Ohk then, she's going home

tomorrow" He looked at me and I smiled with a nod. I told him that I'm going home

Sizwe: "Ow you talk about

Everything ey" I looked at Sizwe

Me: "Sizwe do you have a problem with me? Nhla was driving to Mapula not so long and we've

talked. He's not a robot"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Can we calm down"

Sizwe: "I'm calm, I just don't like whatever it's happening between them"

Me: "Who"

Sizwe: "They know themselves, I'm not a fool" He stands up "I'll go and get ready so we can go Nosi" I nod without saying anything

The drive was rather quiet and I wasn't about to say anything to him. Sizwe can be such a jerk. I climbed out of the car as soon as he parked the car. He did too and

followed me inside.

Me: "wait here" I say to him before I made my way inside Mapula's ward, she was getting ready.

Me: "Hey" I smiled

Mapula: "Hello, I can't wait to be out of this place" I nod and the Doctor walked in

Doctor: "My patient is good to go, please sign here ma'am" I rolled my eyes doing as he says

Doctor: "Thank you have a safe trip" I smiled faintly and we made out way out. Sizwe's eyes travelled to Mapula and he froze. I looked at him giving him some

hints that it's time to go but he was still frozen.

Me: cleared my throat "Sizwe can we go" He looked at me before he cleared his throat looking back at Mapula. This was something new to me. Weird!

Sizwe: "Ain't you going to introduce me to your friend?" I looked at him but I decided to not dwell on it

Me: "Well Sizwe this is Mapula and Maps, this here is Sizwe and he's so annoying"

Mapula: "Nice to meet you Sizwe"

Sizwe: "Same here, well we can go" we walked over to the car and

Sizwe opened the front door. I was about to climb in but he gave me an ugly look so I surrendered climbing on the back seat.

Sizwe: "Ma'Lady" Mapula blushed climbing on the front. I couldn't believe this at all. I looked out of the window since I was excluded from their conversation

Mapula: "There's nothing wrong with that Nosi!" She says a little bit louder and that came by a surprise

Me: "You were flirting and you see nothing with that? Maybe if you can tell me that you like him"

Mapula: "He's handsome and a great guy but no, I don't like him in that way"

Me: "What way?" I asked knowing pretty well what she meant

Mapula: "You know what I meant, he's great but I'm not about to fall for him. He's 25 and I'm 17" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "He's not that old" She chuckles Shaking her head

Mapula: "Ohk"

NOMSA

I sat down next to him and he shifted his attention from his Laptop.

Me: "Mvelo can we talk about what I've asked of you"

Mvelo: "I told you that I'm not doing that, I won't divorce you Nomsa"

Me: "But why Mvelo? You said there's someone you're in love with and I want to give you some space"

Mvelo: sighed "Yes there's someone but I didn't say anything about this person. Look Nomsa, I know what I told you the other day was kinda rude" I sighed

Me: "That wasn't rude, you've disrespected me Mvelo and I don't want to be with you anymore"

Mvelo: "You don't mean that" I love this guy, here I've said it. I love him but seeing him with his woman is just too much

Me: "I want a divorce and I want to go and Study"

Mvelo: "You can study but no, you're not divorcing me. That's it" He went back to his laptop

NHLAKANI PHO

Me: "Mary, Cancel my meeting" I dropped the call turning to look at Boity who was already in her undies

Boity: "I know you want me as much as I do Nhla, don't deny

this" She placed his lips on my neck and I placed my hands on her hips
Me: "Mmmh you're so good" She looked back at me unbuckling my belt. She knelt down giving me a head. Boity is good in what she does there's no denying it
Me: "Mmmh give it to Daddy"
Boity: "Yes Daddy" She did her job and I pulled down my trouser rolling a Condom. She bend with her ass higher, waiting for me. I walked over to her and played with her while she was moaning
Boity: "Put it in" I closed my eyes not doing what she says. Nosi's face quickly flashed on my mind

and I found myself taking some few steps back. Boity looked at me and frowned

Boity: "What's wrong Nhla?"

Me: "Please leave" I rolled off the Condom

Boity: "But we're not done yet, I miss you" I shook my head opening both my eyes

Me: "I said leave" I said a little bit louder and she nod countless pulling her dress. I threw everything down as soon as the door was banged closed

Me: "Fuck! What the hell

Nosibusiso" I don't know what's going on with me!

....

CHAPTER 9

NOSIBUSISO

I felt a hand on my face and I quickly jumped on the bed.

Remembering pretty well that Nhla didn't come home yesterday though the scents said it all. It was him.

Me: "Nhla where were you?" I asked him. You wouldn't miss the smell of Alcohol from his mouth

Me: "Wait...were you drinking?" I asked him through the darkness.

I got switched on the lamp and he looked away from me

Nhla: "It's hard Nosi, I'm trying

to not think about you but it's hard"

Me: "I don't understand, what's wrong Nipho?" I was now concerned. This was rather serious

Nhla: "I don't understand it myself, I.. I'm such a mess Nosi" He ran his hands on his face looking at me

Me: "I.. I don't know what to say Nhla" I sighed Looking at him. I don't know if he'll remember this tomorrow or not.

Nhla: "I'm a mess, I'm afraid to fall inlove Nosi and this.. what I feel is.. is" He sighed without

saying anything further

Me: "You just don't want to fall in love because of Linda, you still love her don't you?"

Nhla: "Yes, I will always love her" That was a little bit sad. I don't know why I'm feeling this way.

Me: cleared my throat "Ohk"

Nhla: "Look Nosi, I know you've been through a lot and all but what I'm feeling is just too deep. I'm a mess and you're totally not ready for me" I sighed digesting of what he's saying

Me: "I know, I don't know what I'm feeling too Nhla but

whatever it is. It's just too deep" He looked at me with his lazy eyes as he flashed a faint smile

Nhla: "I'll wait, I'll wait for you" He got inside the covers

Me: "What are you doing?" I asked looking at what he's doing

Nhla: "The nightmares are just too much Nosi and it's just surprising that I didn't have any because I was with you so please don't deny this" I nod as he pulls me on his chest

Me: "We must Stop this"

Nhla: "Shush, just enjoy the moment" I closed my eyes

I dragged my suitcase downstairs finding everyone around the table. Nhla went back to his room in the early hours of the morning since he had to get ready for work. A smile quickly disappeared on Mrs Mhlongo when her eyes landed on my suitcases.

Mrs Mhlongo: "You're leaving already?" I nod with a faint smile
Me: "Yes Ma, thank you for a warm welcome"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I will miss you so much, you must visit me sometime"

Me: "I will do that"

Sizwe: "So you're leaving? I should just go through the suitcase to see if you didn't steal anything" I frowned looking at her. Mrs Mhlongo bought all of this for me so I don't know what Sizwe is on about but I'm sure he's mocking me.

Me: "I don't want to argue with you, I want to start my day on a very clean slate" He rolled his eyes. Nhla was so quiet, he didn't even look at my sight. Few minutes later Mapula walked down with only a bag since she didn't have any clothes besides the one she had been wearing when we came

from the hospital. Sizwe's eyes were on Mapula and I knew all that was. He's into her!

Sizwe: "Oh you're leaving too"

Mapula: "Yes, thank you ma for the nice welcome"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You're welcome, travel safe"

Nhla: "I will drive them home since I have to see Mlungisi about something"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Ohk then" we settled around the table having our breakfast. It was quite as Sizwe's eyes were still on Mapula who was so serious; I'm sure she has noticed how Sizwe has been

looking at her. In few minutes we were done

Nhla: cleared his throat "Can we please leave" I looked up to him meeting his gaze which he held for some minutes before standing up. We did too as we bid goodbye to the Mhlongo family then we walked out.

Bontle: "Oh welcome, you look well" I smiled. Bontle is such a lovely soul and she got style

Me: "We're well I hope you're well"

Bontle: "I'm very well, how are you doing Nhlakaniph" she says that hugging him. They pulled out

Nhla: "I'm doing fine You?"

Bontle: "I'm good" We were already settled on the couch.

Me: "Where's my father?" That just came out..she smiled

Bontle: "He's getting ready for work, Come let me show you guys your rooms"

We followed behind her. The bedrooms were beautiful indeed, unlike the Pink one from the Mhlongo residence.

Me: "I like this" I say to her

Bontle: "I'm glad you do, I'll leave you to it" I smiled at her as she walked out of the room. I unpacked my clothes hanging

them on the closet. I was done in few minutes so I made my way downstairs.

Mlu: "Here's my daughter" I smiled so faintly because I'm tired of this smiling ish.

Me: "Hello Dad"

Mlu: "Hey, you look good" I nod

Me: "I feel good, and I see you're good too so I won't ask on how you are"

Mlu: "Cool, Nhla when are you getting married Entlek? You're always here

Nhla: Chuckles "You know that's a lie Mfethu, I'm not even ready for that"

Mlu: "Whatever, you won't be ready wena. I should look for a teachers so I'm sure you might help me with that"

Nhla: "Yeah"

Me: "Ummm Teachers?"

Mlu: "Yes, since you don't want to go to school. You'll be homeschooled" I don't know anything about that so I nod

MVELO

Mathapelo: "Mvelo you're no longer interested in us right?" I looked at her without saying anything since I don't know why she's saying that

Mathapelo: "You're distant lately, since I told you about the baby you've been distant" I sighed looking away from her

Me: "You're reading on too much because there's no such thing"

Mathapelo: "I'm not a fool

Mvelo, my family said I should tell you that you'll have to pay the damages"

Me: "The damages?"

Mathapelo: "Yes, you're the first man I've ever been with so yeah"

Me: "I'll talk to my family, but I'll only pay for the damages only"

Mathapelo: "What about Lobola Mvelo?"

Me: "I love you Mathapelo but not enough to make you my wife" I honestly say to her, I wasn't about to marry her of course.

Nomsa is enough for me, I still have my problems regarding her but I won't let her go.

Mathapelo: "Mvelo how can you say something like that?"

Me: huffed "I'm leaving, I don't have time for your nagging"

Mathapelo: "So I'm nagging?"

Me: "Can't you see that?" I was already fixing myself

Mathapelo: "Fuck you Mvelo! Leave vele since orata Nomsa"

NHLAKANIPHO

The house was so empty without Nosibusiso, I was in my room thinking about her. I'm not going downstairs for dinner, it's dull without her. I lay on the bed closing my eyes until I finally fell asleep.

'Come back here Nhlakanipho!' She shouts looking at me but I didn't want anything to do with her right at this moment

'No leave me alone! Leave me alone Linda' I shout back at her. She's my Pregnant girlfriend but he doesn't trust me.

'I'm sorry, I'm sorry Nhlakanipho
Ohk?' she says to me

'I love you Linda can't you see
that?' I shoot back at her

'I love you too, I'm sorry come
back here' She says that following
me until I heard the car tires and
things weren't totally blank. I
looked at the road and there she
was; she was covered in blood.

'Lindaaaaaaaaaah' I jumped from
the bed placing my hands on my
face. I looked at the clock it was
2am. I tossed my phone over but
the thought of Nosibusiso not
having a phone flashed through.

I sighed throwing the phone on the bed. I need her!

.....

CHAPTER 10

SIZWE

The first time my eyes landed on her I just saw a different side of me. I'm a player; that's what everyone says but the truth is that I wasn't ready for commitment. I'm young and I still want to live a little but when I saw her my mind was on another level. I sighed looking at the mirror before I took my briefcase walking downstairs.

Me: "Good Morning" I say to them,
Nhla was a bit early today which
was surprising

Mom: "Morning, you look different"
I smiled warmly

Me: "I feel different, I'm happy"

Nhla: "That's confusing, you're
always grumpy" That's a total lie

Me: "That's not it and you know
it" I settled on the chair

Mom: "What's happening boy?"

Finally found your missing rib?" I
looked at her without saying
anything

Mom: "Don't look at me like that, I
know someone who's in love when I
see one" I don't want to ask any

questions

Nhla: "Oh is it? Mom you should be a seer then"

Mom: chuckles "No, your Aunt is coming this weekend" I groaned

Me: "Aunt Jess? Mom that woman is something else and I'm not ready for her"

Mom: "She's not that bad"

Nhla: "She'll be asking us about marriage, telling us about Village girls. You know how Auntie Jess is" That one is someone you wouldn't want to spend some time with. One of the Village Auntie.

Mom: "You'll have to suck it up then, she'll be here" I sighed

Me: "Cool then" Nhla stood up

Nhla: "Family, I'll be on my way"

Mom: "How are your nightmares
Nhlakanipho?"

Nhla: "I don't want to talk about
that Mom, Goodbye" He kissed her
cheek before he made his way out

NOSIBUSISO

Me: "Good Morning" I greet them
all and they responded. I settled
around the table ready to have
my breakfast.

Bontle: "How did you sleep girls?" I
smiled. Bontle is a great woman
and I may consider her as my
mom. She has a warm welcome

and a great personality

Me: "I slept good" I responded

Mapula: "Same here, I had a great night and the bed is so

comfortable unlike being on the

streets" She sighed and Mlu looked at me

Mlu: "I'm glad you're here, I've been looking for you and now I

have two daughters" I really don't know why they don't have any children

Me: "I'm glad that I'm here too, living on the streets wasn't that

great but we managed" I

shrugged my shoulders and he nods

Mlu: "Monday you'll be starting with school, I want you guys to ace those subjects so you'll be able to pass Matric then go to Universities" I smiled because I've longed wanted to go to University. That was one of my dreams before the death of my mother

Me: "I'll make you proud" He smiled and Bontle cleared her throat

Bontle: "Would you like some bacon?"

Me: "Yes I would, this is my favourite" She giggled looking back at Mlu

Bontle: "Like father like

daughter, I can tell" I looked at Mlu and he has a slight grin
Me: "Well I guess, Mapula are you ready for school? Should I call it school though?" I asked again.
It's weird to call it school.

Mapula: "Telling the truth? I'm not ready, I haven't been to school about 6 years or so" I know right, I don't think I remember some words Shem

Being in the Dube residence is so different from being at the Mhlongo residence and honestly I miss being there arguing with Sizwe and sneaking out with Nhla.

Being here sucks. I sighed
throwing myself on the couch. I
turned on the television so I could
get myself busy but I was
distributed by the house phone. I
stood up to attend it

Me: "Hello" I huffed waiting for
that person to answer

Nhla: "Hy, Nosibusiso" My heart
skipped that beat. I cleared my
throat

Me: "Nipho, hello"

Nhla: "How are you doing? Are you
busy?" I looked around the house.

Me: "No" I sighed "No I'm not busy"

Nhla: "Ask one of the drivers to
drive you to my workplace" I was

surprised by that
Me: "What? Why?" I asked hoping
he'll say he's joking. As much as I
want to spend some time with
him, I just don't trust myself
with him around me.

Nhla: "I want to spend time with
you, I miss you and your father is
strict with you. I know he is" I
sighed again.

Me: "Cool, Give me the directions
then" He did just that then I
hugged up walking back to the
living room to turn off the
television. I then went to my
bedroom to change, I need to do
some shopping

I went out to one of the drivers
Me: "Hy, can you please drive me
M&D Holdings" I say to him

Driver: "Yes ma'am" I rolled my
eyes

Me: "Nosi is fine, You're old to call
me that Mr" I climbed in the car
and he did too before driving off
.

I made my way inside after
climbing out. I found this skinny
woman chewing whatever she
was chewing but it was irritating
while she was busy with a
computer

Me: "Good Afternoon, Where is
Nipho's office?" She looked at me

then back to the computer

Her: "I don't know who that is"

Me: sighed "Mr Mhlongo, where is his office?" She looked at me again

Her: "And you are? Mr Mhlongo is busy with important things. I'm sure you're one of his hoes" I wanted to slap the make-up out of her. She's calling me a hoe indirectly

"That is not how you talk to people Mary, important people that is" I breath in and out for few seconds after hearing that deep voice because my knees wanted to go down immediately. They were weak

Her: "Ummm..I...Sir I thought-"

Nhla: "Why are you thoughting Kant wena? Whenever this lady walks in this building, just smile at her and show her my office.

When I say whenever I say even if it's midnight or midday

whenever" I wanted to laugh at some of the things he said.

Honestly they were funny but what can I say.

Her: "Yes sir and I'm sorry"

Nhla: "You should say sorry to this Madam here not me" She looked at me and you could tell that she didn't want to apologize

Her: "I'm sorry"

Nhla: "Sorry who? Dog?" She huffed with what Nhla was doing. I'm sure she was boiling inside

Her: "I'm sorry Ma'am, well I will never do that again" I gave her a killer look with a fake smile

Me: "I'm sure you won't, I don't want to mop the floor with your cheap weave. Well" I turned to Nhla who looked so yummy I could eat him right now. I wonder how my father would feel if he can see my thoughts about his yummy best friend

Me: "Hy"

Nhla: "Hey, let's go" We made our way to his office. This is a

beautiful office Shem, it was black with a touch of Royal blue. The leather seat with a couch on the corner. This office is beautiful
Me: "This is beautiful, I love it" I say to him

Nhla: "I'm glad you do" I sighed as my eyes landed on a big framed photo of a girl, she was in a summer dress. Beautiful!

Me: "Who's this?" I asked him narrowing my eyes at the photo

Nhla: "It's Linda, she was so beautiful" I could hear the sadness of his tone

Me: "Nipho you should see someone" I turned to him

Nhla: "I don't need a Shrink"

Me: "Are you convincing yourself or me? You need a Shrink"

Nhla: "You just don't get it"

Me: "Look Nipho, I'll go with you through everything only if you want" I say to him. I mean it, seeing him this broken pains me

Nhla: "Nosibusiso I.. I don't want to see a Shrink" I took few steps to him

Me: "I'll attend with you, I'll be there. Just say the word"

Nhla: "Nosibusiso it's not that simple"

Me: "It is only if you want help, if you're interested Nipho. You're

broken and since I can't be there for you as a girlfriend or something more. I'll be there as a friend, you've said it. I'm not ready for you but I'll be here with you" I placed my hand on his cheek as he tilt his head a little Nhlala: "Oh Nosi" I'm looking forward to be here, with him.

....

CHAPTER 11

NOSIBUSISO

The past two days were going very well and tomorrow we'll be starting with school, Tuesday.

Living with my father has been one of the greatest things which

has been going on in my life; I'm happy! I was dressed in my simple outfit since I will be accompanying Nipho to a Therapist, it took a lot of convincing for him to agree. I found everyone around the table but I wasn't about to have some breakfast.

Me: "Good morning family" I smiled and they greeted back

Mlu: "You're beautiful my daughter, where are you heading to?" I shrugged my shoulders with a slight smile

Me: "Out, I'll be back before you know it" He huffs looking at me and I know that look

Mlu: "I hope you're not dating Nosi, you're too young for that" I Rolled my eyes. Dad thinks I'm too young for doing such, so overprotective of him.

Me: "I'm not dating, I know I'm still young" I sighed Looking at Mapula "You'll be here when I come back right?" I saw a glimpse of a smile across her face. We've bought our phones and they are Cool!

Mapula: "Well I don't know" She Shrugged her shoulders

Me: "You will tell me all about it" I grin looking at her as she blushes my comment away. Dad look at us

with a frown

Mlu: "I'm sure whatever you guys are talking about does not involve any boy"

Me: "Why does everything has to do with a boy Dad?" I got used to this in just few days. Calling him - Dad.

Mlu: "You wouldn't understand this gender" I sighed

Me: "I'm leaving, I'll be back in few" I bid them Goodbye before I made my way out

Nhla: "You look good, you're always beautiful" I smiled so stupidity. Have you ever been so stupidity

inlove? Something that I've just noticed. I'm inlove with this guy but we're not ready for each other,I hope he'll heal and I'll also be good.

Me:"I feel good"I say to him "Are you ready? For your session?"

Nhla: sighed"I don't know,but there's no other choice" He climbed out of the car and he helped me out too. We walked inside the room which was pure white with a Little bit of Grey. Such a bad choice of colour

Doctor:"Good Morning, I'm Doctor Kayla and you're welcome"I smile at her while Nhla kept on his

straight face

Me: "I'm Nosi and this is Nhlakanipho, thank you so much for this" I say to her hoping that Nipho could say something too

Doctor: "We can start" She showed us the seats and we settled on them. She took a notepad and looked at us

Doctor: "Nhlakanipho Mhlongo, how do you feel about this?" Her pronunciation was so bad, Nhlakiniph Mhlogo; Typical for a white lady! Nipho looked at her without saying anything

Doctor: "Mr Mhlongo, should I repeat the question?" He huffs

looking at me and I nod as he looked back at her

Nhla: "I don't know, like I'm some kind of a mad man or something" His bold voice was acting up

Doctor: "Can you please tell me about your Relationship with Linda, It's Linda right?" I nod throwing a glance at Nhla

Nhla: "We met in highschool so she was my highschool sweetheart, I fell inlove with her the second I laid my eyes on her and I knew she was going to be my wife. The mother of my children, I loved her the very same moment" hearing

him say that was breaking my soul rather than anything but he was telling the truth so there was nothing I could do! She was his first love.

Doctor: "Oh, So what really happened?" He sighed looking up as I saw a tear falling from his eye when he looked down again.

Nhla: "We were in a mindle of an argument when I walked away from her, it was crazy because she was pregnant and the hormones were too much for me to handle at times. I.. it was actually my fault because if I didn't walk away she wouldn't have followed

me. If I didn't walk away she would still be here with my first born baby, I.. I loved her, fuck! A part of me still does" I placed my hand over my mouth before I stood on my feet. I looked at him as I made my way out of the room. This is too much for me. I asked one of the cleaners for the bathroom and they showed me so I made my way there. A loud sob escaped from my mouth and truth is-I Don't know why I'm crying. Hearing him declaring his love for his dead girlfriend was one of the painful scenario I didn't want to hear nor see. It

was too much! Maybe I'm wrong for feeling this way but I cannot help but to feel like this! After my session I walked back to that room but I decided not to go in.

Few minutes passed and the Doctor walked out heading to me "Please come in" I looked at her Me: "What's going on?"

Doctor: "It's anger, just come" I followed behind and the sight wasn't that great. This man is broken. He was letting out a painful cry, who said Indoda ayikhali? I kneeled before him and pulled his head to my chest while I kept on brushing his back.

Me: "Let everything out Nipho" I wonder what happened in here for him to get so emotional and all. He finally picked himself out and I stood up

Doctor: "This will be all for today, we should take things easy" I sighed with a nod. I didn't trust my voice

Doctor: "I will see you tomorrow then" I cleared my throat

Me: "We'll come late" I responded since I have school to attend

Doctor: "Ohk then, take care of him. He needs someone" I nod with a faint smile before we made our way to the car.

The drive was so quiet but it wasn't awkward. There were so many emotions that were noticed though I wasn't about to say anything. He needs to let everything out! I sighed Looking out of the window with my mouth shut until I heard the volume of the radio going down "Nosibusiso" His bold voice was thicker than before Me: "Mmmh" Without looking at him, I said Nhla: "I'm sorry, what you saw there wasn't..w.." He didn't have a word to describe it but I'm glad

I saw everything. Me: "Nipho you don't have to apologize, crying doesn't make you weak. You're still the very same man I saw naked" That came out wrong! I shouldn't have but his chuckle was a great thing to hear

Nhla: "Well I'm glad you're here but Mlungisi is going to throw a fist about all of this" I sighed knowing it's true!

Me: "He doesn't have to know, I mean... He won't take this very well"

Nhla: "I agree, I won't say anything if you promise not to" I smiled

Me: "I promise not to say a word" He nods and looked ahead of the road

Mapula: "So... You were with Nhla right?" I smiled looking away

Me: "Aay marrn Mapula"

Mapula: "I knew it! But you know that Nhla is your father's best friend?" I frown looking back at her

Me: "I know, but he won't know about us spending together"

Mapula: "I'm not saying anything though I'm worried. Nhla is 31 years old and you're 16 years. This is a mess" This is a mess but I

don't care!

Me: shrugged my shoulders "We'll cross that bridge when we get there"

Mapula: "I pray you'll be strong enough to cross" I sat down aiming to change the subject

Me: "Tell me about you and Sizwe, I saw the Chemistry between the two of you" She blushed my question away. I knew it!

Mapula: "Well we've been communicating and I was with him today" I looked at her so surprised

Me: "You two have known each

other for three days and already
you're in... you.. God" I Clapped my
hands

Mapula: "He gave me his phone
numbers and I called him after
purchasing those phones" I nod

Me: "Wow, and I want to hear
everything Neh? You should play
hard to get with that boy" I
chuckled softly

Mapula: "What? No ways Nosi I'm
going to say yes immediately when
he asks me out. You want me to
waste time with my future
husband" She sulks

Me: "Already he's your future
husband? Wow but girl play hard

to get. Sizwe is one of the arrogant guys and you must make sure he sweats before you say yes"

Mapula: "But Nhla didn't sweat even a little" I frown

Me: "We're not talking about Nhla and what I have with Nhla is so much different from what you have with Sizwe" I tell her. It's not the same

Mapula: "Oh, Ohk then" she shrugged her shoulders

Me: "Yep, I know he'll ask for help. That guy is something else"

.....

CHAPTER 12

NOSIBUSISO

I finally placed my books on the table in my room. I've just got out of Class, well if you can say that. I sighed taking a seat on the bed as I toss the phone over to me. I had nothing to do right at the moment, my life is boring. My phone rang and Nipho's name flashed on my phone screen, my smile widen when I accepted the call.

Me: "Mr Mhlongo, Njomane" I knew right there that he's smiling. I chuckled softly as I waited for his deep voice to echoe through the sound waves of the phone.

Nothing is much more Better
than hearing this voice

Nhla: "A man isn't supposed to
blush kodwa wena

MaDube, uzongenzisa enye into nje
engingafuni ukuyenza"

(But you, you'll make me want to
do something which I'm not
supposed to do)

Me: "Who said that? That person
must be arrested for saying such
thing" I say with a beatific smile
across my face

Nhla: "Oh Yeah" I almost died, or
maybe I died for few seconds. His
voice when he said those words
was so sexy. I don't know what's

happening to me.

Me: "Yes, we're going to see Doctor Kayla right?" As much as it hurts hearing him declaring his endless love for his dead girlfriend I know he needs me.

Nhla: "Yes" Then it went quite. I know he's thinking about what happened yesterday.

Me: sighed "Ohk then, you will fetch me right?"

Nhla: "I don't know, I don't want to risk it" He sighed, I can feel the heat from afar

Me: "You don't have to worry about that, Dad will be at work"

Nhla: "Ohk I'll come by" The

conversation wasn't the same. It lacked something so I decided to just end it.

Me: "Yeah, you'll send a text when you're here" I immediately ended the call taking a deep sigh. There was a knock on the door and I looked up to be met by Bontle

Me: "You can come in" She flashed a slight smile walking in

Bontle: "How are you doing?"

Me: "Great you?"

Bontle: "Good, I wanted to talk to you about some important" I looked at her expecting her to continue but she didn't. I cleared my throat Looking back at her

Me: "Cool, what do you want to talk about?" I say to her

Bontle: "Well I'm planning on getting pregnant, I won't be taking the pill anymore" I really don't know why she's telling me this so I just looked at her confused without uttering any word.

Bontle: chuckles "I hope it's not weird, I used to be alone and the house is too quiet so there's no one to talk to in here" She breathes in and out once again before she continues "Since you're here I thought I should talk to you, maybe some of the things will

create a certain bond between the two of us. I really want to get to know you guys, especially you" I don't know what to say. About what she just said and what she said before this. I want to enjoy my time with my father before everything and now I feel like MaBontle is in a competition. Maybe she feels threatened Because that mind of getting pregnant is because of me-I might be wrong though. Me: "You're welcome to do whatever you want to do, well I hope I'm not being rude" I say to her and she shakes her head

Bontle: "Cool, Maybe you'll be having a little brother very soon" I sighed Looking at my phone

Me: "Well I'll be a great sister, Uhmm Ma I..I... There's something I need to get down to" I say to her and she slowly stood up

Bontle: "Oh Ohk, Please don't tell your father about this neh? I want it to be a surprise" She warmly said and I nod.

Bontle: "Great" She made her way out and I locked the door behind her. God!

.

I looked at him with a smile and he returned it before he helped me in the car. He climbed in too and pressed the accelerator. I looked out of the window aiming to say nothing.

"Why are you quiet?" I turned to look at him

Me: "I don't have anything to say" I shrugged my shoulders and he nods while I went back to stare out of the window

Nhla: "After the session we're going somewhere right?" I looked back at him and nod.

Me: "Where are we going?"

Nhla: "Somewhere" I nod looking

out of the window once more
because he wasn't about to
answer me. I sighed looking at
him

Me: "Do you know why my Father
and Bontle banganaazo iingane?"
(Don't have kids)

Nhla: "Why don't you ask them?"

Me: "I'm afraid to" He chuckled

Nhla: "The whole Gangster lady?
What a wow" I frowned

Me: "I'm not a gangster lady" I
say to him

Nhla: "You could've fooled me, I
know that you're the one who
stole Sizwe's wallet and
remember the night I caught you

with some cash" I rolled my eyes looking away from him

Me: "Whatever, I didn't steal anything and back to Mlu and Bontle"

Nhla: "Now I have to gossip about my best friend to you, that's so unfair"

Me: "Yeah life is unfair, now tell me the reason"

Nhla: "Bontle wasn't ready to get pregnant, she was still studying hence she's still is. Part-time" I nod with understanding

Me: "So now she's ready to give him a child?"

Nhla: "Where did you get that? As

far as I know she'll get pregnant after studying which is in a year or so" Maybe my suspicions were right, Bontle feels threatened or something

Nhla: "We're here" He finally said and we climbed out of the car. We made our way to Doctor Kayla's Office where she attends her clients.

Doctor: "Good Afternoon" It's 15:14. I'm sure by 17:00 we'll be done!

Me: "Ummm I'll be out" Nhla quickly looked down at me.

Nhla: "Why?"

Me: I shook my head "No I'm...I..

I'll be out waiting for you" I say to him

Nhla: "Please don't leave" I didn't say anything" Please" I nod looking back at Doctor Kayla

Doctor: "We may start"

Me: "That's not funny" We were settled around a couch in a far corner of the pub. We weren't drinking any alcohol, he totally said No to alcohol. We were quickly listening to Jazz which was peaceful and nice, having our Orange Juice while we were engaged in a conversation

Nhla: "It's funny, I mean your

Father is quite a freek" He was telling me about their Varsity life, with my father. At first it was uncomfortable having to talk about my father though I understood because he's thee best friend.

Me: "Whatever, when did you meet?" I was a little bit curious

Nhla: "Varsity, I was doing my first year while he was doing his third year" I nod because that was after everything. My father wasn't a smarty pants; he said that to me few hours ago.

Nhla: "Let's go it's 18:32 and I

don't want trouble" I nod
standing on my feet

NHLAKANIPHO

After receiving a call from Mlungisi, I took a quick shower since we'll be going out. One of our friends is in town, having to spend time with Nosi is fun than I've ever expected it to be. I walked down finding my mother fixing the table

Me: "Good Evening Mom, I'm sorry that I won't be able to join you guys for dinner" She threw a smile.

Mom: "It's Ohk, it's been long so I'm not complaining. I'm sure you

miss going out" I must as well consider purchasing an apartment.

Me: "I'll see you" I kissed her cheek before I walked out

In few minutes I made my way in the Club and it wasn't that full.

I spot them and head over to where they were

Me: "Bros"

Mlu: "Bro, You surely took your time. Entlek these days you're busy" I chuckled as I settled on the seat next to them

Me: "It's work and other things, but I came to your house muc few days ago"

Vuyo: "You guys are boring the shit out of me right now" I shook my head

Me: "Prodigal friend" He rolled his eyes, this one is crazier and they can get along with Nosi since he can be rude when he wants

Mlu: "Let's have some fun, I need to talk to my daughter when I get home. She came back home late and lucky she found me on the wrong time" I huffed ignoring that statement

Me: "I don't want to get drunk, I'll be fine with an energy drink"

Vuyo: "Party Popper"

....

CHAPTER 13

NOSIBUSISO

I woke up in the early hours of the morning because I couldn't sleep. I walked downstairs and I took out my phone dialing Nipho's phone numbers. It rang unanswered which made me a little bit worried. I sighed tossing over my phone on the Cabinet then I went to take out cold water from the fridge. My phone rang immediately as Nipho's name flashed on my phone screen.

Me: "Morning" I breath that out immediately after he accepted the call

Nhla: "Good Morning, I saw your missed calls. I was in the shower" I don't know why he's explaining but I'm glad because yesterday they went out with my father so I don't want to have that mind.

Me: "I..I.." I don't know why I called him so I don't have anything to say at this moment

Nhla: "You don't know what to say? I get it" I chuckled tucking my hair over my ear

Me: "Yes, I was sleepless so I thought of calling you but I don't know what to say" That was embarrassing and stupidly of me.

Nhla: "Cool, you just missed me so I get it" I snorts rolling my eyes
Me: "Stop flattering yourself, I didn't say that"

Nhla: "Yeah whatever"

Me: "So how was your night? I mean my Dad came back a little bit drunk"

Nhla: "It was Cool though I didn't drink any alcohol" I was listening and the fact that he wasn't driving just took me by surprise

Me: "You don't drink?" I ask him

Nhla: "No, I do but I didn't feel like drinking so yeah" I know he's shrugging his shoulders

Me: "Oh, Cool then"

Nhla: "Yes, Get ready in Class I'll see you later on"

Me: "It's Wednesday, so we're not going to Doctor Kayla" I tell him. He only attend Monday, Tuesday and Thursday. I'm just glad that he's making some progress because Doctor Kayla said he'll be attending for a week.

Nhla: "I know, we'll be spending some time in my office" I chuckled

Me: "Really? You sure that my dad won't find out?" I ask him.

"Find out what?" I quickly looked behind me and I was met by my father walking down the stairs

Me: "I'll talk to you" I whispered

as I immediately disconnected the call. I looked at my dearest father who was looking at me waiting for an answer

Me: "Dad" I breath out "How are you?" With a smile across my face, I said.

Mlu: "I asked you a question, what is it that I won't find out?"

Me: "It's nothing, so you don't have to worry about that" He eyed me.

Mlu: "I hope you're not doing something which you're not allowed to"

Me: "Come on Dad, I'm not doing anything so relax" He nods and I

looked at him before I made my way upstairs to get ready for class.

Mapula: "I'll text you when I'm about to leave Sizwe's house" I looked at her with a smile

Me: "Are you really going to Sizwe's house?" She nods with a smile

Mapula: "I know you said I must play hard to get but I'm failing. My mouth is betraying the shit out of me" I chuckled

Me: "Cool, we'll stick to one story right?"

Mapula: "Yes, that we went to

Town. Relax" I nod as Nipho's car parked in front of us

Me: "There's my ride, I'll see you then" She waved and I made my way to Nipho. It was Three blocks from the Dube residence.

Me: "Hey" He smiled helping me in the car.

Nhla: "You look beautiful, well you're always beautiful"

Me: "Thank you" He pressed the accelerator. I was humming a song which he was playing on the radio. He has a good taste when it comes to music

Nhla: "You're so much different, you know that right?" I looked at him

without saying anything further

Nhla: "Forget it"

Me: "Ohk, How's your Mom?" I asked him and he smiles placing his hand over my hand which was on my lap while his other hand was on the steering wheel

Nhla: "She's good, she misses you" I snorts

Me: "Lies!"

Nhla: "I'm not lying, she misses you but she didn't tell us directly" I nod

Me: "My father was asking me some endless questions and I almost got in trouble with him" I tell him.

Nhla: "We must trend carefully, I don't want to cause trouble between you and your Father"

Me: "Yeah we must be carefu" I know we must be careful because when my father finds out about whatever we have; they'll be trouble.

He was busy with work while I was Loki at him. It was kinda boring if you must know.

Me: "It's boring being here, I'm just looking at you doing whatever you're doing" I sighed looking at him. He looked up to me

Nhla: "I thought you're enjoying

this" I huffed not saying anything. He stood up walking over to me.

Nhla: "So how is school?"

Me: "You don't have to call that a school, but everything is going well though I'm struggling a little" That teacher is too much.

Nhla: "Saturday I'll be helping you, Every Saturday" I smiled looking at him

Me: "Really?" He nods

Nhla: "Yea" He took few steps to me as he bend coming face to face with me.

Nhla: "I want to kiss you right now" I looked at him then my eyes

went to his lips.

Me: "We shouldn't be doing that"

Nhla: "Who would stop me? You?" I looked up to his eyes as his voice was now lower than it was

Me: "I'm...I...i..." He suddenly placed his lips on mine. We locked for a while before he moved his lips on mine. I didn't know what I was doing but I did what he was doing. It was so slow and passionate, he sat down and placed me on his lap while my hands were around his neck pulling him to me.

NOMSA

I was at home back in KZN. I decided to visit my family for some few days even though they bore me to the core some times but you know, Family will always be a family.

Mom: "Wee Nomisa, how is it going with your husband?" I sighed looking at her knowing very well that I don't want to talk about him. I've been begging him to sign the divorce papers but he's not hearing it.

Me: "It's going well, I'll be going to School" She looked at me like I've just killed someone

Mom: "Who is going to do your wife

duties while you want to go to School?"

Me: "Mom he accepts that so don't tell me on what I must do"

Grandma: "Don't talk to your mother like this Wena Nomsa"

I huffed looking away from them.

Mom: "You lack some respect these days Wena, just forget about

School and focus on your wife

duties" I shook my head placing

the dish cloth on the table and I

made my way to my bedroom

where I was met by my ringing

phone.

Me: "Hello" I say as soon as I

accepted the call

Mvelo: "Nomisa, How are you?"

Me: "I'm fine" Mvelo doesn't call unless there's something important

Me: "What's wrong?"

Mvelo: "Nothing, I was just reaching out for you" I sighed

Me: "Oh" It was surprising

Mvelo: "Yeah, we'll talk Neh?"

Goodbye" He's confusing me and I hate it.

NOSIBUSISO

We made our way inside the house and the Aroma hit my nostrils, Bontle is cooking. I made my way to the Kitchen leaving Mapula

behind and warmly smiled at her
Me: "Good Evening"

Bontle: "Evening, How was your day?"

Me: "Great, Yours?"

Bontle: "It was just normal, that's all" I nod walking in further

Me: "You should teach me" I say to her and she giggles

Bontle: "I will, You didn't tell your father about what I've told you right?" I nod settling with only that. I still feel like she's competing.

Bontle: "Good, We're not getting any younger so I want to give

him a kid. The one which he'll raise by himself since he didn't get a chance to raise you" I wasn't there anymore

Me: "I understand, I will have a little brother or sister so I don't have any problem" I shrugged my shoulders

Bontle: "Thank you for understanding" I nod looking at her

Me: "I'll be in my room" I tell her

Bontle: "Oh Ohk, I'll call you when it's time for dinner" I smiled making my way upstairs. Thinking about the Kiss I had with Nipho is something I don't want to keep

on my mind because I find myself smiling Like a total fool. As much as I wanted to deny those feelings I have, it's too much for me to ignore. An hour passed as my door was pulled open. Mapula walked in

Mapula: "You'll go crazy, you've been smiling throughout" I chuckled Looking at her

Me: "You have no idea on what happened, Nipho and I kissed" She placed her hand over her mouth preventing herself from screaming

Mapula: "You lie!"

Me: "True, I enjoyed it"

Mapula: "Oh my God you had your first kiss" I rolled my eyes

Me: "It wasn't my first kiss, I once kissed this other guy who was next to us back on the streets kodwa this kiss was so different like It did things to me"

Mapula: "My friend, wuuuh" I sighed looking at her

Me: "With Sipho it was just a kiss nje, we were playing around. Nipho was so careful with me, he made my knees to go weak" I say placing my hand on my chest with a smile

Mapula: "You're deep, You have fallen so deep and I pray that you

won't get hurt" I totally ignored that but I know she's telling the truth. I may get hurt at the end but whatever I have with Nipho; I'm looking forward on exploring it.

...

CHAPTER 14

NOSIBUSISO

The day was very dragging; so boring. It's 1pm already and I'm sitting under a tree which had a very beautiful garden on the side. My Father did well with this house. I was still on my phone findling through it when Mapula

made her way to me. She was smiling like some mad woman.

Me: "You're smiling like a mad woman Mapula, what's up?"

Mapula: "Nothing, Sizwe is just doing his job as my man" I looked at her

Me: "Already? Wuuuh Mogurl your man Neh" I was happy for her even though I was a little bit sad that she didn't play hard to get.

Mapula: "Yep, don't you want to go out for a while?" I looked at her

Me: "What are you planning

Mapula?" She shrugged her shoulders

Mapula: "I'm not planning anything, I just want to get out of this house" She's right though. Being here is boring and Shem; I sometimes miss my other life.

Me: "We can go" I say standing on my feet

Mapula: "Let's go and ask MaBontle since I don't want to get in trouble" We made our way inside the house finding her watching television

Me: "Ummm.. MaBontle" I called out for her

Mapula: "MaBontle can we go out for a while, we are bored" She looked at us so warm

Bontle: "It's Ok my babies you can go, But Make sure that you'll come back home very early since we don't want to cause any trouble" She says as we giggling walking upstairs to get our things. We finally made our way downstairs and bid goodbye to Bontle.

We finally made our way to the Mall and it was kinda full since it's the 25 so we understood. We settled down the chair wimpy without ordering anything.

Me: "So tell me everything about your Relationship with Sizwe, phela last time we talked

you two weren't in a relationship" She smiled looking at me so shy.

Mapula: "Well we just decided to suck it up and date since we've been flirting" She says shrugging her shoulders in between.

Me: "Mmmh Congratulations Girl, I wish you all the best" I tell her

Mapula: "Thank you Sis, Your blessings are the best"

Me: "Who said I'm giving you all my blessings?" I snorts and she giggles

Mapula: "You didn't have to tell me" I rolled my eyes sharply looking at her

Me: "I honestly don't want you anywhere with Sizwe, have you seen that guy? Arrogant and he's shit!"

Mapula: "Stop! That's my man"

Me: "Whatever, I'm just saying what I know but I'll stand by you since I want to see you happy"

Mapula: "Thank you, maybe you should consider the relationship with Nhla" I looked away from her

Me: "We didn't say anything about relationships, I don't know what's happening between us. Maybe it's just too early" I sighed deeply.

Mapula: "What I see between the two of you it's Love. Jolani"

marrn!" She shouts making me laugh

Me: "Stop! I'm willing to explore it though, Honestly I do love him so I don't know" I sighed deeply throwing my eyes at the Entrance where I saw Nhla walking in with a certain lady. I felt my stomach turning.

Me: "Look who he's with" I say to Mapula

Mapula: "Maybe he's in a meeting" She says; Trying to convince me I see!

Me: "Yeah right, let's not mind them" I wanted to not mind them at all.

"Ladies" A voice came through after some few minutes. I've been trying to ignore it but it seems like that didn't work.

I looked up meeting his eyes, all I saw melt my heart. This man is handsome and sexy. I'm having some naughty mind; I'm allowed to right?

Nhla: "Nosi I'm talking" I cleared my throat as I quickly looked down

Me: "H..Hy"

Nhla: "I asked how are you, I didn't say Hy or anything"

Me: "I'm fine Nhlakanipho how about you?" I say softly

Nhla: "I'm good" He looks at the lady next to him "Mercy this here are Mlungisi's daughter, Nosi is.. a very wonderful woman and have a special place and ladies... This is Mercy, Business associate and we are here for a meeting"

I wanted to slap Myself!

Me: "Nice to meet you Mercy" With a wide fake smile I said.

Mercy: "I wish I could say the same"

●Bitch● I murrmur through my teeth wanting to slap the make-up out of her.

Nhla: "We'll be on our way, Keep well Mapula. Nosi" He winked at

me walking away which left
Mapula chuckling

Mapula: "He can be crazy"

Me: "I know" I chuckled

We were watching television as a
family and it was quite awkward.

The Sex scenes were a bit 'Yuuh'
since Dad kept on eyeing us when
those scenes flashes by. It was

so quiet as my phone instantly
rang. Nipho's name flashed on my
phone screen and when I tried to
ignore it, it kept on ringing

Mlu: "Are you going to answer
that or not?" I cleared my throat
Looking at Mapula who wanted to

laugh so bad

Me: "No it's not important" I say
looking back at the television

Mlu: "Oh"

It rang again and I toss it over
and Dad eyed me. I shifted
uncomfortable

Mlu: "You can answer it" I stood up
aiming to walk away

Mlu: "No, Sit down and answer it
Nosibusiso" I looked at him, I
looked at Mapula then at Bontle.
My eyes travelled back to My Dad
as he was dead serious

Me: "But Dad I-" He interrupted
me

Mlu: "No answer" I sighed walking

back to my seat. I answered the call

Me: "Hello"

Nhla: "Hello Sweetheart" I almost screamed 'Oh Laaaaaard take me now'

Me: cleared my throat "Ummm Hy, yes you're speaking to her" I was trying to be professional as I could

Nhla: "What th...oh God" He laughed and I wanted to join him so bad. I shifted uncomfortable since all the eyes were on me.

Me: "Is it sir? Oh I will get right at it" I say

Nhla: "I will see you around 9, text

me when your parents are off to sleep"

Me:"Ohk sir I understand, Thank you"I tossed the phone immediately after I disconnected the call.

Me:"T..That was my Teacher,he wanted to know about the assessment"

Mlu:"Mmhh"

Me:"I'll go and I.. I.. yeah' I stood up running up to my room

Me:"You're annoying"I say to Nhla. We were Six Blocks away from my home. He came with a different car this time. We were at the

backseat of the car.

Nhla: "Is it sir? Oh I will get right at it" He imitate me which was rather funny

Me: "I don't talk like that"

Nhla: "Whatever, I missed you so much so I couldn't go to sleep without seeing you" Today we didn't go to see Doctor Kayla.

Me: "How are your Nightmares?" I asked looking at him

Nhla: "They ain't the same but they're still there" He huffs looking at me as he formed a smile

Me: "I wish I was there for you"

Nhla: "I'm glad you're here" he

said making me smile

Me: "Nhla what's this? What are we doing?" I asked

Nhla: "Can't you see what's happening? You're mine and I'm yours, we're one" Oh God where did I get this one. He pulled me to him as I rest my head on his chest while he kept on brushing my hair.

'We're one'

Chapter 15

NOSIBUSISO

The Rain was pouring so hard from the early hours of the

morning. It was really cold and the blanket where not doing any Justice right at the moment. I just needed to Cuddle, My Mother used to give me that back in the days where she was alive. I got off the bed a a yawn simply escaped from my mouth. I took steps to the window as I slowly opened the curtain coming across with the sight of the pouring rain. It was so silence and perfect, while at it my phone vibrate and I remember changing the Profile from Normal to 'Meeting'. A smile flashed across my face when Nipho's name

flashed on the phone screen. He's now my Man!

Me: "Good Morning?" I breath that out as soon as I accepted the call

Nhla: "Good Morning who?"

Sweetheart I'm your man, you can't call me like I'm one of your friends" His voice was thick yet so calm. It was actually a turn on rather than anything-to me!

Me: cleared my throat "I'm sorry, well you're exaggerating but whatever. How are you Nipho wam, Babe waka. Njomane wam" I say to him over the phone knowing pretty well that he's

smitten by that.

Nhla: "You're the one exaggerating manje Sweetheart" My smile widen

Me: "You said I shouldn't call you like I'm calling one of my friends so I have one friend and I don't call her like that" I say to him.

Nhla: "Yeah yeah but you went straight to a number plate" I sighed still with a smile

Me: "Yeah yeah, How was your night though? Any nightmares?" I ask him hoping he'll say 'No' I really hate it when he experience these nightmares. I don't really know anything about them and I hope one day he'll tell me but I

hate to see him so broken.

Atleast the Therapy has helped for a little while kodwa I want him to heal.

Nhla:"I haven't had any last night" He sighed deeply "I'm grateful"

Me:"Same here,I hate seeing you like that Nipho. I..I don't want to see you so broken but I'm glad I'm here for you,to help you get through everything" I honestly say to him

Nhla:"I hate being like that,It makes me feel so weak but I know I cannot control my emotions at times" He says. I'm

glad that he's slowly opening up to me.

Me: "Have you thought about going to the Sindane's ceremony? I think that may help you with finding closure"

Nhla: "They'll blame me for the death of Linda, I know it's my fault yeah but I don't need any reminder about it" I sighed

Me: "Do it for yourself then Nipho wam, Forget about Linda for a minute, Forget about your family, The Sindane's, forget about me for a minute and think about yourself. You need this"

Nhla: "It's not easy"

Me: "Trust me it's easy, You're just making things hard nje"

Nhla: "Fine I'll go only in one condition" I closed my eyes for a while before opening them looking out of the window as the rain was still pouring

Me: "Yes" It went silent "What's that condition?" I ask him

Nhla: "You will go with me, I don't think I'll be able to do this alone so I'll need you by my side

Sweetheart" My heart immediately skipped a beat as a frown suddenly took over my face.

Me: "You're making this hard see? What if this land's on my

father's ears? We can't risk it
Nipho" I say so sweetly

Nhla: "He won't" He says "He won't
find out, we're in Johannesburg
and we're going to KZN: hours
away from him"

Me: "It's still the same! News
travel" I say to him

Nhla: "Please, please Sweetheart
I will need you there" I sighed
deeply taking in what he's asking
me.

Me: "Fine, I'll go with you"

Nhla: "Thank you Thank you I-" I
interrupted him when a thought
hit my mind

Me: "What will I tell my Dad

though? There'll be questions and my Dad is kinda protective, this is harder Nipho baby"

Nhla: "I'll come up with a plan, I'll do something so don't worry" I nod like he could see me. Nipho is just risking things

Nhla: "Uyangizwa Yini?" (Are you hearing me) I smiled faintly

Me: "Yes Babe"

Nhla: "Good, I miss you" My smile widens

Me: "Oh yeah? Who wouldn't miss me?" I say to her

Nhla: giggles "Fuck you!" I gasped dramatically

Me: "Haah Nipho you're cussing"

Nhla: "I know, I did that on purpose" I laughed freely

Me: "Mnx, I miss you"

Nhla: "So since the rain is doing some random dances outside, I was thinking" I grin waiting for it

Me: "Mmmh"

Nhla: "We should do what they call sleeping out. You'll-" I interrupted him before he could finish

Me: "No no no no Nhlakanipho I'm not doing that, what if my father sees me or w..no I'm not doing it"

Nhla: "Come on Sweetheart, I'll bring you back early in the morning. The covers are really cold" I took a deep breath

Me: "You're something else
Nipho, so I should sleep out?
We've been dating for a day now
I.. God help me"

Nhla: "It's not like we'll do
anything, sweetheart we'll just
cuddle" I do need a Cuddle.

Me: "Fine, I'll do something" I tell
him

Nhla: "Great, we'll talk Neh? I
need to get some things done"

Me: "Ohk" I say disconnecting the
call.

I cleared my throat countless
looking at my father whome just
got back from work. I really don't

know what to say so I decided to keep quiet after thinking of different sentences to put the thing of going to KZN with Nhla. He looked up to me and I quickly shifted my attention to the television.

Mlu: "Nosi just say whatever you want to say because I could see that there's something in there"

Me: "No there's nothing Dad, you're just a great Dad know that?" He smiled

Mlu: "Oh really?" He suddenly frowned "After what I've done? Leaving you at the age of six years?" I smiled faintly

Me: "You're still a great Dad, I know you've wronged me but I'm glad you're trying to fix things" he smiled once again

Mlu: "I'm glad, now tell me something" I looked at him in awe. What am I suppose to say right now?

Me: "No..I... don't have anything to say" I tell him, that's not true. Actually I have a lot to say to you my dearest father. Firstly I'm dating your best friend, secondly I want to accompany him to his late girlfriend because he needs me. We've been spending a lot of time lately and I'll be

sneaking out tonight so I'll go and sleep at his place. So yeah there's a lot to tell you but you know what? You can't find out about all of that ish!

Mlu: "Look my daughter, I dated your mother at the age of 16 or so. I dated Bontle at the age of 18 so I know there's something you have with a certain boy. As much as I don't want you to date, I know you won't listen so if there's any boy. Just invite him for dinner so I will know who to kill when you come home crying" that actually melted my heart but God knows I'm dating

a whole meal-A Man!

Me: "I'm not Dating Dad so you have nothing to worry about" I say to him and he nods but he didn't buy that I could see.

The rain was now pouring so harder than in the morning. It was freezing and Mapula locked herself in her room and I wonder what's up with her. I sighed walking downstairs as I came across with Bontle who was busy in the Kitchen.

Me: "MaBontle, you good?"

Bontle: "Very Good, dinner will be ready soon, in few minutes so you

should wait for it" I giggled
Me: "I didn't come here for that
Ma, can I help you with
anything?"

Bontle: "You can help by fixing the
table" I nod with a smile while I
got busy with the table. Once I
was done she placed everything in
order

Bontle: "Go and call Mapula, she
locked herself in her room and I
wonder what's up with her" I
shrugged my shoulders

Me: "Maybe she didn't want to see
our ugly faces" I giggled walking
upstairs. I knocked twice on her
door before she answered

Mapula: "I'm not having dinner,
I'm not feeling very well" I snorts
Me: "Lies! What are you hiding in
there?" I ask her

Mapula: "Nothing! I'm not feeling
well so I'll see you tomorrow
morning" I sighed

Me: "Oh, Ohk" I walked back
downstairs and everyone was
settled around the table as
MaBontle started dishing up and
guess what? It was green things
only. I looked up to her and she
didn't have any problem or worry.

Mlu: "Mamekhaya what's
this?" You should see the look on
my father's face

Bontle: "We're on a diet"

Us: "A diet?"

Bontle: "Yes a Diet, we should start eating healthy" She says like we wanted to be in a diet

Mlu: "What's all of this?"

Bontle: "Just appreciate this food and eat without asking any questions" I sighed getting up.

Me: "Thank you Ma Kodwa I'm fine" She looked at me but I'm not about to eat this

Bontle: "Fine" I walked away after that sending a text to Nipho.

'Save a plate for me, I'm so damn hungry'

.

I sneaked out of the house going to Nipho's car. It was Two blocks away from my home. He was leaning against the car as his left hand was on the pocket while the other hand was busy with the phone. He looked up to me as soon as I approached him and flashed a wide smile

Me: "Muntwam" (My person)

Nhla: "Sweetheart" He pulled me towards him as my hands went to his chest and his were on my hips while he was looking down at me.

Me: "I missed you so bad" I honestly say to him

Nhla: "I miss you either" He kissed

my forehead "I love you" It was actually the first time hearing him saying that.

Me: "I love you" I breath that out as his lips went to my lips and he started moving his and I followed. It was passionate and slow. My mouth turned with butterflies.

We pulled out and I opened my eyes as they went to Nipho's. He had his eyes closed while licking his lips.

Nhla: "That was so good" His voice was so bold and thick

Me: "It was great" He opened his eyes looking down at me.

Nhla: "Let's get going" He says removing his hands off my hips

Me: "Are you sure no one will see us?" I asked him while we were slowly sneaking inside the Mhlongo residence.

Nhla: "Ma is asleep and well" He shrugged his shoulders "I didn't see Sizwe for the whole day" I nod and he took my hand into his while we tiptoed in

"What is..." The light was suddenly turned on "What are you guys doing? Together?" We immediately stopped on our tracks.

....

Bonus: Shortest.

NOSIBUSISO

I took few steps back as my eyes landed on Sizwe who was looking at us either. I wasn't about to explain to him because I didn't know what to do nor say. Nipho cleared his throat throwing his eyes at Sizwe.

Nhla: "What are you doing at this time of a night?" He asked him like Sizwe didn't just caught us sneaking

Sizwe: "Well, what are you two doing together? Wait...a...are you guys dating?" I looked down. What can I say to that? Yes we're

dating but you're not supposed to know Jeck ass

Nhla: "You don't have to ask me that, there's something we need to do upstairs" He breath that out reaching my hand as he took few steps forward but stopped on his tracks when Sizwe decided to talk

Sizwe: "I will Tell Ma About this is you don't want to answer" He was dead serious forgetting that he is dating Mapula

Me: "You're Dating Mapula" My soft voice echoed through my rough throat. I cleared my throat once more looking up to Nhla

Sizwe: "You're Blackmailing me, my relationship with Mapula is far more different from what ever you guys claim to have. How could you do this Nhlakanipho?" He directed the question to Nhla who sighed looking at him.

Nhla: "You don't understand"

Sizwe: "How so? You're dating a 16 years old girl... Your friend's daughter and you say I don't understand" he huffs frustrated turning to me

Me: "I love him" I say before he could say anything. That I know, I love Nhlakanipho and there's nothing anyone could do

about this.

Sizwe: Chuckles "You love him?

Don't tell me about love. Entlek

what do you know about that

shit huh?" I don't know why he's

making this thing a big deal

Nhla: "Stop swearing, I love her

and I would really appreciate it if

you keep your mouth shut" Sizwe

looked at us not answering "I

mean it" He nods walking away

from out sight

.

I woke up and my eyes landed on

Nhlakanipho's face which was so

cute. I looked at his face with a

wide smile then I kissed his lips.

Nhla: "I should marry you, waking me up like this"

I giggled pecking his lips once more

Me: "I love you"

Nhla: "I love you" I got off the bed walking up to the bathroom. I took a shower walking back to the bedroom.

Me: "What am I going to wear?" He threw his shirt to me and I slid it on. My eyes went to the clock and it was 5am

Me: "I should go back home"

Nhla: "Yeah, let me take a quick shower Sweetheart" He says walking to the bathroom leaving

me all alone. After some while he walked back in

Nhla: "Time?"

Me: "5am" I murmur looking at him, he was sexy.

Nhla: "Stop doing that?" He says and i looked up to his eyes

Me: "What?"

Nhla: "Sexing me with your eyes, you're making me hard" My mouth formed an 'O' and my eyes ran around the house as a smile quickly flashed

Nhla: "Let's go" We walked down the hallway and we heard a voice coming from the kitchen

Me: "Who's that?"

Nhla: "Mom, she's up"

Me: "Oh my God what are we going to do Nhla" I snorts

Nhla: "We have to wait" I looked at him frustrated

Me: "Dad is going to kill me" I huffed getting back to his bedroom.

CHAPTER 16

NOSIBUSISO

I was slowly losing my patience. We've been locked up in here for hours and surely I won't get home anytime soon.

Apparently, Mrs Mhlongo has been

sitting outside facing the gate so we don't have a way out. I wouldn't jump on the wall since these walls are very high. I looked at Nipho who was laying on the bed scrolling through his phone. I sighed walking over to him.

Me: "I can't believe I'm stuck here, my father will kill me" I breath that out as he moved his eyes to me.

Nhla: "I'm sorry sweetheart, if I had a solution to all of this...it would have been better" He says and I sighed once again

Me: "How about this...we climb

your car and I'll make sure that no one will see me then you'll drive" He looked at me and a smile flashed across his handsome face. Nhla: "That could work" We stood up making our way to the garage using the inside door. He helped me out and drove off immediately. I was holding my breath throughout this.

Nhla: "Sweetheart we're out" I sat up looking out of the window. Me: "Finally" I released a deep breath as he chuckled. He stopped the car and I climbed out going to the front seat. He pressed the accelerator after I climbed in.

Nhla: "It's like I'm a teenager right now, hey sweetheart the things you make me do" I laughed and he joins tilting his head a little. That's what he do, tilting his head or throwing it back whenever he laugs

A turn on!

Me: "It's not my fault that your mother decided to do that" I tell him.

Nhla: "She's a goal" He says through his teeth

Me: "Yeah" I looked out of the window with a wide smile. Who wouldn't when you got this amazing man by your side? I'm

happy that's all I can say.

Nhla: "I'm going to miss you" I turn to look at him

Me: "Me too, I'll miss you so bad" His eyes were shining with love. He loves me, I had no doubt.

Nhla: "I love you Nosibusiso, God knows how much I do and I appreciate your help and support. I've never thought nor imagine me falling in love with my friends daughter or a teenager but here I am; head over heels with you. I love you" A tear suddenly dropped from my eye.

Me: "I love you" It came as a whisper than anything. I didn't

have much to say, he said it all. He placed his warm hand on mine while the other was on the steering wheel. We engaged in a light conversation until we were parked two houses away from my home.

Nhla: "Do you have to go though?" He was sulking, a big grown ass. I rolled my eyes making a face after

Me: "I'll miss you so damn much babe, you'll call Neh?" I ask him

Nhla: "Mmhh, I'll video call" I nod as he pulled me to his lap. I grind pecking his lips

Nhla: "I'll marry you" I placed my

lips on his as he started moving them then we pulled out.

Me: "I'll marry you" He chuckled and I giggled pecking his lips before I climbed out of the car making my way inside after waving him goodbye.

"Where were you at?" I got startled by the voice and I looked behind me.

Me: "I..I.. MaBontle please don't tell Dad" I suddenly plead

Bontle: "Your father will be so disappointed if you ever get pregnant Nosi, especially since these days boys run away from their Pregnant boyfriend or

better yet leave a baby bend"

Me: "Just like you and Dad did to my mother right?" I bust that out and she looked at me with pain.

Bontle: "How could you say that Nosi?" She asked with a faint voice

Me: "Mnxaah" I walked upstairs leaving her behind.

Mapula: "What? Nosi how could you say that to her" I flink by her voice. She's scolding me though I knew I was so wrong. I don't need this from her, I feel bad already.

Me: "I know I was wrong
Mapula, I was just mad at her for
saying all those things" She sighed
Mapula: "She has to lead you to
the correct direction, she's your
mother"

Me: "No she's not my mother" I
huffed settling on a seat besides
my bed.

Mapula: "You were wrong, you need
to apologize to her Nosi" I nod
looking up to her

Me: "What was wrong with you
yesterday?" I asked

Mapula: "Well... Sizwe was here" I
popped my eyes

Me: "What? So.. Y.. Oh my Goodness

Mapula! What were you guys doing?" I asked her

Mapula: "Aaay Nosi" She looked away and I giggled pulling her so she could answer me.

Mapula: "We were just cuddling, talking, kissing and well" She shrugged her shoulders "Eating"

Me: "How did he get in here?"

Mapula: "The window, he came so late and unexpected saying he misses me" I smiled

Me: "I didn't know that Sizwe Mhlongo can be this romantic" She rolled her eyes

Mapula: "I didn't know to" I smiled

Me: "Yeah ey"

Mapula: "What happened to you? I thought you'll be here in the early hours of the morning"

Me: "Mrs Mhlongo happened" I tell her breathing out

Mapula: "Don't tell me she caught you two by any chance" I shook my head

Me: "Nope, she was busy doing some things which I don't know" I rolled my eyes looking back at her "we didn't get a chance to walk out but luckily I came up with an idea" I say to her and she nods with a silly smile

Mapula: "Oh uMother-in-law was doing unnecessary things"

Me: "I suspect that she heard something which led her to do all those things. I've spent days with them but not even once has she ever woke up at 5am" She nods once more

Mapula: "Yeah maybe, and you need to talk to Dad about going to KZN" I sighed

Me: "Nhla said he'll come up with something, I cannot tell him that I'm attending a ceremony with his best friend" It was something I wouldn't do. How would I put it out? Dad I'm going to a ceremony with your best friend, at 'his' late girlfriend? Come On!

Ma^{5/8}Qapula: "Yeah, I'm sure you'll come up with something" I nodded with hope

My phone beebed indicating an incoming call. A smile flashed across my face when I saw the caller ID. It was my baby

Me: "Babe"

Nhla: "How are you doing?"

Me: "Great, you?"

Nhla: "Cool, I miss you so I'll hang up and do a video call"

Me: "I'll be expecting it" I say with a smile

Nhla: "Love you" He immediately hung up, within few minutes a

video call came through

Me: "Love you too" He chuckled. He was wet, maybe he was showering

Nhla: "I miss you, I wish you were right here with me"

Me: "Me too babe, I miss you" I made a face and he faintly smiled

Nhla: "So I'll give you a certain invitation then you'll show it to your father, that was He'll allow you to go so that we'll drive down to KZN"

Me: "We'll drive?"

Nhla: "Yes what did you think? That we'll fly?" I nod

Me: "Yes, I have a rich parent and

a rich boyfriend"

Nhla: "I'm not a boyfriend, Better be the last time saying that" I nod shutting the hell up

Nhla: sigh "I'm your man

Sweetheart, I'm 31 years

turning 32 soon so I cannot be

labeled as a boyfriend by my

woman" I'm his what? His

woman? Oh My God my heart is

dancing

Me: "I'm sorry babe" I breath and

he nods

Nhla: "Let me finish up here, I

wanted to see your beautiful

face"

Me: "Ohk, we will talk"

Nhla: "I love you"

Me: "Same here" He looked at me over the screen

Nhla: "What is that?" I laughed

Me: "I love you"

Nhla: "The Universe is complaining about my love for you, i love you" He immediately disconnected the call.

I placed the phone on my chest with a smile. I threw it on the bed before I made my way

downstairs. MaBontle was cooking

Me: "MaBontle" It went Silence for a while

Bontle: "Nosi" I sighed taking few steps to her.

Me: "I'm sorry about what

happened this morning, what I've said...I didn't mean it"

Bontle: "You meant every word
Nosi kodwa I'm sorry about the
words I uttered to you" I felt so
bad

Me: "I'm so sorry, I was wrong
because I knew nothing about
your life or whatsoever with my
Dad"

Bontle: smile "I'm also sorry, come
here" She pulled me for a hug and
I smiled

Me: "Thank you for being great" We
pulled out

Bontle: "You're also grew, My
unborn baby will be lucky to have

you as a sister"

Me: "You Pregnant?"

Bontle: "No...Not yet but I will be, Soon" I nod

....

CHAPTER 17

NOSIBUSISO

I woke up early in the morning and did my hygiene process. I took the letter that Nipho gave it to me then I made my way downstairs finding my dearest father on the watching television. I cleared my throat walking over to him.

Me: "Good morning Dad" He looked

up time with a smile. My dad is too handsome for being 34 years, so handsome.

Mlu: "Morning NaDube, how are you doing?" I settled next to him

Me: "Good, how are you doing?"

Mlu: "Great, I'm doing just fine and we're trying for a baby" So she told him?

Me: "She told you? I mean... she said it's supposed to be a surprise" I say to him

Mlu: "She told me yesterday and I was taken by surprise since she's still studying and she once said she can't be Pregnant while studying"

Me: "Ow, I wish you luck then" I really don't like how I feel about this whole thing. I feel like MaBontle is really competing with me but I don't want to dwell on that

Mlu: "Thank you my daughter" I nod clearing my throat

Me: "Dad, there's something I need to ask from you" I said that handing the letter to him. He took it scanning it before he looked up to me

Mlu: "What is this?"

Me: "I was invited and I really have to go because it'll be an important part of our exams" I

lied through my teeth

Mlu: "Oh, you can go then" my eyes popped

Me: "Really?"

Mlu: "Yes, you're leaving tomorrow morning right?" I nod excitedly

Me: "Yes, thank you" I kissed her cheek running up the stairs to my room. I tossed my phone dialing Nipho's number

Nipho: "Sweetheart"

Me: "He said Yes, I can go with you babe"

Nhla: "Really? He didn't suspect anything right?" I nod countless

Me: "Yes! I'll be ready early in the morning with Mapula since she'll

be spending time with Sizwe"

Nhla: "Ohk Sweetheart, I love you"

Me: "I love you"

Bontle: "Are you leaving?"

Tomorrow?" I nod with a smile
across my face

Me: "Yes, I'm happy"

Bontle: "Mmmh, I hope you won't
do things which you're not allowed
to do" I looked at her shocked

Me: "What do you mean MaBontle?
What's wrong with you Ma?"

Bontle: "Nothing, just that I'm
not stupid" She walked away from
my sight without me asking any
further questions.

"Hey" I looked up to be met by
Mapula

Me: "Hy"

Mapula: "Father is asking for
you, he said you must come and join
us"

Me: "Why" She giggled

Mapula: "Come you'll see" I followed
behind her and I almost dropped
down when my eyes landed on
Nhlakanipho whom was chatting
up a storm with my father

Me: "Good Afternoon"

Nhla: "Afternoon S..Sisi, how are
you?" I cleared my throat looking
at him

Me: "I'm fine Bhut'Nhla you?" he

was wearing his casual clothes as he looked so hot in them.

Mlu: "No no no Nosi he's your uncle, just say Uncle Nhlakanipho if not Uncle" Mapula chuckles trying as much as she can to not laugh

Me: "Ohk Dad, I'll stick to Uncle" I say and a smirk flashed across Nipho's face.

He's enjoying this; jerk ass!

Me: "I'll go and get some refreshments" I say to them as I was already on my feet

Nhla: "I'll help you with that" I walked over to the Kitchen with him following me. He pinned me down the wall with my hands over

my head as soon as we made our way inside the kitchen

Me: "Babe" I whispered as his warm breath was hitting my neck and my nana was boiling down there

Nhla: "I miss you so damn much" He bit my ear lobe as I bend a little because my knees were failing me.

Me: "Nhl... Nhlakanipho... Mmm" His lips were now on my neck sucking the shit out of me.

Nhla: "I miss this" He said over my neck as his hand travelled to my ass bringing his face to mine as our lips met. We kissed

passionately not slowly though
and not too fast! He picked me up
placing me on top of the counter
while my hands went under his t-
shirt while I brushed his abs
"Oh my Goodness, you guys!" We
immediately pulled out and I
smiled placing my head on his
chest. That was Mapula. Nhla
chuckles Picking me up from the
kitchen counter

Nhla: "I'll be in the Living room" he
took few steps backwards before
he made her way out. I looked at
Mapula with a smile

Mapula: "Wow" I giggled

Me: "That was so hot!" I exclaimed

Mapula: "Fix your collar, you have a love bite" I did and went back to the living room

Mlu: "Haw? I thought you were fetching some refreshments" Oh!

Me: "Forgot them, I.. I'll I.. I'll just go and yeah" I immediately made my way upstairs

My phone beebed as I groaned turning to the other side avoiding it. It beebed again and I groaned tossing it over as I accepted the call without looking at the caller ID.

Me: "Mmmh"

"Wake up we have to go

Sweetheart" I groaned once more
Me: "I was about to kiss Trevor
Jackson, you ain't fair"

Nhla: "I'm your man baby, get
ready" he immediately disconnected
the call and I stood up getting
ready. After that I walked
downstairs with my suitcases.

Mlu: "It's so big" I chuckled.

Me: "I'm a lady Dad, so you'll
understand one day" I say kissing
his cheek

Mlu: "Mmmh" He looked at both of
us "Be safe you two, call me every
second" I mumbled

Mlu: "That won't help you, call me
every second of a day" He's

smoking a strong drug right now.

Mapula: "We'll call"

Me: "Bye Dad" I looked at Mapula

"Let's go"

We bid goodbye to him since

MaBontle was nowhere at sight.

We made our way to the cab

which dropped us at a bus stop.

My nerves were starting to kick

in.

Nhlakanipho's car stopped in front

of us and we climbed in

Me: "Babe"

Nhla: "Sweetheart, how are you

Sister-in-law" Mapula chuckled

Mapula: "Brother-in-law, I'm fine

you?"

Nhla: "Your sister is taking care of me so I'm a happy man"

Mapula: "I'm glad" I smiled looking out of the window.

...

CHAPTER 18

NOSIBUSISO

The weather was somehow bad since it's been raining for hours.

This was the longest journey I have ever travelled but I was always asleep most of the time.

Nhlakanipho finally parked the car in this yard which had so many houses and those round one's.

Typical Zulu family

Me: "Is this a palace or something? There are so many houses in here" I asked him and he smiled and shook his head. I know he's not fine when he's like this but I kept quiet and climbed out of the car. He held my hand taking a deep breath then we walked over to the yard.

"Bhut'Nhlakanipho, auntie here's Bhut'Nhlakanipho!" A child around 6 years shout running over to us and Nhla picked her up

Nhla: "Mimi how are you?" I guess she's Mimi

Mimi: "I miss you that's all, otherwise I'm fine" she's just so

cute

Nhla: "Where's your Mom?"

Mimi: she shrugged her shoulders "I don't know, but Gogo said she's coming back" Nhla nodded with a smile and looked at me

Nhla: "Here's Bhut' Nhlakanipho's wife" the child looked at me and frowned

Mimi: "I thought you were going to wait for Aunt' Linda to come back" I frowned

Nhla: "Mimi Your Aunt is not coming back and she said I must move on" I don't know why he's even explaining such things to a child. I tap my left foot down

losing my patience and my nervousness was doing no Justice Me: "Ain't we going in?" I asked more like a statement. He looked down at me

Nhla: "Oh yeah let's go in" We walked over to the house and he knocked. The door was opened by an old woman looking more like Mimi.

Her: "Nhlakanipho, I was a bit worried when your Mom said you won't be coming but I'm glad you're here. Please come in" It was a bit awkward for me since I was not known but Nhla placed the kid down and took my hand into his

which was somewhat good. We walked inside and we were met by more people.

One of the lady who was in her early 20s in I'm not mistaken stood up walking over to us.

Nhla: "Zama, how are you?" He let go of my hand and pulled the lady in for a hug. I guess she's 'Zama'. They pulled out and she looked at me

Zama: "You came with someone? Who's she because I'm sure your mother has no other child except you and the annoying Sizwe" Nhla chuckled

Nhla: "Oh no, she's my woman."

Mom has no other child" She nods with a face

Zama: "I didn't know you were in for kids, she looks so young for you"

The woman said "Haay Zama leave the poor child alone, you're always so jealous of everyone with Nhlakanipho. You were jealous of your own sister too" Zama rolled her eyes

Zama: "We all know I saw Nhlakanipho before Linda, but she always gets everything from me" She clicked her tongue walking out of our sight

Nhla: cleared his throat "Ummm

Ma I hope you don't mind me coming with my woman?" I'll just say she's MaLinda since it looks like she's their mother

MaLinda: "No no no Mfanwam (my son) it's fine, I'm glad you have moved on. Linda would be happy too and she looks like a good girl" Her eyes were now on me and I looked up to Nhla who smiled so widely.

Nhla: "She's indeed good"

MaLinda: "You're welcome" one of the woman stood up clicking her tongue then she walked out

MaLinda: "Don't mind this one, she's just so bitter" I nod since

she was directing that to me
Nhla: "Can you please show us a
room Ma? We're tired and I'm
sure Nosi would like to rest
right?" I nod. It's been hours on
the road road but it's still early.
MaLinda walked over to the
passage and we followed behind
and walked inside a certain room.
MaLinda: "I think this will do, I'll
leave you to it" She's great. She
walked out of our room closing the
door behind and I sighed
Me: "Finally, I don't think I'll ever
be around those people"
Nhla: "Come on they ain't bad" Oh
really? They're not the type I

would like to be around with.
Honestly, I stripped naked since
it was not something new. I then
slide Nhlakanipho's t-shirt which
was so comfortable before I
threw myself on the bed.

Nhla: "You sleeping?" I nod closing
my eyes.

.

I yawned opening my eyes which
Landed on Nhlakanipho. I smiled
pecking his lips then I got off
the bed walking over to take the
basin which was at the corner of
our room. I placed it in the middle
of the room before I walked out
to look for water.

Zama: "So... Does your parents know you here? I mean, you're still a child" I turned without answering her as I made my way to one of the room where I believe it's a Kitchen- i found MaLinda

Me: "Morning Ma"

MaLinda: smile "Morning, I hope you slept very well"

Me: "Yes, I'm sorry I couldn't join you for dinner yesterday" I murrmur

MaLinda: "It's Ohk, I understand that you were tired" I nod

Me: "I'm here for some water, I want to take a bath but it looks

like there's no bathroom and I..
I'm sorry if I'm talking too much
it's just that, I need water" She
chuckles softly

MaLinda: "It's fine, take this" She
pointed at a basket which had
warm water

Me: "Thank you" I took it walking
back to my bedroom, I'm calling it
my bedroom-wow. I find no one,
hopefully Nhlakanipho is out. I
took a bath using the basin then
dressed in a skirt and a simple
tee. I took the dirty water out
and on my way back to the
bedroom I heard some sniffing in
one of the rooms then I took few

steps to listen to the voice

"Linda I love you so much, every time I try to convince myself that I have totally forgotten about you is the moment I realize that I'm so much I love you" A tear escaped from my eye. Hearing him saying that breaks my heart, but now it's so much harder than the last time since he's my man but he's still in love with his dead girlfriend

Nhla: "Though I have found someone, she's amazing. So young but amazing" He chuckles "I love her so damn much! I can't compare my love for both of you

but she's... she's great and I see her as my future wife" It goes silent before he continues "Nosi is childish and has a lot to learn but the love I have for her is too much and sometimes I'm scared to lose her, just like I did with you" I immediately walked out after that because it was too much for me to fathom.

The place was starting to get crowded. I looked at the place and I missed home, where I grew up. I felt a hand tapping on my shoulder and I turned to look at the person, I nearly fainted.

Nomsa: "I thought I saw a wrong person" She threw herself on me and I didn't know if I should hold her or what since we really didn't get along when we were growing up. She pulled out

Nomsa: "I've never thought I would ever see you again, I.. I need you sis" I looked around me and took her hand into mine walking inside the house. We went to the bedroom which I call ours just for the weekend

Me: "How are you Nomsa?" A tear escaped from her eye.

Nomsa: "It's hard Nosi, my life is a mess and I don't know how to get

out of that mess" She sniffed
Me: "Tell me what's going on"
Nommsa: "I'm married" I looked at
her so surprised "Yes, it was
arranged and I thought
everything will be fine but it's
hard staying in a loveless
marriage Nosi" I felt bad for her.
Despite of everything she would
do to me when we grew up, she's
still my sister.

Me: "Come with me"

Nommsa: "What!?! No I can't"

Me: "This is your chance Nommsa, my
father would be glad to learn
that he has another daughter"

Nommsa: "Your father?"

Me: "Yea, I found him few weeks back and he's cool. Your mother said we share the same father and I think you also deserve to know him"

Nomsa: "What if he's not my father? No I can't" She shook her head and I sighed

Me: "I understand, who did you come with?"

Nomsa: "My so called husband, he's a family friend though we're located in Cape Town" I nod with understanding.

Me: "We'll talk right? We need to talk before I go back to Johannesburg"

Nomsa: "Yea" I smiled standing up. I don't even know how to feel about this

NHLAKANI PHO

This morning it was so emotional for me, I really didn't mean for it to be like that but after walking down the passage, I found myself in Linda's room and all the memories came back. I won't lie and say I'm over her even though I'm trying to. I still love her but it's so different from what I feel for Nosibusiso. Nosi is so young and has a lot to learn but she always keeps me in my

toes. I walked over to the kraal since we were given a job to slaughter a cow. I saw Nosi walking out of the house with Mvelo's wife who I find it weird that she's somehow has some features from Nosi.

Mvelo: "How come are you in a relationship with someone so young Nhlakanipho?" I chuckled

Me: "Love is love, your wife is also young so don't say anything about Nosi" I tell him

Mvelo: "I hear you, but my side is different from yours since we were arranged"

Me: "Whatever, you're in love with

her. What happened to that Pedi girl?"

Mvelo: "Mathapelo? If she wasn't Pregnant I would have long dumped the shit out of her, that girl is annoying"

Me: "Oh i-" My phone immediately rang and I walked away from the kraal. It was Mlungisi.

Me: "Sho man"

Mlu: "You didn't tell me that you're in KZN" I cleared my throat

Me: "Who told you?"

Mlu: "It doesn't matter, I'm coming down" What?

Me: "No you can't come I..I mean you don't have to"

Mlu: "I'm coming, I'll see you in few hours"

Me: "But i-" He hunged up and I cussed running my hands of my face so frustrated.

....

CHAPTER 19

NHLAKANI PHO

My heart was really raising because I couldn't find Nosibusiso. I've been looking for her after she disappeared from the side she was in few minutes ago. I'm ready to face whatever it is with Mlungisi but I know that she's not ready. I sighed Looking at Mvelo who had a smick across his

face. He's finding this so amusing.
Me: "Maybe she went somewhere with your wife since I last saw her with her. Call her man!" He chuckled pulling his cellphone from his pocket

Mvelo: "Nomisa is not answering the call, I think you must accept that you're in for it" He says and it's true. Mlungisi is going to break my legs or better yet kill me.

Me: "He wasn't supposed to find out like this, This will cause lot of problems especially since we're here" I huffed running my hands on my messy face.

Mvelo: "He's your friend I'm sure he won't hurt you"

Me: "That's what makes matters worse, I'm in love with her daughter" I chuckled as it plays in my mind. I didn't really put that in mind these past weeks but now I know and see that it's crazy.

Though I'm in love

Mvelo: "I wish I know the person you're talking about"

Me: "Mlungisi Dube, That guy is friendly but you wouldn't want to mess with his children, he may kill you" I say thinking about the time he suspected that Nosi is dating but I talked with him through

that since he was breathing fire.
Me: "I don't know what's going to happen, Eish Nosi is frustrating naye because she's everywhere" I sighed looking around

Mvelo: "You're just looking for someone to blame, come let's go and seat with other men because clearly your woman is nowhere to be found" He breaths that out walking away from where I was and I followed behind with my frustrations

"Nhlakanipho Mhlongo is that you?" I turned to that voice and I frowned when I my eyes landed to this lady, Vuyisile who was Linda's

best friend. I didn't like this for hence I still don't like her, she has a bad aura around her.

Me: "Vuyi, how are you?" I faked smiled and she widely smiled at me.

Vuyi: "I thought you ain't coming, I mean... there's a lot of drama here" She rolled her eyes and I chuckled

Me: "I had to come here, so here I am" she scans me

Vuyi: "I see you're still the most handsome man I've ever seen" I caught a glimpse of Nosi

Me: "This is not the right time, I need to go" I was about to leave

when she held my arm

Vuyi: "I'm available you know, call me" She placed a card which I believe it has her phone numbers on my pocket. She winked walking away. I shook my head heading to where Nosi was.

Me: "Nosibusiso where were you?"

She turned to me

Nosi: "Why? Has something happened?" I scoffs looking around before I looked at her again.

Me: "Your father is coming, I've been looking for you" she popped her eyes Looking at me sharply

Nosi: "M..My father? How? I..what

are we going to do
Nhlakanipho? My father is going
to kill me" You couldn't miss the
panicking tone in her voice
Me: "I.. We can book a B&B
somewhere around just for today
and tomorrow" I say
Nosi: "We're in the middle of a
complete village, a village
Nhlakanipho and I don't think
there are any B&Bs or
Hotels" She mumbled with a sigh
so defeated.

Nosi: "We must just accept that
it's all over! We're dead" A tear
escaped from her eye and she
walked away from my sight

NOSIBUSISO

I was at the back of the house ignoring everyone as a thought flashed across my mind. Maybe it wouldn't be a bad idea to go somewhere a little far from here, I know a lot of people in this village even though they're not in the same side as where we were. I turned over my shoe walking to where everyone was until my eyes landed on my father who had a suitcase on his hand. My heart started to raise as I felt so hot. It was really hot because there was nowhere to go from there; I

was stuck.

Mlu: "Nosibusiso what are you doing here?" His Deep voice echoed through the crowd and I felt a bit of dizziness before I regained my consciousness.

Me: "Dad?" I asked as if I didn't hear his question

Mlu: "Ufunani La? (what are you doing here)" I looked at him then at everyone before I exhaled looking back at him

Me: "I'm sorry Baba" My voice volunteered in that sentence because it came so I expected

Mlu: "Uxoliselani? Mina Ngibuzile nje ukuthi Ufunani La" (what are you

sorry for?I just asked that why are you here)I kept quiet without saying anything further. He was losing his patience I could see as he huffed narrowing his eyes on me then looked at my side. That's when I felt his presence,what I've been longing for in these few minutes.

Nhla:"Mlungisi" He said with his deep voice which was thick yet calm.

Mlu:"Nhlakanipho, what is she doing here because clearly she came with you" I looked up to Nhlakanipho who dropped his eyes then looked back at my dearest

father

Nhla: "Can we not do this here?" As he can see that everyone's attention was now turning to us.

My father huffed

Mlu: "Fine, let's go somewhere because I really want to know about the shit that's happening here" Nhla led us to the other side of the yard which there was no one.

Nhla: "Mlu please calm down, let me explain" he looked at us and he chuckled

Mlu: "Please tell me it's not what I think it is, not you guys"

Nhla: "I'm sorry Mlu, I kn-" a

sudden punch landed on his face and out of nowhere my father was on top of him beating him up. Mlu: "Ngithi ungumngan wam Kanti wenza kanje nengane yam" (I thought you're my friend but you're doing something like this with my daughter)

Me: "Baba No!" I was trying to pull him from Nhla because he wasn't fighting back. He was accepting the punches from my father. I let out a loud scream as tears streamed down my cheeks when I couldn't pull him. A man who might be in his early thirties walked in and pulled my father

away from Nhla who was all read and I pain. I immediately ran to him.

Me: "Babe are you fine? Oh God" I was holding him since he was in pain. My father did a number on him.

Mlu: "Nosibusiso let's go!" I shook my head looking at Nhlakanipho

Mlu: "Nosibusiso Ngithi asambe!" (I say let's go) I shook my head with my eyes still on Nhlakanipho. He faintly smile

Nhla: "Go"

Me: "I'm not leaving you, I'm not leaving you Nipho" I say kneeling completely next to him.

Nhla: "I love you, Please go Nosi" I felt a hand pulling me But I didn't want to leave him behind. The man: "I will attend him" My father pulled me to his car dragging his suitcase. He's so strong! He locked me in the car before he went to his side driving off as tears uncontrollable flowed down my cheeks. We didn't even take my clothes. I looked out of the window while we were disappearing from the houses

I was sobbing so quietly while settled in the couch. My father was pacing down the living room

until he stopped on his tracks and chuckled.

Mlu: "Damn how did I miss this? I should deal with that busted, why Nosibusiso?" I gasped on my sobs and someone threw a face cloth on me.

Bontle: "Wipe those tears" I didn't even know how she got here. I slowly took it wiping off my tears

Mlu: "It would have been better if you were dating someone younger than... Someone at your age" I looked at him then looked down

Me: "You don't understand Dad" I say

Mlu: "Then make me! What do you

want from Nhlakanipho
Mhlongo!?" He said that a little
bit louder

Me: "I love him" He chuckled

Mlu: "Don't tell me that, what do
you know about love? You're still
16 for God's sake!" I was looking
down throughout

Mlu: "Where's Mapula since you
were in God knows where with
your sugar daddy?" I looked at
him without saying anything

Mlu: "Answer me!" I shrugged my
shoulders

Me: "I don't know where she is" I
wasn't about to say anything
about Mapula. She's going to

answer for herself

Mlu: "Look... You're going to break up with Nhlakanipho, and you're going to focus on your school work" I shook my head slowly looking at him

Mlu: "We clear?"

Me: "But Dad I love him, I L-" He interrupted me

Mlu: "Don't say that shit to me Nosibusiso Dube! You're still a child and you're under my roof.

Therefore; you're going to follow every single rule I set in this house. You're going to break up with him and you won't be going out of this house. Hear that?"

Me: "I hate you!" I ran upstairs banging my bedroom door behind as tears streamed down my cheeks and I threw myself on the bed letting them fall.

....

CHAPTER 20

MAPULA

I smiled looking at him. I have never thought that I would fall inlove with someone like Sizwe; he's totally different.

Me: "Babe let me go and dish out" I say standing on my feet but he pulled me to him

Sizwe: "Don't go" He says

Me: "No Sizwe, I have to so let

go" He chuckled as he suddenly placed his lips on mine. We kissed for a while until I felt his hand going under my skirt

Me: "No" I pulled out "No Sizwe" He looked at me with his small, red eyes.

Sizwe: "What's wrong baby!" His voice was deeper than before.

Me: "I can't" I murmur

Sizwe: "What's wrong?" I thought Nhla told him about my rape, I thought he somehow knows

Me: "I'm sorry I..i..." I sniffed those thoughts away as I felt his hand wrapped around me.

Sizwe: "It's Ok I'm here" I nod

wiping off my tears with the
back of my hand

NOSIBUSISO

I was on my bed cuddling with my teddy. My emotions were all over and there was only one person whom I needed so much right now; it was Nipho. I thought I was strong enough to deal with all of this but I guess, I guessed wrong. Everyone has her/his weakness. I've been checking on my phone of any calls regarding Nipho but no one was calling and it frustrated me. I sighed deeply as I tossed over my phone to the

side of the bed and closed my eyes. A knock came through within some few minutes. I ignored whoever that was and cuddled up with the teddy

"Nosi open" I quickly got off the bed to attend her; that was Mapula. I invited her in then closed the door then I walked over to the bed.

Mapula: "How are you?" I sighed looking away for a her. I don't know how to feel, sad or happy about everything since I don't have to hide my love for Nhlakanipho anymore

Me: "Honestly" I shrugged my

shoulders" I don't know how to feel, my life is a mess Mapula" She looked at me so sad then she flashed a smile

Mapula: "That's better, you have a home and disrespecting your father is something I don't really like because I may find myself homeless once again. Though I love Sizwe, I would never break up with him" I nod but I'm not fine with her statement. My father would never kick her out. What can I say though, I don't really know what type of a person is my dearest father.

Me: "Father wouldn't kick you

out, he loves you like his own daughter" I snorts turning to face her

Mapula: "Aketse, I hate my life Nosibusiso. I really do, I wish I had parents who supported me" She sniffed a tear that was about to escape from her eye

Me: "We're here for you Maps, I also wish I had a Mother. I miss my Mom" I honestly say Because I don't feel Bontle. As much as she's my father's wife- I don't feel her at all.

Mapula: "Maybe I should pay them a visit" She mumbled and I narrowed my eyes at her not

believing it. The last time she saw her parents was the day she ran away from home.

Me: "Are you sure? Not to be rude or something my friend. Are you ready though?" She met my eyes and sigh

Mapula: "I'm ready, I think I am" She mumbled "I don't know but I think I am, I want to meet them once more. I want to see them that's all" I nod with understanding. She's my best friend and I want to support her in everything she does; not bad things though.

Me: "I'll go with you" I say

Mapula: "Are you sure? I mean I... I... I don't want to -" I interrupted her

Me: "I'm your Best Friend Maps, I'm here for you" She faintly smiled

Mapula: "Thank you"

Me: "When do you want to go?" I asked

Mapula: shrugged her shoulders "I don't know, I'll have to ask Dad first because the interrogation I got when I got here" I chuckled

Me: "You're much better, I was dragged out of the soil of KZN, He even beat Nipho up" I chuckled then I suddenly frowned

Me: "I miss him"

Mapula: "He didn't call you?" I shook my head looking at my phone

Me: "I've been trying to call him though but it goes straight to voicemail. What if he decides to dump me Mapula?" I say with a faint voice as my heart was burning. It yearned for him.

Mapula: "He may be a little frustrated or something for a while but don't doubt his love for you. Have you seen how that guy looks at you? Like you're some Princess, the only woman on earth and his eyes glows when he looks

at you" My heart skipped a beat.
Me: "I have never loved anyone
like I'm in love with Nipho, I'm
scared to lose him" Mapula
chuckled

Mapula: "You've never dated, don't
tell me about love when you don't
know what that is. Mara I'm
happy that you're experiencing
it, you deserve all the love on
earth" I chuckled softly standing
on my feet

Me: "Yeah right"

Mapula: "Yeah, Ain't you going to
have Dinner?" I shook my head

Me: "I'm not ready to face Dad"

Mapula: "I know what you mean,

he's breathing fire phela motho
ola" I know, that's the reason
why I don't want to go
downstairs. Firstly it's my Dad
and secondly it's MaBontle- I
don't know what her problem is.
She has issues though I thought
we were fine

Mapula: "Let me go downstairs,
I'll bring something for you" I
smiled.

Me: "Thanks sis" I say as she
walked out. I threw myself
closing both my eyes. I was
disturbed by my ringing phone. I
quickly got off the bed answering
it since I was expecting it

Me: "Nhlakanipho" I called out, I didn't even look at the Caller ID
"It's me... Nomsa"

Me: "Ow it's you" I was totally disappointed. I mean, I've been expecting Nipho's call but he doesn't call

Nomsa: "Where you expecting someone?" Ofcourse I was expecting someone

Me: "No, no I was not" I breath that out

Nomsa: "Oh, Ohk then" It went Silence. This is kinda weird, we didn't get along so it feels so weird to be in a conversation with her.

Nomsa: "About what we're talked about, I've been thinking of meeting up with him. I don't know how I'll explain things to him though"

Me: "Why don't you ask your mom to do so? Talk to him" I say

Nomsa: "My Mom is..." She sighed "She doesn't care about me, all she'll want is marriage and controlling my life Nosi" I get where she's coming from.

Me: "I get you"

Nomsa: "Thank you, I will text you when I'm coming down to Johannesburg"

Me: "Ohk Sis" I sighed.

Nomsa: "Thank you" It took few seconds to disconnect the call and sighed once again.

I was asleep when I was woken up by my ringing phone. I tried to ignore it before I was deep In my sleep but it kept on ringing so I accepted the call

Me: "Mmmh"

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I froze in my sleep as my heart skipped a beat. I regained my consciousness

Me: "Baby, Nipho I've been trying to call you" I say sitting on the bed. I don't even know where my sleep went to.

Nhla: "I've been busy, I miss you" I sighed

Me: "I miss you too" I say faintly and adjusted myself on the bed

Nhla: "Should I come?" I always died, it's 1am.

Me: "Nhlakanipho are you crazy? It's 1am, you can't come" I say to him over the phone

Nhla: "I can, will you be able to come out?" I went quiet for a while

Me: "I'll make a plan" I miss my baby so obviously I'll have to make a plan

Nhla: "Good, I'll call you once I'm there"

Me: "Ohk, I'll be expecting you" I say disconnecting the call. I got off the bed walking to the bathroom where I rinsed my face then brushed my teeth. I then went back to my bedroom to wear my gown. Few minutes passed then my phone beebed indicating a message. -Come out

I sighed walking out. I made my way down the stairs making sure that I don't make noise. I opened the door slowly then closed it behind me before I took a deep breath. What a relief!

I made my way out of the yard and saw a car two houses away

from home. I didn't go to it, I just stood there until a message came through

-That's me; come or should I come and get you?

-I'll come by myself

I say walking to where it was.

My eyes landed on him and he was sexy. My man is always sexy and I fall in love every fucken second.

Me: "Babe" I whispered, my voice couldn't come out.

Nhla: "Sweetheart" He pulled me to him as he placed his hands on my hips

Me: "I missed you" A tear suddenly dropped from my eye. I've become

a cry baby lately

Nhla: "Come here" He opened the backdoor of his car and helped me in the backseat. He did too as I lay on top of his lap with my feet on the window.

Nhla: "I wanted to stay away from you after what happened but I couldn't" He muttered

Me: "I couldn't stop thinking about you Nipho, you're driving me nuts" I chuckled softly

Nhla: "Let's elope" I turned to look at him

Me: "What?"

Nhla: "Yes, let's go somewhere and start afresh with our lives Nosi.

No one understands our love, you might be younger than me but the connection I feel when I'm with you doesn't allow me to let go... let's elope" I shook my head. Me: "That is too much Nipho, I don't even have documents" Nhla: "We'll get them, I..I don't want to lose you Nosi, I won't survive" a tear escaped from his eye and I placed my hand on his cheek

.....

CHAPTER 21

NOSIBUSISO

I shook my head repeatedly and moved my hand from his cheek. This is too much, I can't just elope. I've just found my father and I'm not ready to leave him. Or maybe I do.

Me: "This is too much Nipho, we can't leave our families behind" He nods without saying anything. He pulled me to him and nicely lay my head on his chest. Listening to his heart beat was the most beautiful thing I have ever felt.

Me: "I know this is hard Nipho, it's hard on me too but can we fight? For the Sake of our love, let's fight for our love and what

we feel" I honestly say. I am ready to fight with him by my side

Nhla: "This is hard, I wish things were easier" He breath that out and I smiled faintly meeting his gaze

Me: "I love you, that's all what matters" I say to him. I have never thought that this day would ever come! The day I pour out my heart to someone. Hence Nhlakanipho Mhlongo is not just someone; he's much more different from that.

Nhla: "I love you, please promise me Nosi. Promise to stick with me

throughout, no matter what life throws at us?" Why does it feel like I'm saying some wedding vows? Though I wouldn't mind saying them, Nhlakanipho is the kind of a guy I wouldn't mind to spend my lifetime with.

Me: "I promise you" He smiled sharply bringing me more closer to him. He looked straight to my eyes then dropped his eyes to my lips, he licked his lips

Nhla: "I want to kiss you so bad" He huffs "I'm just scared that I'll do something I don't want to do right now" He says pulling me to his lap. I looked up

to his lips licking mine too. I want to kiss him, I feel it too. I'm just so eager to have him devouring my lips

Me: "Please kiss me" He chuckled as his face went to my neck. I felt his warm breath hitting my neck as an electric current flowed all over my body. I was literally feeling things. I then felt him sucking my neck and my eyes automatically closed and a sound escaped from my mouth. His hand went under my t-shirt but as he was about to go up, I placed my hand into his stopping him.

Me: "Nipho..." My soft low voice

echoed through the hot air which was surrounding us.

Nhla: "I won't do anything, I just want to make you feel good.

Please allow me" It went Silence for a while before I nodded my head and he went back to what he was doing. He shifted placing me on the seat as he was not on top of me with his lips on mine.

We kissed, I kept on impaling myself underneath him as my hands went to his chest. He cupped my breast and another sound escaped when I felt his hard warm hands contacting with my bare breast.

Me: "N..Nipho" I softly say
Nhla: "Sweetheart" He replied with
his lips on mine getting back to
suck my neck leaving my lips. He
was sucking my neck while
brushing my breast which became
hard. I don't know what this
feeling is. He pulled out as he
looked at me, I looked at his eyes
and they were red. He closed
them as he opened them again.
Nhla: "Fuck!" Nhlakanipho is not
the swearing time and what's
he's doing is unusual. He suddenly
got off me opening the car as he
walked out. Was I bad? Questions
flowed through my mind like a

waterfall. I went out too walking to where he was

Me: "Nipho what's wrong?" He looked at me then looked down to him and my eyes followed. I almost fainted looking at his huge boner reminding me of that day I walked in on him naked. My cheeks flushed with embarrassment then I quickly looked away.

Me: "Oh my God, Nipho is that a...I..a penis?" His laughter was bold and really deep. Knowing pretty well that he's throwing his head back, something I've always loved seeing him doing.

Nhla: "You're asking like it's

something you're not allowed to say nor asked, it's a Dick" I nod turning to look at him. He was much better than the last few seconds ago

Me: "Can I touch?" No one will see what I'm doing right? I'm sure it's around 3am

Nhla: "No, you'll make it worse Sweetheart" I nod with understanding.

The moon was shining brightly, pure grey which was reflecting straight to us as I glanced on a single star which was on the sky

Me: "Look" Pointing it out "Here's a

single star, don't you want to make a wish?" I asked him
Nhla: "That thing works" I chuckled with a nod

Me: "Yes it works, say it silently with your heart" I looked at him then looked at the star 'I wish to have my father's blessings' that's all I'm wishing for.

Everything after that is in the hands of the Lord.

Nhla: "Come, you'll have to go back inside before Mlungisi gives me more punches" He says taking my hand into his

.

I flipped my eyes open as they

went to the clock, it's Monday which means I'll be attending the teachers which is boring. I won't lie and I say I love school, heck I hate it. I got off the bed walking over to the bathroom. I did my hygiene process then went downstairs. There's really no use of avoiding my Father, I won't ignore him forever.

Me: "Morning Family" Everyone replied except my dearest father. I sighed settling around the table and I looked at him

Me: "Dad I'm sorry" It went quite for a while "I...I really didn't mean for everything to be like

this, I love Nhlakanipho. I love him so much and there's no denying that" I was expecting a slap instead he stood up and made his way upstairs maybe to his office

Bontle: "I knew you're just like your..y-i interrupted her

Me: "Maybe you should say I'm just like you, I mean you managed to fall in love with your boss" She huffed throwing a dish cloth on the table

Bontle: "You're totally out of Nhlakanipho's league, how old are you again!" I scoffed narrowing my eyes on her

Me: "What's that got to do with you Miss? Nipho loves me, even though I'm 15 years old younger than him but I own his heart" I shoot my eyes directly to her

Me: "Why do I sense some jealousy?" I really thought we're good but I guess we're not

Bontle: Shrugged her shoulders "I have Mlungisi so why would I be jealous? You're just a kid and obviously you're seeking for everyone's attention" Mapula chuckled

Mapula: "Ma not to be disrespectful but I think you have a problem with Nosi, you're

always on Nosi's neck and it sucks"
MaBontle clicked her tongue
walking away from our sight
Me: "I really don't know what's
wrong with her" Mapula shook her
head

Mapula: "Aaay let's just go and
get ready for a Class"

.
"I'm in my room, laying in the
bed" I breath that out with a
goofy smile on my face. I'm on the
call with my only true love, yep
I've accepted it that he's my
heart owner.

Nhla: "Mmmh, what are you
wearing?" I chuckled nervously

Me: "Nothing underneath, then a lazy tee" i say to him

Nhla: "I wish I was right next to you right now" He says over the phone and I feel those butterflies overcrowding in my stomach.

Me: "Same here, so I could play with uhmm" I cleared my throat and he chuckled

Nhla: "What baby?"

Me: "No" I say "Nothing" That wasn't meant to come out. I've noticed some porn videos from Bontle's laptop and I watched few; just for incase. I sighed turning to face the other side of

the wall; I miss being in his arms.
Nhla: "I'll just pretend that I didn't hear that at all, because I love you" I chuckled

Me: "Yeah right"

Nhla: "Mom wants to see you, Tomorrow" It went silent then I cleared my throat

Me: "Why? Is it about our relationship?"

Nhla: "I don't know

Sweetheart, but she's fine with everything" I don't know

Me: "Nipho I.. I don't know" I stutter narrowing my eyes to the clock on the side of the bed.

Nhla: "Everything will come up, you

said we must fight so that's the start. Walk with me" A song by Calum Scott blasted on his background then it went to Phora Me: "Ohk, I'll speak to Dad" Nhla: "Sweetheart" I smiled widely Me: "Babe"

Nhla: "Please don't forget that I love you, I don't care how much I say this but know that I'll never get tired of saying this. I love you" I smiled emotional

Me: "I love you" He makes Loving him so simple, I wouldn't want to lose him.

.....

CHAPTER 22

NOSIBUSISO

I should be done by now but honestly I'm nervous. I don't know what to expect from Mrs Mhlongo, I'm not ready for some words again-bad names. I closed my eyes listening to music, that's what keeps me sane lately in this house. I sang along until my phone rang, I tried as much as I can to avoid it but it was too much. I accepted the call without looking at the Caller ID

"I'm outside your house, two houses away" His deep voice made my sat up immediately and I cleared my throat

Me: "You're here already?" I asked
Nhla: "Yes, don't tell me you ain't
here" he breaths that out

Me: "I..I.. Well... Nipho I.. I'm not
meeting up with Your Mom" I say
biting my lip

Nhla: "What do you mean by
that?" He asked sounding
worried, I could sense it in his
voice.

Me: "I'm scared Nipho, I'm really
scared" I say to him. He sighed,
deeply.

Nhla: "I know sweetheart, I.. I'll
be there, hence I'll always be so
there's really no need for you to
be scared" I sighed frustrated

without saying anything

Nhla: "Now get off that bed and get ready for the meeting up, I'll wait for you" I smiled faintly

Me: "Fine, I'll do so" I disconnected the call getting off the bed. I walked over to the bathroom and did my hygiene process. I then walked back to my bedroom finding Mapula settled on the bed. Me: "What's up with you?" I asked him

Mapula: "I'm fine" I can see she's not but she's trying to master her smile. I'll dig whatever that is, she'll eventually talk.

Me: "Oh" I walked to the closet to

take some clothes

Mapula: "You gonna wear that?" I turned to her then I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "Ofcourse, what were you thinking?" I asked and she shook her head

Mapula: "It's revealing, you're going to meet your mother-in-law" She says and I darter my eyes on her. What is she trying to say?

Me: "It's not like I don't know her, I'm fine with these" I point it out.

Mapula: "Oh

Ngempela?" (really) Her accent

was funny. I held myself though

Me: "Yes really"

Mapula: "No" She stood up walking to my closet "Wear this" She threw a long dress on me and gasped looking at her

Me: "I'm not wearing that" I say

Mapula: "Yes you're wearing that, you're meeting up with your mother-in-law so it should show" I kept quiet and took the dress.

Me: "It's not like she'll appreciate my Relationship with his son" I mumbled sliding the dress and I sighed looking at the mirror

Me: "I don't like this" I tell Mapula and she frowned turning to me

Mapula: "Do this Nosi, just for few hours" She muttered and I nod looking at the mirror and for a moment there, I felt out of place My phone beebed indicating a message, I tossed it over throwing my eyes on the screen 'Come out Sweetheart' I breath out walking out but before I could hold a handle. Mapula called me out

Me: "What?" I turned to her

Mapula: "You forgot this" I looked at her hand and I immediately frowned when I saw a handbag

Me: "No Mapula no" I shook my head looking at her eyes

Mapula: "Yes, Now take we don't want to keep Mr Mhlongo waiting any longer" I sighed taking the bag and I made my way downstairs. There was no one so I just walked out of the house.

"Baby" I whined as soon as I was in his hard arms.

Nhla: "Sweetheart, you look.." I interrupted him

Me: "Ridiculous, I know" I sighed as he took my handbag then he opened the door for me. I climbed out and he walked over to his side and did too.

Nhla: "You don't look ridiculous but you could have worn your usual

clothes, my Mom won't have any problem"

Me: "I told Mapula but she was so stubborn to hear me out" I also thought I could impress my mother-in-law

Nhla: "Let's just go, I love you"

Me: "I love you" He immediately pressed the accelerator driving off from the side of the road.

We walked inside the house hand-in-hand with him holding my handbag. My nerves were flowing down my body and when Nipho made the first knock, they became worse.

Nhla: "Relax Sweetheart, everything will be fine" He then, planted a light kiss on my hand. The door was pulled open as we came face-to-face with Mrs Mhlongo. My knees were literally Shaking.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Good Afternoon, you may come in" She was formal and boy, I wanted to die just right there. We made our way inside the house and like always, it is so neat purely white.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Nosibusiso my daughter, how are you?" Nhla let go of my hand

Me: "I'm good Ma" I dropped my

eyes to the floor.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Good, Nhlakanipho you may leave us" I immediately looked up to Nipho who had his eyes on me. I thought he'll be there with us

Nhla: "Ouk Mom" He immediately made his way out of our sight

Mrs Mhlongo: "Can we please seat" One of the helpers made their way to us

Her: "Can I get you anything to drink?"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Yes Marie dear, a juice will be fine" She nods walking away. Mrs Mhlongo looked at me and I quickly looked down avoiding

her eyes

Mrs Mhlongo: "Look at me" I slowly looked up

Me: "Ma" I say softly

Mrs Mhlongo: "How are you? How is school?" I looked at her

Me: "I'm fine and school it's Ohk since I'm being homeschooled" I skipped school today, click!

Mrs Mhlongo: "Oh that's good, how is life nje?" Marie walked in with a tray as she handed us the drinks

Mrs Mhlongo: "Thank you

Marie" She nods with a smile as she walked away

Me: "Life is good except my things with my Dad" I say shrugging my

shoulders

Mrs Mhlongo: "I've heard about what happened, this thing you.. you call a relationship with

Nhlakanipho" I tensed up

Me: "Ma..."

Mrs Mhlongo: "Listen, I fell in love with Nhlakanipho's Dad so

unexpectedly. He was my best friend then but we fell in love" She looked at me as she sip her juice

Me: "I know we're... I.. I'm

younger than him and everything but Ma I love him"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I know baby, I don't support your Relationship but where there's love there's

happiness" She pauses before she could continue "Nhlakanipho is happy lately" My smile widen "He's indeed happy and you're the reason"

Me: "He's the best Ma, I make him happy and he does the same too" I sighed with a frown "I wish everyone could understand our relationship" I say sipping my Juice

Mrs Mhlongo: "Give them time, especially your father" I nod

Me: "I will"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Good, I think you know about Nhlakanipho's situation. Please take care of

him "I smiled

Me: "I will Make" I heave a sigh

I was making dinner, today I decided to make things extra special. I was humming a song when MaBontle made her way downstairs. I sighed deeply and annoyed.

Bontle: "Hy" Coldly she says

Me: "Hy" I threw that back to her

Bontle: "Look Nosi, You really should break up with your so called Uncle Because you'll give your Father a high blood" I stopped chopping and looked at her. My father is not suffering from High Blood

Pressure so I don't know what's
her problem

Me: "Is it?"

Bontle: "Yes, I don't want to loose
him so please" I sighed turning to
my pots

Me: "Leave me alone please" I
plead with her

Bontle: "I didn't want us to end up
like this, I wanted to be a better
stepmom not like Mine" I stopped
chopping once again but I didn't
turn

Bontle: "I was emotionally and
physically abused by my
stepmother, that Because a
reason to move from home.

Mlungisi was kindly enough to hire me then I fell in love with him, I really don't want to be like her" She says and I turned to look at her

Me: "You're doing something you're not supposed to do, I don't know if it's completion or you're trying to cause a rift between Dad and I but whatever it is, it's not good" I say

Bontle: "We all know you're not good for Nipho and your father doesn't want your Relationship so I don't know how's that any of my problem. Wena stay away from Nhla then your Relationship with

your father will be just fine" She says walking away. I huffed facing my pots. She's starting to annoy the shit out of me and I won't entertain her. My phone rang crawling in my thoughts, I tossed it over accepting the call.

Me: "Nommsa"

Nommsa: "Sis I'm ready, I'll be down to Johannesburg Tommorrow Afternoon"

Me: "Oh I..I don't know what to say but I'm glad you're coming"

Nommsa: "I'm nervous though, I hope things will go very well"

Me: "I'll be there for you Nommsa, You're my sister so I'll be there"

for you" I softly say

Nomsa: "Thank you, I have to go
we'll talk"

Me: "Cool, bye" I disconnected the
call as I sense someone on my side

Me: "Mapula"

Mapula: "Hey, how did it go?" I
looked around the kitchen

Me: "Great, she kinda gave us her
blessings" Her smile widen

Mapula: "That's great"

Me: "Yes and Nomsa is coming, my
stepsister" She immediately
frowned

Mapula: "Ow" I sense a bit of
coldness in her voice

Me: "What's wrong Maps?"

Mapula: "N.. Nothing I'll be upstairs" She walked away before I could say anything. I wonder what's wrong with her.

...

CHAPTER 23

NOSIBUSISO

The night was really dragging as I kept on tossing and turning thinking about Mapula. I don't know what's her problem is and that worries me. I looked up closing my eyes trying to have some sleep and hopefully I'll be able to sleep. I felt my head getting darker and darker. I was

woken up by a banging thing. I groaned Kicking off the blankets then I made my way to the bathroom. I did my hygiene process then I made my way back to my bedroom. I took my phone and a smile quickly flashed across my face when I saw Nipho's message. They're the best. I replied to him then tossed my phone over the bed.

I'm actually meeting up with Nomisa this afternoon and a part of me is actually happy. I sighed wearing my clothes then I made my way downstairs.

Me: "Good morning Family" I say

with a smile

Them: "Hello" I settled around the table and started eating. I glared at Mapula who was focusing on her plate

Me: "Mapula can we talk? After this?" She shrugged her shoulders

Mapula: "Yeah sure" I sighed so worried as I got back to eating.

I wanted to say something about Nomsa but I decided otherwise.

Bontle: "So Nosi? How are you?" I almost choked on my food. What's up with her?

Me: "I'm fine" I went Silence before I continue "Why?"

Bontle: "No I'm just asking" I nod

looking back at my food. My father started talking telling us about his life and it was great since he's not that mad at me anymore. After breakfast we went to attend the teachers then I made my way to my room followed by Mapula.

Me: "What's wrong with you Mapula?" I asked settling on the bed

Mapula: "What do you mean what's wrong? I'm fine" I sighed looking at her

Me: "It would be much easier if you tell me what's the problem instead of being so grumpy" She

looked at me then she looked away

Mapula: "Your Sister is coming" Ow, So she's mad about Nomsa coming here? I know I didn't like Nomsa that much but she's still my half sister

Me: "That's all?"

Mapula: "I'm just scared of losing you to her, you'll have your blood sister Nosi so I won't be so much important to you anymore" I felt my heart sinking.

Me: "Mapula I..I love you, you're my own sister just like Nomsa and I don't want you to feel left out in my life. Nomsa needs her

father as much as everybody does" I honestly say to her and she dropped her eyes.

Mapula: "I.. That was so stupid of me, I shouldn't have thought about that" I smiled.

Me: "It shows how much you love me, I love you Mapula You're my sister and I wouldn't want to lose you"

Mapula: "I don't want to lose you too"

Me: "Don't you want to go with me to meet up with Nomsa?"

Mapula: "Uhhmmm"

Me: "Come on! it will be fun" I say softly as I looked at her

Mapula: "Fine we can go"

Me: "I miss you so much" I whined.
I really miss him though, it's
been like two days without
spending some quality time
together and it sucks. I miss his
touch

Nhla: "Work is too much
sweetheart, maybe I should take
you out for Lunch"

Me: "I can't, I'm meeting up with
Nomisa today" I say

Nhla: "Baby I'll see you, Or maybe
you can sneak out at night"

Me: "To see your handsome face? I
can" I say with a smile

Nhla: "Great, I will call you"

Me: "Cool, Babes I love you"

Nhla: "I love you Sweetheart" I disconnected the call with a smile.

I made my way downstairs.

Bontle was drinking wine paging through a Magazine

Me: "Ma Ain't you suppose to not have that? I mean, it's not

healthy for someone who's trying to be Pregnant" She Looked at me

Bontle: "Can I have some peace?"

Me: "What we used to be fine, what really went wrong?" I asked sadly. I miss having a healthy relationship with her

Bontle: "You came in our lives and

took everything away from me, I don't know what you want from me anymore!" I looked at her so shocked. What did I take from her?

Me: "Ma I didn't take anything from you and you know that, Please... Please let's work on our relationship"

Bontle: "I'm fine, I'm fine with you Wena (you) just be a good girl and leave Nhlakanipho alone" I immediately frowned

Me: "What is Nipho has to do with this?"

Bontle: "Mnx" She placed the magazine on the couch and took

her glass of wine then she head upstairs. I sighed as Mapula made her way downstairs

Me: "Are you ready?"

Mapula: "Yes Masambe!" (Let's go) I laughed at her accent. Just so funny!

We walked out of the car and asked one of the drivers to drive us to the Mall .

Me: "I can't believe Auntie Martha did that" I say placing my hand on my cheek not believing this

Nomsa: "You Better believe it, My Mom can be so much crazy"

Me: "To think they kicked me out, that was a great tragedy in my life" I sighed.

Nomsa: "I'm glad I found you, Now I have Two little sisters" We giggled.

Mapula: "I have a big sister" We smiled

Me: "I need to meet your husband" I say to her and she quickly frown

Nomsa: "You saw him back there and I think you know him"

Me: "Mvelo? I don't know someone with that name"

Nomsa: "Maybe you'll remember him when you set your eyes on

him "I nod

Me: "Yeah"

Nomsa: "So.. How's your Relationship?" I smiled more like blushing which makes me miss Nipho more than I do.

Me: "Great, Though my father does not approve with it. He treats me good and I love him"

Nomsa: "Look at at you!" I chuckled Looking down

Nomsa: "Wena (you) Mapula? Any boyfriend?" Mapula immediately looked down

Nomsa: "Oh my God You have one! Who is he? Is he hot?" Mapula couldn't look at her as she kept on

Blushing. I laughed

Me: "It's Sizwe Mhlongo" I sip my Juice at that.

Nomsa: "What!? God Forbid! Sizwe the player" I chuckled

Me: "The one and only"

Nomsa: "Who would have thought"

...

CHAPTER 24

NOSIBUSISO

I sneaked out of the house heading outside after Nipho's text. I miss him so much and I would do anything to spend some time with him. I walked over to his car which was parked two

houses away from home as usual.
Me: "Baby" I excitedly said after I saw him. He looked so down which worried me.

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I sighed as he pulled me closer to him and I rested my hands on his chest

Me: "You're not yourself today" I looked up meeting his eyes "What's wrong?"

Nhla: "I'm fine" I shook my head

Me: "Please tell me what's wrong Nhlakanipho, don't shut me out"

He sighed taking my hand into his and we climbed at the backseat.

He lay down and I laid on top of him with my head on his chest.

Nhla: "Tomorrow is.. Tomorrow is the.. It's Linda's death anniversary" I didn't know what to say. I didn't even know the lady

Nhla: "I was thinking of visiting her grave." He kissed my forehead" It's been long, I haven't been visiting her since well--" Since he met me, that's what he wanted to say because that's the truth.

Me: " Since you met me"

Nhla: "Yeah" It went Silence for a while" I really have to see her grave"

Me: "It's fine Nhlakanipho, she

was the love of your love or maybe she's still is" I have come to accept it though, that I'm sharing a man with a ghost. Scary; I know. I thought seeing a Therapist will help him but what was I thinking? Seeing the Therapist won't make him erase his feelings for his dead girlfriend. Nhla: "Please don't compare yourself with Linda, she's in the past and you're my future". I sighed, closing my eyes. Me: "Can I please enjoy this moment, I will have to go back inside soon" I immediately changed the subject

Nhla: "Yeah, I just miss you either way" I giggled as he keeps on brushing my hair and pulling it. Me: "The year will soon end, I'll be doing Grade 9". That was somehow embarrassing. I started School in the middle of the Year thankfully though I'm scared about Grade 10 since I will be going to Highschool meaning I'm going straight to school; I won't be homeschooled.

Nhla: "I believe you'll make it baby, I got your back" I smiled happily. Nhlakanipho is the kind of man you would want to build your home with. I hope and pray to

never lose him to some 'successful' ladies Because I for one; I don't really feel like I deserve him. A whole Business Tycoon with a 16 year-old girl who's doing Grade 8? I hope he never gets tired of me.

Nhla: "Sweetheart"

Me: "Mmmmh" I breath out waiting for him.

Nhla: "Please don't get tired of Loving me" I should be the one saying that or maybe he's reading my thoughts. I wouldn't dream of leaving him though.

Me: "Even if I want to, I wouldn't leave you baby. You can annoy the shit out of me I

wouldn't get annoyed of loving you"

Nhla: "I love you, It's so simple falling for you and I'd do that everyday"

Me: "Do what?"

Nhla: "I'd fall inlove with you every single day, you complete me"
I smiled resting on his broad chest.

Nhla: "Don't you want to go with me to KZN?" I shook my head immediately after hearing him uttering those words

Me: "I don't want what happened last time to repeat itself"

Nhla: "We won't stay, We will fly

then" I shook my head. I don't want that. I can't

Me: "Forget it, My Father will literally kill me this time around"

Nhla: "I understand Baby, I will go alone" I nod with happiness.

He's literally my happiness though I wish I could wipe his pain and fix him.

...

The sun reflected through the window which had open curtains. I groaned facing the other side but I was disturbed by the shouting Mapula.

Mapula: "Wake up, it's 12pm" I jumped from the bed looking at

the clock; 7am.

Me: "You're so stupid"

Mapula: "Like you. Come let's get ready for school" I sighed walking to the bathroom. After doing my hygiene process I walked back to my bedroom and wore my clothes. Time ticked and we were laying next to the pool after attending our lessons.

Mapula: "I think Sizwe is cheating on me" Mapula broke the silence. I looked at her so surprised.

Me: "What do you mean? I thought he has changed" I said.

Mapula: (shrugged her shoulders)

"Yesterday a phone call came through but when I answered asking who is it, the caller immediately dropped the call"

Me: "Maybe you're imagining things, Sizwe loves you" I said not so sure. I haven't seen Sizwe since... I don't know

Mapula: "He's acting strange, he's just strange friend and there's no doubt that he's cheating" I snorts getting up.

Me: "You Should talk to him and ask him what's going on because you might lose your relationship because of imagination or thoughts." I said to her.

"Suspicious won't help in any way"
I truly say. I've been watching
lot of Series lately and they most
woman do what Mapula is doing
right now.

Mapula: "Thank you, I'll try and
talk to him" I smiled

Me: "You're welcome, Nhlakanipho
wanted me to accompany him to
KZN"

Mapula: "Again!? I hope you said
No" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "Yes I said no, I don't want
to be in trouble again"

Mapula: "Great. Is he fine
though?"

Me: "Yes he's still fine, I mean..."

He's recovering" Mapula nods
Mapula: "That's great "I nod
with a smile. I wish everything
was much easier.

SIZWE

Me: "Please Portia" I plead with
her. This may be evil but I know
that it will break Mapula.

Portia: "No I can't Sizwe" She
says and a tear escaped from her
eye "I can't kill her"

Me: "This will break so many
souls" I honestly say to her.

Portia: "Do you think I don't know
that? My father is going to kill
me Sizwe but I won't kill her!

"It's my baby" I huffed running my hands on my face.

Me: "Abortion is the only option you know that"

Portia: "No it's not! I'm not killing my baby and that's it! Please leave"

Me: "Portia--"

Portia: "Leave Sizwe! Leave!" I sighed looking at her before I made my way out of her apartment

NHLAKANI PHO

I was busy with work. Having to deal with such a company can be hard at times but I have to keep

my Father's Legacy moving. I placed the files on top of the table loosening my tie as a knock came through.

Me: "Come in" Zama walked inside the office. I wasn't expecting her and I don't know why they let her in.

Me: "Zama..."

Zama: "Hey Nhlakanipho, I hope I didn't come at the wrong time" I huffed, settling on the seat narrowing my eyes at her

Me: "What do you want?" I asked her

Zamo: "I...I.. I'm looking for a job and since you know people in the

business industry I thought I should ask you"

Me: "For a job in a business industry? Do you have Matric?" I asked her

Zama: "How can you ask me that Nhlakanipho" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "Leave your C.V then, I'll see though I'm not promising anything"

Zamo: "I can work here" I shook my head

Me: "No I don't want you working in my company Zama, now leave I have something more important to attend"

She sighed standing up. She was about to leave when she stopped in her tracks Looking back at me
Zama: "Why do you hate me so much Nhlakanipho?"

Me: "I don't hate you Nomzamo, I hate your personality" I honestly say. I hate how Zama carries herself, she's a total slut and I'm not up for it. I wouldn't fall for her even if I try to.

Zama: "I want to be with you, I can change and try to be a better woman Nhlakanipho just for you"
I scoffs standing up

Me: "Just leave Zama, I hate desperate woman and it looks like

you're one of those" I set my eyes sharply to her

Zama: "I.. I'll be on my way" She was about to leave

Me: "wait--"She stopped"--Are you moving back to Johannesburg?"

She nods

Zama: "Yes,there are no job opportunities back in the village so yeah" I nod.

Me: "Ohk,you may leave" She closed the door behind her and I sighed. I should be on my way to KZN so that I'll be able to arrive in the early hours of the morning. I took my things and made my way out coming across with my

P.A

Me: "Cancel all my meetings" She nods and I made my way out heading to my car m I climbed in. In few hours I was at home.

Mom: "My son, How are you?" I smiled Hugging her

Me: "Hey Mom" We pulled out "You good?" She nods

Mom: "Yes I'm good, you look...I don't know" she shrugged her shoulders... "tense"

Me: "Tommorrow it's Linda's death anniversary" I sighed walking to the kitchen. I opened the fridge talking out cold water after placing my briefcase on top of the

kitchen counter.

Mom: "You'll be going to KZN?" I nod taking a glass from the cabinet and I poured cold water gulping it down

Mom: "You'll have to forget about Linda one way or another" She muttered and I looked at her

Me: "Mom--" she interrupted me

Mom: "No woman would allow her man to do what you're doing,

Nosibusiso is young and i

understand that she's not... She won't understand as yet but time

will come where you have to

choose ukuthi umephi" (you're standing) I sighed

Me: "It's hard letting go of Linda"

Mom: "No it's not" She Looked at me "It's just that you haven't tried to let her go"

Me: "Mom--"

Mom: "Try Nhlakanipho, for Nosibusiso think of her" I nod. She's right though. But it's hard.

.....

CHAPTER 25

NOSIBUSISO

It's been a very long day. I haven't heard from Nhlakanipho since last night so I assume he's in KZN. I really won't say that

doesn't saddens me, I hate how this 'Linda' is so important that everything. I love Nhlakanipho so much but some things are hard to do when you eat Linda for breakfast, lunch and supper. She has too much hold in Nhlakanipho's heart that I always ask myself if he loves me or I'm just a rebound? I understand that I'm young and I wouldn't reach Linda's level but I don't expect him to expect 'Linda's behaviour from me' I sighed throwing my books on the table and immediately, my phone rang. I took it from the table answering

the call.

Me: "Hey"

"Hello Nosibusiso, it's Nomsa" My heart was disappointed. I don't know why I accept the call without looking at the caller ID.

Some things can disappoint you

Me: cleared my throat "Hey Nomsa how are you?"

Nomsa: "I'm good, I was telling you that I'm ready" I froze a little before clearing my throat once more

Me: "You're ready f-for meeting your father" She chuckles

Nomsa: "Our father, yes I'm ready" I was excited already.

Finally I will have a big sister who'll be there for me. Yes I appreciate Mapula but she's young and naïve either so I don't expect many advices from her.

Me: "That's awesome, I'll talk to Dad about having a guest then we'll announce your.. your identity" I say with a smile

Nomsa: "I'm nervous"

Me: "I'll be there for you so don't me" I say honestly, I'm here and I won't be going anywhere.

Nomsa: "Thank you Nosi, I'll call you then" I sighed

Me: "It's Ohk then" I disconnected the call finding on my call list until

I stopped on Nipho's name. I pressed 'Call' and it rang and went straight to voicemail.

Me: "Nipho it's me, I..I think we need to talk. I have been avoiding this but I think it's time to talk about it" I disconnected it tossing it on the bed. I made my way downstairs finding Bontle.

Me: "Good Afternoon

MaBontle" She Looked at me

Bontle: "Afternoon"

Me: "We're having a special guest tonight so I'll be preparing

Dinner" She stopped what she was doing at looked at me

Bontle: "Is it your boyfriend?" I

almost slipped

Me: "No it's a female, I don't understand why you always think about mens" I huffed and chuckled throwing my eyes at the door.

Then I moved them to my so called Step-mom

Bontle: shrugged her shoulders "You just have too many surprises"

Me: "No, you're expecting me to do something wrong then you will kick me out of my father's house?" I know she's expecting me to do something wrong.

Bontle: "That won't be such a bad idea though, I want to enjoy my

Pregnancy in a healthy environment and you're so bad!" O flinched as she pinched my arm

Me: "I thought you're a good woman MaBontle" I shrugged my shoulders "But you were too good to be true" I say to her

Bontle: "U wasn't trying to be good anyway" I looked at her

Me: "You're not a Mother material" I scanned her "I don't know where my father picked you from because wow, such rubbish!" I clicked my tongue making my way to the kitchen. I didn't want to be disrespectful towards her but she can be too

much. Sometimes I just don't understand her. Hence I don't, at all.

SIZWE

Me: "What do you mean Baby?"

Mapula: "You're Cold, you're not the Sizwe I have fallen in love with" I huffed spitting some spits

Me: "I'm sorting something out and it's.. it's draining me baby" I tell her. I'm not ready to tell her on what is going on

Mapula: "If you don't want me anymore you should tell me Sizwe, I'm tired of you" I took few steps to her

Me: "You don't mean that"

Mapula: "I mean every single word of it, I.. I think you're better off without me" I held her looking at her straight in her eyes

Me: "Baby i--" She removed my hands on her

Mapula: "I thought this would be easy but I... I can't anymore" I expected something from her but not this.

Me: "I love you and we can talk this through" I huffed running my hands on my face

Mapula: "No, I.. I'll see you" She immediately stepped out of my car and I sighed Looking at her

as she walked away. I drove straight home and walked inside. My heart was heavy, too heavy.

Mom: "Sizwe is that you?"

Me: "Yebo Ma" (Yes Mother) I say placing my hand over my chest which was starting to be more heavier. I walked inside heading to the living room where Mom was having her Tea

Mom: "Y... What's wrong son?" I shook my head

Me: "I'm Just now feeling well, I will go and rest" I say looking at her

Mom: "Oh, Please do. I'll prepare a soup for you" I nod with a faint

smile

Me: "Thank you Mom" I walked up to my bedroom. I tried calling Mapula but she wasn't picking up. I decided to check up on Portia. Portia was one of my one night stand but unfortunately she fell pregnant. I didn't know anything about the pregnancy until recently.

Portia: "Hello Sizwe"

Me: "How are you?"

Portia: "I'm taking it a day by day, My Mom is making things more difficult" She's such a sweet child, I don't know how I crossed paths with her and I really don't

know what she was doing in a pub.

Me: "I would like to see you" I sighed "So we could talk about.. about the Pregnancy"

Portia: "Are you sure? Look Sizwe if you don't want anything to do with the baby it's fine. I will raise him myself only if you won't come later on claiming for him" I smiled unexpectedly

Me: "It's a him?"

Portia: "I went to see a gynaecologist this morning and yes, it's a boy" My smile widen

Me: "Wow, can I see you?" It went Silence for a while "Please..."

Portia: "Ohk then"

Me: "I'll send you the details" I say
disconnecting the call afterwards

NHLAKANI PHO

A tear escaped from my eye as I looked at the tombstone. It was so beautiful and unique, remembering of the moments we used to spend together.

Me: "Linda" I sat next to her grave "It's your death anniversary, it's hard" I say with a sigh

Me: "I remember the first day I laid my eyes on you, you were beautiful" I honestly say and

chuckled "It was the most beautiful moment, I loved it" I say and quickly frowned

Me: "I love you so much Linda but... I.

I can't anymore, I can't hurt someone I'm in love with" I wiped off a tear which escaped from my eye

Me: "Release me, Let me go so that I would love someone fully" I looked at the tombstone "Let me go" a thunderstorm stricked and immediately, a rain started pouring. I smiled looking up then I looked at the tombstone

Me: "Thank you, Thank you" it

started pouring too hard and I stood up heading to the car.

NOSIBUSISO

It's been hours and I was expecting Nomsa anytime from now. I settled the table and they walked in.

Mlu: "Mmmh, it looks beautiful" I giggled

Me: "It's a special occasion" A knock immediately came through

Me: "That would be our guest" I walked over to the door. She was so beautiful in a simple dress

Me: "Hey, welcome you didn't get lost right?" I chuckled and she did

too

Nomsa: "The GPS was a great help indeed, beautiful house" I smiled.

Me: "Yeah it is, come" We walked over to the living room.

Me: "I have our guest here, Nomsa this is Mlungisi my dad, Bontle the Step-mommy and you know Mapula" She faintly smiled with her eyes on Mlungisi

Nomsa: "It's nice meeting you'll"

Mlungisi: "Same here" shrugged his shoulders "I guess, you're beautiful Nomsa"

Nomsa: "Thank you"

Me: "Can we eat" We settled around

the table and started eating while sharing jokes.

Mlu: "So Nomsa, where are you originally from?" Nomsa looked at me instead.

Me: "Dad...W..Nomsa is my Aunt's daughter and apparently they said we share a father" It went Silence "She's your daughter"

.....

CHAPTER 26

NOSIBUSISO

The Atmosphere was too thick you could cut it with a knife. I looked at Dad and my eyes travelled to MaBontle who was on

the edge of falling.

Mlu: "No" He finally said, No? He stood up looking at Nomsa who had her head bowed down her head.

Me: "No!?" I asked clearly as if I didn't hear him? He said No

Mlu: "She's not my daughter, it can't be" Nomsa immediately snapped up throwing her eyes on my Dad. Tears suddenly dropped

Nomsa: "H..D.. I'm your daughter" Dad shook his head pacing down the living room. I stood up too

Me: "She's your daughter" I say

Mlu: "She's not my daughter, who's

her mother?" He was fumbling. I looked at Nomisa who was softly crying. I understand her pain.

Me: "Martha, My mother's sister" I Honestly say to him and again, he shook his head.

Mlu: "I have never slept with her, She's not my daughter" A painful sob escaped from Nomisa's mouth and I ran up to her pulling her in my arms.

Me: "Daddy she's your daughter, I don't know what happened but Martha said she's your daughter. Mom confirmed it too" She did.

She's really his daughter but you can't blame someone who don't

remember having sex with that Baby Mama. I felt sorry for both of them.

Bontle: "They want to trick you, it isn't enough that you're taking care of this little Streetkid who's not your daughter!" I wish I could back slap her. She's too much

Me: "Shut up" I softly say and my mind quickly drift off to Nhlakanipho for a while. I wish he was there to support me, but it's too late.

Mlu: "I'm going out for a drink, get her out of my house" He disappeared to one of the rooms upstairs.

Bontle: "I knew you're such a bitch! Now you want to trap your father with a child who's not his?" She looked at me with eyes full of evilness "Nonsense" She walked away.

Nomsa: "I have to go"

Me: "He's not thinking straight Nomsa, please hear me out" She shook her head

Nomsa: "What was I thinking?" She chuckles through her tears "I don't have proof" She suddenly took her handbag

Me: "Then we'll do a DNA" She stopped at looked at me

Nomsa: "I'm not coming back in

this house, I no longer want anything with him" She walked out of the house leaving me defeated.
Mapula: "They will both calm down, at least you've tried" I nod

SIZWE

I walked inside her flat and she was settled on the couch watching television as she was stuffing herself with junk food. I smiled walking in further

Me: "Hey" I say settling next to her. She looked at me

Portia: "Hey, how are you?" I sighed

Me: "Good, you?" She looked at her

Junk then back at me

Portia: "My baby is not doing any Justice, I'm always hungry" I chuckled placing my hand on her belly which was almost flat.

Me: "A true Njomane" I smiled Looking at her eyes

Me: "I want to be there" I honestly say, I don't want my baby to grow up without me. I wasn't thinking straight but I'm not ready to be there

Portia: "Are you sure Sizwe? I don't want you thinking I'm trapping you with a child" I sighed

Me: "I'm sure, 100% sure that I want to be there"

Portia: "Thank you, what about your girlfriend though?"

Me: "We broke up" It went Silence

Portia: "It's not me right? Sizwe I don't want to cause problems for you" I held her hands

Me: "Don't worry yourself Portia, I will sort my shit out and you really don't have to stress yourself about anything" I say to her.

Portia: "Thank you" I smiled faintly

Me: "It's Ohk, you're my unborn mother's baby and I will be there" She nods as she rested her head on my shoulder. We spent some few minutes then I went back home.

NOSIBUSISO

I flipped my eyes open and groaned. I was too lazy to wake up but I had to. I got off the bed heading to the bathroom. I Did my hygiene process walking back to the bedroom and dressed up, I wanted to see Dad other than anything so I walked down though he wasn't there.

Me: "Morning" They replied. I sighed settling around the table.

Me: "Where's Dad?" I say looking at MaBontle

Bontle: "Out, I'm sure he doesn't want to see your face right

now" I huffed closing my mouth. I didn't have anything to say to her because I'll end up being the bad guy.

Mlu: "Good Morning" I quickly turned and my eyes landed on Dad. He walked in further and I sighed looking at him

Me: "Dad" I softly say

Mlu: "Nosibusiso, How are you?"

Me: "I'm fine" I narrowed my eyes at him "Are you fine Dad?" He nods

Mlu: "I'm fine, Just had a long night"

Me: "Mmmh, about the Nomsa issue Dad... I hope I didn't cause any problem, Nomsa wanted to

know about her father" I honestly say and he looks at me

Mlu: "I understand you, I..I.. That was unexpected" He breaths that out and I sighed

Me: "She needs you, she needs her family Dad"

Mlu: "This is just unexpected Nosi, I don't know what to do with this"

Me: "What about a DNA? It would help" He shook his head

Mlu: "I don't know"

Me: "Think about it Dad" He nods and I tossed my phone and looked at it. There were tons of missed calls from Nhlakanipho; I'll just

call him later.

....

CHAPTER 27

NOSIBUSISO

I just got off the phone with Nomsa and luckily she agreed for the DNA test. I'm nervous honestly, what if all of this was just lies and we literally fell for them? I sighed walking downstairs finding my Dad busy with his laptop. I sat opposite him as I narrowed my eyes straight to him which caused him to look up to me.

Mlu: "Nosibusiso, hello" I smiled

Me: "Morning Dad, how are you?" I

sighed after my faintly smile.

Mlu: "What is it?"

Me: "Have you thought about the DNA tests? Nomisa has agreed to it" He looked at me for a while then dropped his eyes

Mlu: "Fine" One word and I sighed once more, he's not making things any easier.

Me: "Dad can you please work with me here, I know I've dropped a huge bomb but please.. please don't talk ill about Nomisa" He looked at me without saying anything "Please Dad" He nods and I stood up walking back to my bedroom. I dialed Nhlakanipho's

numbers which he answered in a second ring.

Nhla: "Sweetheart.." A tear suddenly dropped from my eye. I miss hearing his voice, I miss being around him... His touch, kiss and everything about him

Nhla: "Sweetheart" His voice because softer than usual, I miss him. God what did you have to bring him to me!?

Me: "N.. Nhlakanipho..." I finally say after a total silence "I miss you" I planned to tell him off, and dump him but after hearing his voice...m my heart won't allow me to do such.

Nhla: "I miss you too, damn I miss you so much" I sighed enjoying his talk.

Me: "When are you coming back?" He loudly inhale

Nhla: "I'm back, I want to see you" My heart beat fast, I can't describe how I feel about this guy.

Me: "Send Me the details, I'll be there" I immediately dropped the call. I smiled but it wasn't a wide one this time around.

The door was suddenly opened and I turned to face that person. I was surprised when my eyes landed on Bontle.

Me: "What are you doing in my room?" I threw the question at her smirking face

Bontle: "Well, I've just found out that you my dear. You're still dating that Nhlakanipho Mhlongo, isn't that great? Mlungisi will blast when he finds out"

Me: "You wouldn't dare"

Bontle: "Try me Nana, just try me" She then turned her heel over walking out of the room.

I walked out of the house, took a ride to the Mall. I wanted to do some shopping, nothing much. I did that and walked over to some

restaurant which was selling fast food, I settled while finding on my phone.

"Hey" I looked up to be met by a certain girl, I have no idea who it is but I continued to play along maybe she'll tell me about herself.

Me: "Hy" I say looking down at my phone.

"I'm Lethabo, you can call me Lee" I nod, I thought Lethabo's should be boy clearly I thought wrong.

Lethabo: "I like you" I raised my left eyebrow, I don't know what to say. It's weird.

Lethabo: "Not in that way, Relax

I'm straight and looking for a friend"

Me:"Oh"

Lethabo:"Sorry About everything, sometimes my personal can get out of order so yeah"I nod without saying anything. I don't know what to say again and I don't think I'm interested in whatever she has to offer;I have a friend.

Lethabo:"Can I be your friend? Maybe we can get to know each other first"I sighed with a slight nod

Lethabo:"Cool,Gime me your number so I'll call right away so

you could have mine" I nod taking her phone and punch my phone numbers. After a while of handing it back, my phone rang. God! Lethabo: "Great, I will call" She stood up waving her hand and dissapered with everyone around.

PORTIA

I sighed throwing myself on top of the bed with a smile plastered on my face. I was happy, finally I'll have someone by my side. Weeks back, I was devastated when Sizwe wanted nothing to do with the Pregnancy. When he asked me to abort it, it was hard

for me since I don't believe in such. My family is supportive but we're not rich so I couldn't afford taking care of the baby myself. I took my ringing phone besides me and answered

Me: "Mom..."

Mom: "Portia, how are you?" I sighed

Me: "I'm good Mama, everything is going fine" I tell her.

Mom: "That's great, I don't understand why you have to stay eGoli though. You need someone to take care of you"

Me: "I'll be fine here, Sizwe will take care of me Mama. He finally

came to his senses"

Mom: deeply sighed "My daughter I don't want you to be a victim of that stage. That boy has proven to you that he's not a man enough so I doubt he'll be there until the end" I huffed

Me: "Stop being positive

Mom, Sizwe will get to love me as time goes. We will be happy" I tell her. I cannot be negative right now, I have fallen so deeply in love with Sizwe From the time I slept with him. I was an innocent First year student in UJ and crossing paths with Sizwe was one of my greatest highlight in

my life since I knew that one day;
we'll be a happy family.

Mom: "Take care, I'll call you" She suddenly disconnected the call. My mind wasn't at peace right now, I need their support not negativity.

NOMSA

I was so nervous after taking those DNA tests. We were on our way to the house and I didn't feel like spending anymore time with them. I glared at my so called Dad as he was driving, he's handsome. No wonder why they're fighting over him, my phone rang and I took it out. I faintly smiled

When I saw Mvelo's name. He's been supporting lately and I appreciate him.

Me: "Hello" I softly say

Mvelo: "My wife, how's everything going?" I sighed looking out of the window

Me: "Fine" I shrugged my shoulders, like he could see "We were doing DNA tests and I want everything to end" I wanted everything to end, get over and done with everything.

Mvelo: "Hang in there, I wish I was here to support you"

Me: "This means everything, You have work to do and I

understand"

Mvelo: "You're more important" I smiled widely, he's doing the most.

Me: "We'll talk later then, where's my mother-in-law?"

Mvelo: "Somewhere around the house, she'll be going back home though"

Me: "Ohk, we'll talk"

Mvelo: "Cool, I love you" I disconnected the call without saying anything. I looked up to be met by Mlungisi's eyes

Mlu: "Mother-in-law?" I didn't say anything "Are you married? You look young for marriage" I looked out

of the window without saying anything. Why does he care?

.....

CHAPTER 28

NOSIBUSISO.

The rain started pouring few hours ago. It was so beautiful as I glared out of the window. I have sent a text to Nhlakanipho telling him that I won't be able to see him, as much as I wanted to end things with him. My heart won't allow me to. I walked over to the bathroom and did my hygiene process before I walked downstairs, staying with this

people around here can depress you. More especially since MaBontle is breathing Down my throat.

Me: "Morning" The Mood was too low and I think no one wanted to say anything. I didn't care though because I'll be staying in bed the whole day.

Mapula: "Dad can I go out" I don't know what she's trying to play at. The rain is raining cats and Dogs so I don't think she'll be able to walk out

Mlu: "It's raining Mapula, no one is going out" He huffed and I feel like a 5 year old right now being

scolded. I dropped my eyes after throwing a glance at her
Mapula: "But D--" Dad interrupted her before she could finish
Mlu: "No one is going out Mapula, Can't you see the rain is pouring so don't shit on me!" That was a harsh statement than a question. I think he has his demons and he's taking them out on us. We didn't send every woman to him so I don't know why he's like this as if it's our fault.

Me: "Dad Calm down" I say through my teeth, he's angry but eventually he'll calm down. I have better things to worry about

rather than his selfishness. It's not enough that he's giving Nomsa a cold shoulder, he's scolding us either.

Mlu: "I'll be upstairs" He stood up and disappeared upstairs. I sighed looking down at my food. I was not about to entertain MaBontle at the moment, I'm sure she enjoyed the tension.

Bontle: "Mmmh, that was..." She smirked as my eyes landed on her. She's the Devil's daughter.

Me: "Don't say it" I softly say standing up and walked upstairs. I'm tired of this and I really can't wait to go to College, well

that's 4 years from now!

.
It's been A week and everything is going well,I didn't see Nhlakanipho but I hope I'll be able to see him after meeting up with Nomsa. They'll be fetching their Results and I'm scared,I was the one who dropped the bomb so I really don't want to give MaBontle so much credit if the Results come back saying Dad is not the father. I took my phone heading out or the house to the nearest Café,she was settled at the far corner.

Me:"Hey" She stood up and pulled

me in for a hug. It feels so good, we pulled out and we settled down.

Me: "How are you?" She Shrugged her shoulders darting her eyes on me

Nomsa: "Nervous" She sighed and dropped her head "What if he's not my father?" I shook my head placing my hand on hers

Me: "Don't think about it too much, if he's not your father that would be your fault instead your Mother is to blame" I tell her. My Aunt is evil Both with my grandmother, all they want and care about is Money more than

anything.

Nomsa: "My life is a mess Nosi, I wish I had a better life" We all wish that. I wish my life was better than anything but it sucks! It's a total mess!

Me: "We all want a better life Nono, My life Isn't as Perfect as it seems" I breath that out as a waitress walked up to us

Waitress: "Good Morning, I'm Sasha and I'll be your waitress. How can I help you?"

Me: "Can I have your Famous Chocolate cake and a Coffee with Honey" She smiled turning to Nomsa

Nomsa: "I'll have Chocolate cake with a black Coffee please" She joted everything down

Waitress: "Coming right up" She disappeared inside and I turned to Nomsa

Me: "Father has been lashing out on us, I think he's mad or something" I tell her

Nomsa: "I don't know how to feel about him Nosi, he totally denied me" I sighed

Me: "We caught him off guard so let's understand where he's coming from" we definitely caught him off guard so he didn't expect that.

Nomsa: "Yeah, I guess" I looked at him and smiled

Me: "How's your marriage?"

Nomsa: "Mvelo has been trying too hard that I decided to let him be, he's supportive but I still want out of that marriage" I frowned

Me: "I thought things are working out"

Nomsa: "He has a baby and his baby mama is a crazy MoPedi" I chuckled as that waitress came and placed our order on the table

Me: "Thank you" She smiled and walked out, I looked back at Nomsa

Me: "You need to give this Mvelo

guy a chance Nomsa, I think you like him" She Looked down "You like him? You didn't tell me that" I narrowed my eyes with a smirk across my face. It looks like she's denying that she loves him though we all see it on her face.

Nomsa: "No, Mvelo is in love with someone and I won't be trying anything with him"

Me: "He loves you, Look at the things he's doing for you... "

Nomsa: "He only cares! He's not in love with me he only cares" I shook my head

Me: "Yeah Right!"

SIZWE

Things were going well but Mapula was not having any of it by getting back with me. I honestly don't know what's wrong with her because she's making it harder for me to tell her the truth about Portia. I've been trying to call her but she's not answering my phone.

Mom: "Sizwe what's wrong?" I looked and my mom was starring at me

Me: "What Mom" I shrugged my shoulders

Mom: "You've been... I don't

know" She sighed "weird and that's not you"

Me: "You're seeing things, I'm fine Mom" I tell her and she shook her head

Mom: "I want you to know that I'll be here whenever you want to talk or if you have something to tell me Ohk?" I nods and she hands me a cup of coffee before she disappeared upstairs. I took out my phone and dialed Mapula's number

"The number you have dialed is not available at presence please try again later, the number you have dial is n--"

Me: "Fuck!!!" I hanged up throwing it on the floor.

Nhla: "Woah what's wrong?" I looked up to him as he made his way downstairs. I sighed running my hands on my face

Me: "It's Mapula, I've been trying to reach her but she's not answering my calls"

Nhla: "Do you blame her?" I shook my head looking down

Me: "It's hard telling her about Portia, She's definitely shut me out of her life"

Nhla: "Tell her before you lose her, Honestly is important and also does Communication" I nods. I'll be

going to see her, I don't know how but I'll make a plan.

NOMSA

I was nervous for real. I looked at Mlu as he looked so calm like he wasn't breathing fire few days ago. I sighed as the Doctor approached us.

Doctor: "We can go to my office" I walked over following the Doctor with Mlungisi behind us.

Mlu: "Tell us Doctor what does the Results say?" I didn't say anything.

Doctor: "The Results came as 99.9%, you're the father" Tears

suddenly dropped from my eyes.

Mlungisi looked at me with
saddening eyes

Mlu: "I... I'm sorry" I sniffed them
away and I quickly got out of the
Office. My Mom is so Evil!

.....

CHAPTER 29

NOSIBUSISO.

I looked at Dad who wore a sad
face. It's the first time seeing
him so vulnerable and sad. I took
few steps to him and embrace
him without saying anything. We
really don't have that tight bond
but right now I could feel his

head beating so unusual which makes me want to cry.

Me: "Dad what's wrong?"

Mlu: "How could she be so evil? Why?" I didn't have answers and I really didn't know who he's talking about. I frowned with sadness as he pulls me tight

Me: "Dad you're hurting me" A tear unexpectedly dropped. He's really hurting me, seeing him like that seems so painful.

Mlu: "She drugged me Nono" I smelt at that name

Me: "Nomsa told you?" He nods and pulled out of the hug running his hands on his face.

Mlu: "She told me half of everything, i have to go to the village to seek answers" I huffed at that thought. What did I expect though? Nomsa being my sister means welcoming the whole family in my life. I'm not even ready for it

Me: "I understand Dad, I'm sorry for everything that's happening a---" He interrupted me

Mlu: "There's nothing to be sorry about Nono, you've helped me. All along I've been wanting to have kids and I..." He Chuckles looking at me "Now I have three Daughters" I smiled as a hint of

excitement flashes on his deep voice.

Me: "You're now Old" He laughs

Mlu: "I'm Still your father Young lady" I chuckled and looked at him

Me: "I love you Dad"

Mlu: "I love you too my Princess"

Me: Frowned "Dad!!! I'm 16 years turning 17 in few months" I tell him and he snorts

Mlu: "I know, you'll be my little Princess even if you're 40 years" I laughed

Me: "Where's Nomsa?"

Mlu: "She needed some air so I gave it to her, she's... I feel bad about what happened a week

ago"

Me: "Don't be Dad, we all understand that you really didn't expect this" He nods and sighed

Mlu: "Yep! I need to fix my relationship with Everyone of you. Sometimes I feel like I've failed you now I've failed Nomsa"

Me: "Don't beat yourself Dad, She'll come around and you're the best Dad" I breath that out before I walked upstairs leaving him there

PORTIA

I looked at the scan as Sizwe smiled so proudly. He's so happy! I

can't Believe I'll be giving him an heir.

Sizwe: "I can't believe I'm going to be a Dad" He grinned still looking at the scan

Me: "I'm happy, I know it came unexpectedly but I.. I'm happy Sizwe"

Sizwe: "I'm happy too"

Me: "Ekithi balinde

inhlawulo" [They're expecting

Damages at home] it went quite as he pressed the accelerator after tossing the scan next to him. I sighed

Me: "You can't keep ignoring that Sizwe, have you told your family?"

Sizwe: "Now it's not the time, I should tell Mapula first" I frowned

Me: "Why does this Mapula have so much hold on you? I won't let you discuss my baby with your girlfriends Sizwe" He sighed

Sizwe: "I won't be discussing with my girlfriends. It's only Mapula, she's special to me and I would love for her to help us with this" I folded my arms looking out of the window

NHLAKANI PHO

I sighed coming to a stop. I don't know why but my heart is just

heavy and with Nosi avoiding to see me, I'm losing hope though I know that I won't be letting go of her.

-I'm outside, Come out. I sighed and waited for few minutes until she climbed inside

Nosi: "Hy" I looked at her, she looks so beautiful and sexy. I miss her even more than I did. I can't Believe it's been almost over a week without seeing her and now there she is in her sleep Wear Me: "Sawbona Nosibusiso" She shifted uncomfortable. Clearly because of me calling her by her name

Nosi: "How are you Nhlakanipho" I softly chuckled

Me: "I'm good, Just Missing you" Her eyes eyes travelled up to meet mine

Nosi: "I---" I placed my lips on hers and she was taken by surprise judging by her sudden reaction but she responded eventually and I pulled her to my lap. I realized how much I've missed her through that as she pulls out gasping to catch her breath.

Tears streamed down her cheeks and my heart broke and I pulled her to me

Me: "Sweetheart.."

Nosi: "I thought I will lose you Nipho, the hold that Linda has on you is so strong and I can't really handle it"

Me: "I'm... I'm sorry sweetheart, I didn't realize how much that hurts you"

Nosi: "Everytime when I hear you declaring your love for her I just... I... My heart beats so painful and i know how much you loved her but Nhlakanipho.. I can't be her, I won't be her" I didn't know it was this deep. I held her tight letting her to cry.

BONTLE

I hum a song as I applied a Lotion on my body. I softly do that as Mlungisi made his way in. Mlu: "My wife" If it was those times were we were still at the Village. My heart would have skipped a beat, now it feels like an old song hearing him calling me that

Me: "Mlungisi, How are you?" I smiled softly walking over to his butt naked

Mlu: "You look beautiful, You're always beautiful" I smiled politely and kissed his cheek.

Me: "Thank you" I walked to the Closet

Mlu: "Are you fine?"

Me: "Where's Nosibusiso?"

Mlu: "In her room" I sighed deeply because I know she's out. I saw her sneaking out of the house and when I peek out of the window, she was heading outside of the yard.

Me: "Mmmh" She doesn't want to leave Nhlakanipho. I sighed when I think of it, I was so head over heels with my husband. One of the days he introduced me to his friends, Nhlakanipho immediately caught my eye. His tall figure, broad shoulders, hard arms and his dark chocolate skin so soft

and flawless. He had those brushy eyebrows and his walk screamed 'Money!'. He walked like he was some kind of a Greek God. He knew he was sexy and handsome, you could tell by his cocky self. His rudeness was a total Turn off and I knew right there that he had to be Mine. I was determined to file a divorce Just for him but when Linda came to the picture, I was so disgusted and I knew my chances were slim. I tried so hard for her to dump Nhlakanipho but she was so hard. I warned her and warned her until....

"BONTLE!" I got out of my world by that deep voice and I looked up to Mlungisi

Me: "I...I'm. "

Mlu: "You look so disturbed what's wrong?" I sighed

Me: "It's nothing, I..I just want to rest" I got under the covers.

Mlu: "Goodnight" He planted a kiss on my forehead and I closed my eyes

.....

CHAPTER 30

NOSIBUSISO

I walked downstairs after refreshing. I settled around

looking at everyone as they were focused on their plates.

Me: "Good Morning" They replied and I sighed dishing out.

Mlu: "There's something I want to say" I looked up to him. I know what he wanted to say, you wouldn't miss his proud look. He always wanted kids though I don't know why he left me. I don't even want to think about it

Mlu: "The Results are back we went to fetch them yesterday"

Bontle: "What!? Why didn't you tell me?" Mlu huffed looking at her

Mlu: "Can you let me finish? You were so tired yesterday so I

didn't want to disturb" he said that a little bit sarcastic and I chuckled. They all looked at me Me: "I'm sorry" I whispered looking down

Mlu: "As I was saying... We went to fetch the results and.." He sighed "Nomisa is my daughter, the results came back 9---" Bontle interrupted him because he could finish

Bontle: "There must be something they have done! She's not your daughter!" She says throwing his fire eyes at me. She's really breathing fire!

Mlu: "I don't have your time

Bontle! You're so bitter these days and I don't know what's happening with you"

Bontle:"They're lying! Can't you see that?"

Mlu:"I'm tired of you, Saturday we're heading to the village"

Bontle:"Who's we?"

Mlu:"My Uncles, this needs the Adults so I think we'll be fine.

Bontle stop this! It's annoying" He stood up walking out of our sight.

Me:"You should really stop" I scoffs walking over to the kitchen.

Mapula:"I'm going to see Sizwe today" I turned to her

Me: "Oh! You're fixing things?"

Mapula: "I'm just going to hear him out, I miss him" I softly smiled

Me: "I'll cover for you"

Mapula: "Relax I'll be back early" I nod

Me: "Ohk" I smiled

SIZWE

Nhla: "What are you saying!? You've impregnated someone?" I run my hands on my face so frustrated. I really don't know how I'll deal with this

Me: "I'm.. Yeah and I don't know how to tell Mom, they're

demanding for damages"

Nhla: "This is fucked up, you're fucked up" I know that.

Me: "What if they want more?"

Portia's parents are too cultural and I don't want Drama"

Nhla: "I'd advise you to tell Mom, Mapula and well Portia that you're not looking forward on marrying her" I sighed

Me: "That won't be easy"

Nhla: "It won't but do it" I nod looking at him

Me: "I'll do that, Thank you" He nods as he chuckled

Nhla: "You fucker is going to be a Dad"

Me: "Don't say it like its a bad thing" I say imagining it. Playing with my son!

Fuck! I can't believe it!

Me: "God"

Nhla: "I should impregnate Nosi"

Me: "She's still young Nhlakanipho eww! I'm sure she didn't even let you in as yet, the blue balls"

Nhla: "Fuck off! I'm giving her time" I rolled my eyes as Mapula used to do. I miss her

MAPULA

Me: "Hi" He smiled at me

Sizwe: "Hey" It was awkward. We have never been in an awkward

position like this

Me: "Yeah" I really didn't know what I was saying yeah to but I found myself saying that

Sizwe: "Look Mapula I know I've done wrong things and I really regret it" I frowned

Me: "What's wrong Sizwe?" He deeply sighed

Sizwe: "I impregnated someone, it was before I met you I swear I have never cheated on you" I chuckled softly. I couldn't believe it though he says it was before me

Me: "You're going to be a father?"

Sizwe: "Yes and trust me Baby I

wanted to tell you but I was
scared" I nod

Me: "Ohk, I.. I miss you" I wasn't
about to lose him to some bitch.
If I let him go I'll definitely lose
him and I can't afford being alone
for the rest of my life. Who would
want someone so damaged like
me?

Sizwe: "Wait.. we cool right" I nod
countless

Me: "I love you"

NOSIBUSISO

I settled around the table later
on. We were enjoying our meal.

Bontle kept on looking at me like

I'm some kind of rubbish bit she'll be fine!

Mlu: "We're no longer going to the village?" I looked at Dad as he said that

Me: "Why?"

Mlu: "There are things I need to fix first before going there" I nod

Me: "Ohk Dad" I dropped my eyes.

A text suddenly came through

-Goodnight sweetheart, I love you.

I smiled tossing it over the table and continued with my meal.

1/2 YEARS LATER....

CHAPTER 31

NOSIBUSISO

I sighed looking on the Mirror.
I've grown and I'm slowly
getting scared of it, I don't know
why though. Today the school are
opening for the second term and
I'm looking forward to it, I took
my backpack walking downstairs.
MaBontle is kind, at first I didn't
understand why she's now kind to
me but I brushed it off since I
want to have a civil relationship
with her.

I found her preparing breakfast
but she was getting done with it.
Me: "Good Morning" I flashed a
smile as she turned to me
returning it

Bontle: "Morning, you look good"

Me: "I feel Good" I settled around the table and they they all walked downstairs settling around the table. Mapula had the shortest skirt you could ever find, I don't know what's happening with her.

Me: "Your skirt is too Short Mapula" She rolled her eyes

Mapula: "Stop looking at it then, Let me be" I shook my head with so much disappointment. She has changed so much.

Mlu: "Are you girls ready for school?"

Me: "Yes Dad, I can't wait to see

Lethabo "I grinned as MaBontle
dish out for us

Mapula: "I don't like your friend" I
frowned and looked at her

Me: "Please Maps don't start with
me" She snorts looking at me

Mapula: "It's the truth, I don't
like her" I shut her out looking at
my plate

Me: "This looks good"

Mlu: "I hope it tastes good like it
looks" Bontle giggles

Bontle: "You can't doubt my cooking
skills right now, I can cook"

Me: "I know you can, I'm not
doubting" I say taking a fork as I
started eating. We settled in a

comfortable silence as we all ate.
I then stood up taking my
backpack

Me: "Mapula let's go" She rolled her
eyes standing up as she took her
backpack too following me behind

Mapula: "School is just boring" I
rolled my eyes climbing in the car.
She did too and the car started
moving.

Me: "Your friends ain't good for you
Mapula, they have turned you in
some..s..I don't know what to call
it" I shrugged my shoulders

Mapula: "I no longer go with you at
school Because of Lethabo, I told
you that it's either you delete her

as your friend or I'm not going with you" I sighed

Me: "Lethabo is a good friend and you're failing to see that, Mapula those girls Ain't good for you"

Mapula: "To me they are good, now shut up if you don't have something useful to say" I sighed
Looking out of the window.

SIZWE

Me: "Thank you so much" I say to Portia

Portia: "She's your daughter Sizwe so no problem, be safe" I grinned looking at Simphiwe who was stumbling her way to my car

Me: "We'll be safe, Let me go" I smiled once more walking over to my car. I picked Simphiwe up climbing inside.

Simphiwe: "Aya ya D...Dada" I smiled looking at her

Me: "Yes it's Daddy Princess, Your grandmother is waiting for you at home" I pressed the accelerator and the car moved. In few minutes we were outside my house.

Me: "We're Home!!!" I screamed closing the door behind

Mom: "You're so loud Sizwe" She looked my way "Oh here's my granddaughter" She smiled

walking over to me

Me: "I'm no longer your favourite

Mom" I whined and she chuckled

Mom: "Stop Being silly! You're my

little man" I laughed

Me: "Don't say that Mom, I have a

daughter so I'm not a little

man" She smack my head

Mom: "That doesn't mean

anything! You're my little man and

you'll always be my little man"

Me: "Let me quickly get out of

here" I say running upstairs. I

freshen up quickly looking at my

phone. I should call Mapula later

on, I haven't seen her in a week.

NOSIBUSISO

I took out my lunchbox taking out a sandwich and offered Lethabo some

Me: "I don't know what's happening with her" I say pointing at Mapula who was with her new friends. They are actually slutty and I'm worried about Mapula.

Lethabo: "You've Tried everything you could to make her realize that her friends are not good. It was actually up to her if she wants to take your advice or not" I sighed

Me: "I'm failing her" I sighed

chewing my sandwich.

Lethabo: "You're turning 18 soon and she's turning 17, you're almost the same age so I don't understand why you feel like it's your responsibility to mind her.

You've been telling her the same thing always but she never listens" She's right but still, I'm failing her.

Me: "How's your relationship with the Soccer Captain?" She grinned as her eyes shone with light.

Indicating that she's so in love!

Lethabo: "Great! I can't believe he's all mine" I laughed

Me: "He's all yours baby! Embrace

it, Papa is yours"

Lethabo: "Muxaah, I just admire your relationship with Nhlakanipho" I smiled

Me: "I miss him so bad"

Lethabo: "Look who's talking" She said that a little bit louder and I softly slapped her arm

Me: "Don't be loud!"

Lethabo: "Whatever! I just like your relationship and I'm totally happy for you"

Me: "Nchhoooh" I made my puppy face and she giggles but stopped midway and her giggles were replaced by a frown

Me: "What's wrong?" I say

following her eyes and they landed on Qhawe; I call him Hero.

Hero: "My beautiful African Queen" I giggled

Me: "Hey Hero, How's you?"

Hero: "Perfectly fine now that I've seen your gorgeous face"

Lethabo: "I'll be in Class" She was annoyed, judging by her facial expressions. She walked away and I turned to Hero

Me: "I should go"

Hero: "Wait, can I accompany you after school" Qhawe is handsome and so all but he doesn't

approached my baby! Hero is doing Grade 11

Me: "I.. I'm good, I'll be going with Lethabo"

Hero: "I'll go with Both of you then" He winked walking away before I could say anything. I sighed in frustration walking to my class!

NOMSA

I looked at my bedside and he wasn't there. I got up sitting on the bed as the door was pushed open. I snapped my head at it,

Mvelo walked in holding a tray

Mvelo: "Good Afternoon"

Me: "Why didn't you wake me up?"

Mvelo: "You were fast asleep so I

didn't want to wake you up"

Me: "I had to attend a Class

Mvelo: "I say a little bit annoyed.

We've been having sex but that's

all. Yes I'm still married to him

only because he doesn't want to

sign the divorce papers so we're

satisfying each other in the sex

department.

Mvelo: "Stop sulking, You're so cute

though" I giggled

Me: "What do you have there" He

places it next to me as I looked

at it, looks so delicious!" It looks

good" I say to him

Mvelo: "I'm the best baby" He

kissed me walking to the

bathroom. I sighed smiling at myself

.....

CHAPTER 32

NOSIBUSISO

I spotted Qhawe at the door of my Classroom. I hesitated at first to go to him but he's just a friend so there's nothing wrong on going with him. I looked at Lethabo who had a bored look across her face.

Me: "It won't be that bad you know" I softly say to her and she rolled her eyes

Lethabo: "This would cause trouble

for you Nosi, Nhlakanipho won't like this" She huffed taking her backpack

Me: "Come on Lethabo"

Lethabo: "I'll call you later, I won't be traveling with you" She immediately walked away and I sighed walking over to Qhawe.

Me: "Hey" He flashed his Amazing smile

Qhawe: "Hey How are you?"

Me: "Good, You?"

Qhawe: "Now that I've seen your beautiful face, I'm perfectly fine" He said with his proud grin and I giggled

Me: "Let's go" I say walking out

first as he followed

Qhawe: "What's up with your friend?" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "She doesn't like you, she favours my boyfriend so yeah" I smiled and he nods

Qhawe: "I understand, I won't cause any problems" I chuckled softly as we walked out of the school gate

Me: "I hope so"

Qhawe: "Who is Nosibusiso Dube?" I looked at him

Me: "That's a trick question, I don't know how to respond to that" I honestly say, I'm Nosibusiso Dube and turning 18

soon. That's it!

Qhawe: "I would like to know a little more about you, what you like and dislike" I nod with understanding

Me: "I'm Nosibusiso Dube, Located in Sandton. You know that I'm schooling at Bryanston High" I chuckled and he did too

Qhawe: "Obviously"

Me: "Well I love Food, Music, Watching Movies and Reading and I hate doing sports. I love traveling though I haven't had a chance to travel"

Qhawe: "Maybe we can arrange a Road trip to Mpumalanga or

Something" I shook my head
Me: "No I don't want any trouble"
I honestly say. This would be
inappropriate. Even if I can
travel with him as a friend,
Nhlakanipho wouldn't see it as
that.

Qhawe: "Come on it would be
fun! You must live a little"

Me: "Fine I'll talk to my Dad and
my boyfriend about it then I'll let
you know"

My phone beebed indicating a
message. I sighed taking it out
of my pocket

-Take a Taxi to my office, I'll be
waiting for you.

I looked at the time and it was 14:18. I looked at Qhawe and cleared my throat

Me: "Sadly there's somewhere I have to be" I tell him

Qhawe: "Cool, Give me your numbers"

Me: "Qhawe I---"

Qhawe: "Come on baby girl, I promise I won't trouble you" I sighed taking his cell phone as I punch my numbers

Me: "Here" I handed it to him

Qhawe: "Thank you" He winked as she walked away. I smiled walking to the Taxi Rank.

MAPULA

Precious: "Don't mind your so called sister, she's Jealous of you" I nod as we settled down around the table

Me: "I hear you, Now who's paying?" Mbali smile and looked at me

Mbali: "Who said anything about paying?"

Me: "What do you mean?"

Precious: "We need to catch a fish who'll pay for us, There are plenty of fishes right here" I looked around and my eyes landed on a man who was in a far corner of

the restaurant. I grinned looking back at them

Me: "This is fun! I hope Sizwe won't find out about any of this"

Precious: "Don't worry about him, focus on your fish baby girl" I smiled standing up as I walked over to that table

Me: "Gentlemen" My eyes were on that guy who looked rather eatable. I've been having sex with Sizwe these past few months so I know how to play some cards right

One of them: "Hey baby girl" He was about to touch me but I moved a bit looking at that guy

Me: "Calm down"

That guy: "Please come here" I smiled walking over to him as I settled on his lap. He held my waist bringing his face to mine

Him: "I'm Mandoba Zwane" I nod with a naughty smile

Me: "I'm Mapula Silala Dube" I say to to him

Mandoba: "So many surnames?" I chuckled looking at his Gold wedding ring

Me: "That's how it is"

Mandoba: "Mmmh, Can we get out of here" I moved my hips slowly as I felt his dick which was big, I can feel it's length

Me: "Let's go" I stood up and he fist bump with the guys
One of them: "I'm telling on you, Lihle will fry your black ass" I
Guess that's his wife. He chuckled placing his hand on my waist as we made our way out of the restaurant.

NOMSA

Thando: "Why don't you try it with Mvelo? The guy is trying Nomsa" I sighed

Me: "I don't know Friend, I don't know why I don't just give him a chance" I shrugged my shoulders
"I guess I'm doubting him"

Thando: "That guy loves you
Nomisa, he loves you and you're
failing to see that"

Me: "So I'm heading to
Johannesburg this weekend" I
immediately changed the subject

Thando: "To see your family?" I nod

Me: "I miss my little sister" She
laugh

Thando: "I miss her too even
though we have never met, I can
tell that she's great" They
always talk whenever I call Nosi
so yeah! Their personalities are
almost the same so they clicked
after greeting each other over
the phone.

Me: "She's indeed a great person,
Maybe we should go to
Johannesburg together"

Thando: "I don't know..." I looked
at her and pout

Me: "Come on Tee, You need a
break"

Thando: "Fine it won't hurt I
guess" I smiled at her

Me: "It won't hurt"

Thando: "How's sex with him?" I
laughed

Me: "I won't be discussing my sex
life with my husband"

Thando: "Finally she realizes that
he's her husband" She shouts and
I softly slapped her shoulder

Me: "You didn't have to shout you know"

Thando: Rolled her eyes "I just did, You're In denial of loving Mvelo and it's annoying the shit out of me"

Me: "Mvelo's baby Mama is crazy, I don't think I want to be in a relationship with him when there's his crazy baby Mama"

Thando: "We'll fix Mathapelo, You're already in a relationship with him though"

Me: "It's different, No strings attached and when I fully commit myself to him I.... I'm scared I'll lose myself in the process. You

know when I love I love fully
Thando! I had feelings for Mvelo
the moment I set my eyes on him
but I have learnt to live without
seeing him like that"

Thando: "That's why I say you're
in denial dear friend, talk to Mvelo
about your feelings then you'll
both decide on what's next" I nod
with a sigh

NHLAKANIPHO

I've always been scared of losing
Nosi and when she started High
School, I knew she'll want to
experience so many things that
other teenagers do. I hate to

admit it but I'm scared to lose her to the school boys, those who are her age.

Nosi: "I miss you so much" I smiled pulling her to me

Me: "Oh really?"

Nosi: "Really, I love you so much babe" I planted a kiss on her forehead.

Me: "Not as much as I do sweetheart, I love you so damn much"

Nosi: "There's something I want us to talk about" She had a serious face and I knew that right there, she meant business.

Me: "Mmmh, what is it? It sounds

serious"

Nosi: "It is, so my friend asked me to go on a Road trip with him s--

"I interrupted her before She could continue. A 'He'?

Me: "Him? I thought your friend is Lethabo Nosibusiso!" I scoffs narrowing my eyes at her

Nosi: "Yeah but I've just befriended him, and I don't see anything wrong with being friends with guys" I chuckled pushing her off me as I stood up pacing around the office.

Me: "You don't see any problem with that? Nosibusiso I know how guys roll! I was a teenager

before so obviously this guy is into you and you're falling for his trick" I huffed frustrated as I stopped on my tracks Looking at her

Nosi: "I've always wanted to go on a Road trip Nipho and this is my opportunity"

Me: "Is this what is all about? You want to travel right? Fine!" I took my phone dialing Cynthia's numbers

Cynthia: "Good Afternoon Mr Mhlongo"

Me: "Cancel my Meeting for the upcoming weekend"

Cynthia: "Sir the Nigerian Meeting

is very important d--"I

interrupted her

Me:"I don't care if it's important or not! Cancel it!" I hanged up throwing the phone on the table

Me:"I'll be making your dreams come true! I didn't want to take You out on trips Nosi because

that would disturb your school

work but I guess you're such a

fool to see it" I clicked my tongue

walking to the cabinet as I

poured whiskey in a glass and

immediately gulped it down

Nosi:"I...I.. Baby"

Me:"Shush Nosi,j... just shut up"

I felt her hands snuggling on my

waist bringing me closer to her
Nosi: "I didn't mean to upset you
baby, I.. I didn't understand and
I really don't want to cause any
problems between us" I sighed
Me: "You're making me Mad Nosi
and you know I can't stay Mad at
you"

Nosi: "I love you know that?" I
smiled turning to face her
Me: "I've always known, I love you
sweetheart and I'm... I'm scared
of losing you" I honestly say.

Nosi: "I'm not going anywhere, I
love you and I'll be here with you
throughout, to the infinity" I

pulled her closer resting my hand
on her waist

.....

CHAPTER 33

NOSIBUSISO

He has his big arms around me as
we were settled on the couch.

This was such a great feeling and
I really didn't want it to end. I
closed my eyes inhaling his cologne
which smelled like heaven.

Me: "I love being In your big
arms" I murmur and he chuckled
Nhla: "Mmmh, I love holding you
like this. I wish things were so
easy" He released a deep sigh. I

know what he meant, after my father gave him few punches years ago their friendship is sinking. I know he misses him, even though he tries so hard to hide it but sometimes it can be so invisible.

Me: "You should try and talk to him" I softly say looking up to his sparkling eyes

Nhla: "Talk to who?" I shook my head because he knows who I'm talking about

Me: "My father Nhlakanipho, I can see how much you miss your friendship. He misses you too" Indeed he does. Mlungisi is

slowly becoming grumpy and I can sense his frustrations from afar
Nhla: "Our friendship won't be that easy Sweetheart, it'll be hard because he doesn't know that I'm dating you since we broke up in his eyes. Having to pretend that I'm not making his daughter my woman is..." He deeply sighed

Me: "Baby try to mend your friendship, I hate the fact that I'm the one who caused a rift between the two of you" He looked down to me

Nhla: "Don't blame yourself about this, I'm inlove with you

Nosibusiso and damned I can't wait to wife you. Whatever it is in my friendship with your Dad, it's not your fault" I nod without saying anything further

Me: "How's the little Sizwe?" I ask after some time and he chuckled
Nhla: "She's handful, but I don't blame her because her father is Sizwe" I laughed looking up to him

Me: "Oh really?"

Nhla: "Yes sweetheart, Really"

Me: "I need to see her, It's been long and I miss her" I say with a faint smile

Nhla: "She's with my Mom, you can come over and visit for the

weekend" I shook my head

Me: "Nomisa is coming down to Johannesburg so I can't, but I can go after school tomorrow"

Nhla: "Yeah, I'll tell Mom that you're coming"

Me: "I--" I was interrupted by the opening of the door

Zama: "Nhla I'm... Oh I didn't know you had company"

Nhla: "Say whatever you want to say and excuse us"

Zama: "I..I'm.... Never mind I'll talk to you when you're not busy"
She immediately walked out and I sighed looking at the door. I don't like this girl and I seriously don't

trust her, I don't understand why she had to work here.

Nhla: "Sweetheart..."

Me: "Mmmh" I shifted my attention from the door and looked up to him

Nhla: "Let's get going" I nod

MAPULA

Mandoba: "That was good" I smiled as he rolled from the bed. This was really good, he knew his sex game and it topped it all that he had that big fat dick unlike Sizwe. Sizwe knows his sex game pretty well, he's good actually but his dick is not that big!

Me: "I need to get going"

Mandoba: "Me too, My wife is probably waiting for me"

Me: "Oh Yeah" I took my phone and there were lots of missed calls from Sizwe

I tossed it over the bed and quickly dressed up.

Mandoba: "I can't drive you sorry, There's something which needs me back home" I nod and dialed Sizwe's number as soon as Mandoba walked out.

Sizwe: "Where the hell are you!?"

Me: "Baby I'm sorry I couldn't answer your calls, it was on a charger and I didn't hear it"

ring" I lied through my teeth. As much as I was to experience different dicks, I cannot lose Sizwe.

Sizwe: "It's Ohk Baby, I was just worried about you" I smiled as I heart beat out of my chest with guilt!

Me: "Ummm Yeah"

Sizwe: "Should I fetch you tonight? I miss you" He whined and I closed my eyes

Me: "I can't baby, I.. I'll be busy with some school work" I can't have sex with him since I just had sex with someone.

Sizwe: "Oh Ohk babe I

understand, I love you"

Me: "I love you too" I hunged up opening my eyes as I released a deep sigh

BONTLE

I threw the pregnancy test on the bed frustrated. I've been hoping that I'll get pregnant but it always comes as Negative! I don't want to believe that there could be something wrong with me.

Mlu: "Baby i--" He walked in and his eyes landed on the previous test

Me: "I can't give you a Child

Mlungisi!" I say sadly. I've been

trying and trying but there's nothing!

Mlu: "I think I should fix things, Maybe it's me... My ancestors are not happy" I looked at him

Me: "What do you mean?"

Mlu: "I didn't introduce my children to the ancestors, I didn't pay the damages and I didn't make Umemulo for them"

Me: "I don't know why that would solve everything" I huffed settling on the bed. Here I am worried about not having Kids and he's worried about his stupid ancestors!

Mlu: "I don't know too but I need

to try, The ancestors have many ways to communicate with us Bontle and I can't ignore this" I sighed looking at the pregnancy test

Me: "Fine do whatever you have to do Mlungisi, I want to carry your child"

Mlu: "You will baby" He says pulling me to his strong arms.

NOSIBUSISO

Me: "Where are you coming from?" I've just woken up from my sleep, I just needed to take a nap for few minutes

Mapula: "That's non of your

business" She chewed her bubble gum walking upstairs. I followed behind her

Me: "Mapula what's up with you?"

Mapula: "I would be glad if you can leave me alone Nosi, you're crowding my space" I shook my head

Me: "Fine but one day you'll remember me Mapula, mnxah" I walked out of her bedroom walking to mine. Just then my phone rang

Me: "Hello" It was an unknown number

"Hey, It's me Qhawe" I held my breath for a while before I

exhaled

Me: "Qhawe, oh hey"

Qhawe: "I hope you don't mind me calling"

Me: "Oh no, it's Ohk"

Qhawe: "Great! So you good?"

Me: "I'm good, You?"

Qhawe: "I'm good, have you thought about the road trip to Mpumalanga?" I sighed

Me: "Yeah and sadly I can't travel with you"

Qhawe: "Why not?"

Me: "My boyfriend won't like it, he doesn't"

Qhawe: "That's sad"

Me: "Yeah ey, I really don't want

any troubles"

Qhawe: "I understand you Nosi, I won't cause any troubles"

Me: "Good"

Qhawe: "So are you busy? Let's text on Whatsapp"

Me: "Eeh, No I'm not busy we can text"

Qhawe: "Cool, I'll be hanging up now" He says as he hung up and a text immediately came through.

.....

CHAPTER 34

SIZWE

I found my Mom reading a bedtime Story for Simphiwe. I

just love the relationship these two hold, it's literally out of this world. I smiled walking in further inside the bedroom.

Me: "Evening Mom"

Mom: "Oh Sizwe, Good Evening how are you?" I sighed looking at her, I'm not really fine. I've been thinking about Mapula and it stresses me on how much she has changed

Me: "It's Mapula, Mom I..I don't know if she's still the same Mapula I have fallen inlove with"

Mom: "Wait" She looked at Simphiwe as she tucked her under covers before she held my hand

"Let's go to my bedroom" I nod following her. We settled on her bed as she held my hand.

Mom: "Now talk to me" I sighed

Me: "It's Mapula she...she has changed Mom and it scares me, I know how Highschool life can be like and seeing her like some kind of a wh..." I sighed Looking straight up to her eyes "She has changed, In a bad way"

Mom: "Do you love her?" I smiled thinking about the good old days but my heart no longer skips a beat like it used to.

Me: "I don't know Mom, I used to love her but now I..I don't know"

Mom: "I wouldn't say stick with her baby, If you feel like you no longer feel your relationship just let her know"

Me: "I'm scared Mom, Maybe this all was my fault" I scoffs standing up as I walked over to the window. The view was actually Amazing and it kept my mind off the topic a little bit.

Mom: "You can't run away from this Sizwe, as much as I love Mapula and as much as you do too. You should put your happiness first more than anything"

Me: "Thank you Mom, You've helped me" I smiled and she

walked over to me as she pulled me in for a hug.

Mom: "I would do anything for you baby, I'm here for you" I smiled pulling out of the hug.

NHLAKANI PHO

Mandla: "Sir I can't find anything about the person" I huffed frustrated as I banged the table

Me: "That's impossible Mandla, He/she stole my money and he can't easily get away with that"

Mandla: "I'll look into it" I nod pouring whiskey in a Glass as I gulped it down. I took my phone dialing Mlungisi's phone number

Mlu: "Hello" I went quite for a while "Ey Bro talk or forever hold your peace"

Me: "You deleted my phone numbers?" I suddenly asked

Mlu: "Nhlakanipho..."

Me: "Yes It's me"

Mlu: "What do you want?"

Me: "I want you to put your pride aside and talk to me. I know I messed up pretty bad but I miss you Man"

Mlu: "You think I'll easily forgive you?"

Me: "You punched me, Isn't that enough?" He chuckled Making me smile

Mlu: "Cartel Bar, 7pm tomorrow"

Me: "See you there" I hunged up.
I'm glad I was able to smile a little. There's an Idiot who stole my Mom and I'm totally pissed! I'm not pissed about him stealing Money, I'm just pissed that he had enough guts to steal from me. Me!? Nhlakanipho
Mhlongo? The Universe is telling me something, Something I'd hate to do.

MAPULA

As I was laying on top of my bed listening to Music, My phone beebed indicating a Message. I

tossed it over to me and sigh
when I see Precious's text
-were hitting a Club tonight, get
ready.

I immediately called her and she
accepted the call on the third ring
Me: "It's Thursday Precious!" I
hissed rubbing my neck

Precious: "Duh! Don't you think I
don't know that? Come on don't
spoil the fun" I sighed

Me: "We have School tomorrow, Are
we going to handle it?"

Precious: "We've Been doing it so
yes we'll handle it" I sighed

Me: "Ohk fine, I'll be Ready I'll try
and sneak out"

Precious: "Cool, Hit me up when you're ready" I hunged up as left my phone on the bed heading downstairs.

Me: "Good Evening" It's 7pm sharp They greeted back and Dad got back to what he was doing as Nosi was minding her own business

Me: "Dad I.." I cleared my throat as he looked at me

Mlu: "Mmmh"

Me: "I was supposed to go on a Study Group"

Mlu: "Oh! What time?"

Me: "Around 20:30" I was holding my breath praying for him to

Mlu: "You're not going" I popped my eyes at him. He was talking like someone who'll say Yes!

Me: "But Dad---"

Mlu: "No you're not going anywhere and I won't discuss this with you" I sighed looking down.

NOSIBUSISO

I smiled at my screen while talking to Qhawe, he was keeping me Company and I liked it! As a Friend

Me-You're lying, You have a girlfriend

Qhawe-I don't have a girlfriend, but there's this person

whom I like

Me-Mmh

Qhawe-Yes, but she's taken

Me-That's Sad!

My phone rang while at it and I answered with the widest smile.

It's my babe!

Me:"Babe"

Nhla:"Sweetheart, How's you?"

Me:"I'm just missing being in your arms and you?"

Nhla:"I miss Kissing your juicy lips" I grinned

Me:"I love you"

Nhla:"I love you"

Me:"You're different Yaz, please talk to your woman" He sighed

Nhla: "There's an idiot who stole my Money"

Me: "Oh Baby! How much?"

Nhla: "R500 000.00, what pisses me off is that he/she had the guts to steal from me"

Me: "That's a Lot of Money babe"

Nhla: "Don't worry about it, So I talked with your dearest father"

Me: "Mmmh so. ?"

Nhla: "We're meeting up tomorrow night" I smiled

Me: "That'd great! I'm happy for you My Babe"

Nhla: "Yeah, I'm happy and I think I have to Thank you since you're the one who spoke to Me"

about this "

Me: "You're welcome babe"

MAPULA

Precious: "Let's go, did they see you?" I shook my head climbing in the car which she came with. She sighed driving off, I was a little bit scared about sneaking out though I'm glad I managed to pull it off

.....

CHAPTER 35

NOSIBUSISO

Mapula walked downstairs holding her head like it was heavy or in

pain. It didn't take me even a minute to put two and two together; she was out drinking. I sighed looking at what I was doing, preparing breakfast.

Mapula: "Hi"

Me: "Hey, bad night?"

Mapula: "Mmmh, my head is heavy" I sighed looking at her

Me: "You were out drinking?" She rolled her eyes walking over to the fridge

Mapula: "I don't need a lecture Nosi so please" I shook my head as she took out a bottle of cold water drinking from it.

Me: "Sies! That's disgusting you

know that" she snorts turning to look at me

Mapula: "Whatever! I just need to take a nap" She slightly groaned

Me: "Mapula what is it with you? We have to go to school in 2 hours if not 3!"

Mapula: "Awung'yeke Nosi" [Leave me alone] I sighed taking the plates to the living room as I prepared the table. In few minutes I was done as Mr and Mrs walked downstairs smiling.

MaBontle: "Good Morning My dearest child" I hate it when she label me as her child, it feels like she's replacing my Mom

Me: "Morning" I looked at Dad with a smile "Morning Dad" He settled around the table

Mlu: "Morning my Princess, how's you?"

Me: "I'm fine, You look happy" I settled around the table throwing my eyes at him

Mlu: "Life is good my baby, Life is good" I sighed dishing out.

Mapula: "I'm not going to school" Mapula appeared from the kitchen throwing the News at the table

Mlu: "For what!?"

Mapula: "I'm not feeling well

Dad, I won't make it to school" I

shook my head excluding myself in their conversation.

Mlu: "Well tough luck Sweetheart, you're going to school"

Mapula: "But Dad---"

Mlu: "No, you're going to school and I won't repeat myself" I finished my food while Mapula was Sulking making her way upstairs. I sighed following behind her as she banged her bedroom door. I made my way inside my bedroom and did my hygiene process, I took my backpack Making my way downstairs

Me: "Dad I'm out!" I shout running out as I climbed inside

the car. We waited a little bit for Mapula.

Me: "Mike you can drive I'm late!" I said to the driver. He nods driving off. I climbed out as soon as he made a stop on my school gate.

Me: "Hello!" I smiled at Lethabo who returned it

Lethabo: "Hey, You good?"

Me: "Yeah, let's go to Class so I could tell you some news" I grinned walking up to my Classroom and she followed.

Lethabo: "So?"

Me: "Nhla was breathing fire friend! He almost dropped

everything because of a mere trip

"I sighed heavily

Lethabo: "Let me guess? Hero was the cause of Everything because you can't say No to him" I frowned

Me: "That's not true, I don't say Yes to everything Qhawe says"

Lethabo: "Do you expect me to believe that? Nosi I thought you were smart but you're Imbecile!" I gasped

Me: "That's Rude!"

Lethabo: "And that my dear friend, that's an honest truth" I huffed running my eyes around the classroom without saying

anything "You're too Naïve, I hate it!"

NOMSA

It's been Two Hours and we're still on the Road, I didn't want to fly so I thought driving would be good but it was such a bad idea. I miss sleeping in a comfortable bed! Thando was now driving since I drove for the past two hours. Thando: "As'fiki Yini? Mina Sengikhathela phela" [Ain't we arriving? I'm now tired] I sighed looking at her Me: "We're 1 hour away, keep driving" She nods looking ahead of

the road.

Thando: "Are they welcoming?"

Me: "Yeah but to me, Mrs Dube who happens to be my father's wife is a snake" I huffed leaning towards the car seat

Thando: "Oh Yeah?"

Me: "Yeah, She hates me so bad Infact she hates all of us!"

Thando: "That's bad"

Me: "I know right? And I'm suspecting that she's inlove with my Father's Best Friend"

Thando: "The Stepmother?"

Me: "Yeah her, when they talk about the Mhlongo family, she's always like 'Nhlakanipho this and

that' I don't understand why my father misses that"

Thando:"Wow! I'm speechless"

Me:"I get you, I would be too"

NHLAKANIPHO

Zamo made her way inside my office while I was busy in my laptop. I looked up to her as she made her way to my desk

Zama:"Nhlakanipho" I nod with a straight face. I still don't trust her but she was so desperate for a job that I ended up hiring her.

Me:"How can I help you?"

Zama:"The question is;How can I help you?" I raised my eyebrow

Me: "Huh?"

Zama: "I mean" She walked around to my side as she bends over to me "You can't wait for her forever you know, You're a man Nhlakanipho and you need it" Her hand travelled to my pants and I quickly pushed her

Me: "What are you doing!?" I growled at her and she took few steps back with her eyes popped
Zama: "I thoug---"

Me: "That's what I hate about sluts like you! You always assume that we're thinking and hell I wasn't even thinking" I screamed at her and she stumbled

backwards once more

Zama: "I'm sorry!"

Me: "Look, Nosi might be 18 and you might be 27 but I think she's more mature than you or any woman I've met" I huffed "If I were to choose someone else rather than my sweetheart, I'd be damned because she'll Always be the first choice in my life"

Zama: "I said I'm sorry"

Me: "You should be sorry to Nosi, you're busy messing around with her assets! Now you'll walk out of that door to fetch your manners so you can treat me like a boss that I am" She trembled walking

away with her left feet! I sighed leaning towards the Big Chair. Nx!

BONTLE

Mlu: "I'm calling Aunt Zodwa so we could arrange the Ceremony which will be held in KZN"

Me: "You know I don't like KZN Mlungisi" I whined

Mlu: "Tough luck baby, we're going to KZN" I sighed

Me: "They hate me Kodwa" [But]

Mlu: "Uzoba Right

Mamekhaya, khululeka ungcwale ubhavu" [You'll be fine, woman of the house, Relax]

Me: "Ohk" I rolled my eyes as the

door bell rang "Let me get that" I walked over to attend the door and I immediately wore my frown
Nomisa: "Good Afternoon"

Me: "Afternoon" I looked besides her, it was her friend I assume. I moved "You're welcome" We made our way to the living room.

Mlu: "Ntombi kababa, Unjani Sana lam" [Daddy's girl, How's you my baby] The SheDevil giggled

Nomisa: "I'm good Dad you?"

Mlu: "I'm good, How's your friend?"

Nomisa: "Oh it's Thando, the one I talked about" Mlungisi smile widely at her

Mlu: "I remember, Unjani

ntokazi" [How are you my lady]

Thando: "NgyaPhila Baba

Wena" [I'm fine Father and you]

Mlu: "I'm fine" I rolled my eyes at them, such nonsense!

NOSIBUSISO

Me: "Bye!"

Qhawe: "I'll call, Ubambe

ucingo" [Answer the call] I nod

walking inside the Yard. I smiled walking in further

Me: "Good Afternoon!" I screamed loudly

"Eyyy Warasa" [You're making noise]

I giggled running towards the

living room

Me: "Big Sis" I smiled as she pulled me in for a hug

Nomsa: "How's you Little One?"

Me: "Good you?"

Nomsa: "I'm good" I looked at Thando who smiled at me

Me: "You must be Thando"

Thando: "Yes, Nosibusiso" I smiled widely pulling her for a hug

Me: "It's nice to finally meet you"

Thando: "Same here" I looked at MaBontle who was rolling her eyes wishing they can fall right there; Pure Evil!

Me: "Let me go and change, I'll be back" I made my way upstairs,

while I was at the staircase my phone rang. I answered in a smile as Nhlakanipho's name flashed on the screen.

Me: "Babe wam" [My]

Nhla "How are you Sweetheart?"

Me: "I'm fine, You?"

Nhla: "I'm good, I'm just missing my other rib" I giggled shutting my bedroom door closed

Me: "I'm turning Red! God" I was smiling throughout the conversation

Nhla: "I love you Mawabo" [Their Mother] I was flushed. The butterflies were doing wonders.

Me: "I love you Babe, So much" We

talked for a while before we bid each other Goodbye knowing he'll Call In few minutes or hours. My Babe! I changed and made my way downstairs.

.....

CHAPTER 36

NOSIBUSISO

It was now dinner time and we were settled around the table. We had dinner early today since Dad has somewhere to be. There was laughter and happiness amongst all of us, we kept on sharing our Amazing stories

Me: "That's the only thing I knew

back then, Stealing" Mlungisi looked at me as he chuckled
Mlungisi: "I remember when Nhlakanipho walked in here with a terrible smug across his face, he just laughed and when I asked what's wrong... He said there's a girl who stole Sizwe's wallet" I looked down at my plate as they laughed.

Me: "I didn't steal his wallet" I mumbled looking around the table
Nomasa: "Tell us the truth Nosi" I chuckled

Me: "Fine believe what you want to believe!" I rolled my eyes
Finishing off my food.

Nomsa: "Yes Girl!"

Me: "Let me go and sleep" I stood up

Thando: "You're running away from your problems"

Me: "I'm not!" I walked up to the kitchen to drink water then I made my way upstairs. I found my phone ringing on top of the bed. Qhawe's name flashed on the screen

Me: "Hey" I said as soon as I accepted the call

Qhawe: "Hello Nosi, How are you?" I smiled settling on the bed

Me: "I'm perfectly fine, You?"

Qhawe: "I'm good I.. Can we

meet?"

Me: "Qhawe---" I whined knowing that this would be a bad idea

Qhawe: "Please Nosi I promise I won't cause any problems with your boyfriend" I sighed looking at the clock

Me: "Fine, For only 1 hour though"

Qhawe: "Cool, I'll call when I get to your house"

Me: "Park Two Houses away, I don't want my Dad to see you"

Qhawe: "I understand" I hunged up walking to the Bathroom. I took a quick shower then changed to my night dress and a silk gown. My phone beebed as Qhawe's

message came through.

-I'm outside

I sighed walking downstairs as I walked out of the house using the back door, I hardly use the door.

I ran up to the gate and saw Qhawe's car far from the house

Me: "Hi" I say breathless, I've been running

Qhawe: "Hey, You were running?" I nod looking behind me

Me: "I thought there was someone who was following me or something but I guess there's nothing"

Qhawe: "Mmmh, Can we climb in" I nod as he helped me out

Me: "Thank you" He flashed a smile walking to his side and climb in too.

Qhawe: "I have long wanted to spend time with you"

Me: "As friends..."

Qhawe: "Ofcourse as friends" I sighed at him as he smiled

"What?" I shook my head turning my attention away from him

Me: "Nothing"

Qhawe: "Cool, Can we get out of this place?"

Me: "Qhawe No" I softly say to him and he looked down at me

Qhawe: "Come on, we'll just chill and have something to drink or

watch movies" I nod as he pressed the accelerator. In few minutes we outside of this beautiful apartment

Me: "You live here?" He nods

Qhawe: "Yes, Come" He helped me out of the car as we made our way inside

Me: "This is a Cool place" I murmur looking around the house

Qhawe: "Yeah it's Cool" He walked over to the kitchen and I followed behind him "Anything to drink?" I shook my head

Me: "I don't drink"

Qhawe: "I mean---" He looked at me for a while before he looked

away "---Juice"

Me: "Yeah you can give me a Juice" He nods walking over to the fridge and took out a bottle of Juice.

NHLAKANI PHO

We've been quite for about 30 minutes, just drinking our whiskey. I cleared my throat Finally saying something

Me: "Thank you"

Mlu: "For what?" I looked up to him

Me: "For coming, I thought you won't come" He sighed

Mlu: "I miss you, I just had top

much pride to admit it" I smiled
Me: "I missed you too and if it
wasn't for N---" I breathe out
gulping down my whiskey "---I
just miss us"

Mlu: "You're like a girl bro" I
chuckled slapping him lightly

Me: "Whatever!"

Mlu: "I didn't like it when I saw
you with her"

Me: "Who?"

Mlu: "Nosibusiso, you were
supposed to be her Uncle not his
boyfriend Man! She's still young
for such" I cleared my throat once
again

Me: "I get you but I love her" He

laughed clearly taking it as a complete Joke

Mlu: "That's a Joke right? You can't be dating my baby girl

Nhlakanipho Because I'll literally kill you right now" I faked a laugh

Me: "Yeah it's a Joke man Come on! I was just kidding" As much as I want to scream 'I love Nosibusiso' i know it could cause a lot of trouble in her family.

Mlu: "Great! Let's drink and enjoy our friendship"

Me: "Yeah Yeah!!!!"

NOSIBUSISO

I was leaning on his shoulder while he had his hand on my lap. I was enjoying the Movie that I didn't even mind him doing so.

Me: "This Movie is great"

Qhawe: "I knew you'll love it" I smiled as he became a little bit un-easy

Me: "What's wrong?"

Qhawe: "I..I..." I moved looking at him "I love you" I popped my eyes "I'm sorry I wasn't supposed to say that"

Me: "Qhawe you can't love me" I stood up walking over to the kitchen. He followed behind me

Qhawe: "Who will stop me"

Nosi? Your little boyfriend huh?"

Me: "Stop disrespecting him! I'm in love with Nhlakanipho so you can't love me" He was now next to me.

Qhawe: "I can't control myself, I wasn't supposed to say that but it came out" I sighed looking at his eyes. He has the most beautiful eyes

Me: "No... No Qhawe" He had his hand over my hips as he stepped closer to me

Qhawe: "I can't control myself" I didn't even respond as his lips were already on mine. I quickly pushed him off slapping him

Me: "No Qhawe!!!" I shout
recovering from the kiss

Qhawe: "Yes Nosi! I love you why
can't you see that!" I shook my
head as tears started streaming
down my cheeks. When did I
become so weak! This life made me
weak!! I hate it! He had me
against the wall as we were
exchanging spits! My mind was
blocking Nhlakanipho's image as
much as it kept on appearing.

Qhawe: "I want you" I didn't say
anything. He picked me up walking
upstairs making sure that he
doesn't miss a step as he walked
up slowly. He placed me on top of

the bed and looked at me.

Me: "I---" He smashed his lips on mine as my hands travelled to his torso. His hands made their way to my thighs as they slowly went up to my panty. I kept on moaning enjoying whatever he was doing-- playing with my thighs. I helped him out of his shirt and his Jeans as he was only left with his briefs. He moved to my neck as I kept on impaling myself underneath him. He was about to remove my dress but I quickly held his hand.

Me: "No" I whispered breathlessly with my eyes closed

Qhawe: "What?"

Me: "No, let's not" I sighed with so much Regrets

Qhawe: "Please...." I flipped my eyes open pushing him as I got off the bed. It sank in, what have I done? I almost slept with him!!! God what have I done? I shook my head countless as tears started to fall

Me: "What have I done?" I whispered, I let him touch me! He was about to take a step to me but I stopped him

Me: "Don't! Don't" I wiped off my tears with the back of my hand but they kept on falling. I turned

as I walked out of the apartment with Qhawe calling me.

Qhawe: "Nosibusiso!!" I ignored him as I felt a drop on my head.

Thunders started to gather as droplets of rain started to drop.

I ran trying as much as I can to upper my pace. The road was so dark! I didn't even care, all I wanted was to get home.

NHLAKANI PHO

I kept on calling Nosibusiso but her phone directed me straight to voicemail. I know it's late but I wanted to hear her voice before

I sleep.

Me: "Sweetheart answer" I whispered pacing down my room. My heart felt heavy for a while there, I was disturbed by a knock. I invited whoever it was in without any care

Mom: "Nhlakanipho what's wrong?" I sighed turning to look at her

Me: "I've been trying to call Nosi but her phone sends me straight to voicemail Mama" [Mom]

Mom: "I'm sure she has her reasons or maybe she's asleep"

Me: "Yeah" I tossed my phone over to the table

Mom: "Get some rest baby" She planted a kiss on my forehead before she made her way out of my room.

NOSIBUSISO

I kept on washing myself as tears streamed down my cheeks followed by sobs. Thinking about the event which took place in Two Hours ago made me want to jump over a certain bridge and die! How can I be so stupid! How can I do this to Nhlakanipho? I feel so dirty for letting him kiss me, for letting him place his hands on my thighs and touch me. I shouldn't

have went to his apartment in the first place! Nosi you have changed, So weak! I stepped out of the bath walking to the shower as I turned it on. I sat down allowing water to do it's cause. I've been ignoring Qhawe and Nhlakanipho's calls. How am I going to look at Nhlakanipho again!? I let them flow, the windows were shining as Thunderstorms stricked. My Mind kept on repeating the same question, what have I done!?

....

CHAPTER 37

NOSIBUSISO

I heard the banging of the door but I ignored it as I went back to my sleep. I'm tired and I'm not planning of walking out of my bedroom anytime soon. I took my phone from the table and I had lots of missed calls from Nhlakanipho. I changed the settings to Airplane Mode then I placed it on the table.

"NOSIBUSISO" It's Nomsa, hearing her voice makes me want to open up. She's a great sister after and she never judge me Me: "Go Away!" I faintly said knowing she can hear me, as much as I want to talk to her... I don't

think I am ready

Nomsa: "Open up so we could talk my sister" I sighed dragging my heavy body to the door "You look terrible" She said as soon as I opened the door

Me: "I know" I went back to the bed. She shook her head opening the windows in my room "The rain is pouring" I huffed

Nomsa: "You need fresh air" I threw myself on top of the bed closing my eyes "what's wrong?" I sighed deeply.

Me: "I messed up" I murmur opening my eyes as I looked at her

Nomsa: "What did you do?"

Me: "Yesterday I...I went out with Qhawe---" She interrupted me

Nomsa: "When? I thought you went to sleep after dinner" I sighed Looking down

Me: "He called me asking to meet up and I agreed, we chilled in his car for few minutes until he decided that we should go to his apartment" I say through my gritted teeth.

Nomsa: "My God Nosi!"

Me: "I don't know what I was thinking Nomsa, The next thing we're watching a Movie and in

few seconds we're exchanging spits" She placed her hand over her mouth

Nomsa: "Don't tell me you gave him your virginity" I shook my head

Me: "Luckily we didn't get there" I stood up walking over to the window "I feel so guilty Nomsa, I know I didn't go ahead with it but I feel guilty"

Nomsa: "I know what you're talking about, you should go and tell Nhlakanipho because surely there's a hidden agenda behind this Qhawe person" I shook my head folding my arms across my

chest

Me: "I can't tell a Nhlakanipho Nomsa, he'll flip"

Nomsa: "You'll get over it! You're becoming someone you're not Nosi" She's right! I am slowly becoming someone I'm not

Me: "I don't know what's happening" I scoffs looking at her
Nomsa: "It's growing up, but you need to work on getting yourself back" I nod with so much understanding "They way they've been describing you, I imagined a fearless feisty girl who doesn't take shit. You're not that person anymore" I sighed

Me: "Back then I wasn't loved I guess, being in love with Nhlakanipho made me see that I need not to be strong and fearless" I looked back as the droplets of the rain hit my window "I also have the weakness in me" I shrugged my shoulders "After all I'm a human"

Nomsa: "No one said you're a Robot Nosi, you've been naïve lately and it's not something we'd want to see in you. Get back on being the Feisty girl they they all knew" I know it'll be hard, I got too comfortable than I almost lost myself.

NHLAKANIPHO

I sighed sending a text to Mlungisi letting him know that I'll be coming down for breakfast. I'll do as much as I can to work on our friendship but I'll never sacrifice my love for Nosi to save our friendship. I know how stupid this looks but Nosi is my life. I parked on the driveway before I made my way inside.

Bontle: "Morning Nhlakanipho, I didn't know you were coming" She smiled directing me Inside the house

Me: "It was unplanned" I breath

that out as I stepped inside the living room

Mlu: "Ey Njomane" I smiled

Me: "Man-Lu, how's you? How are you'll?" I say directing it to the rest of the family as they greeted back.

Mlu: "Make yourself

comfortable, You know" I chuckled settling around the table

Me: "I miss being here" I scoffs throwing my eyes at him and he chuckled

Mlu: "Yeah I know" Bontle served me, Nomsa had her eyes on Bontle while at it. Bontle finished and went to settle on her seat

Me: "Where's your other daughter?"

Mlu: "In Her bedroom, I think she has boyfriends problems" I almost choked on me food. I sip my juice

Nomsa: "Oh Dad! Why do you assume that it's a boy?"

Mlu: "She's Moody Today"

Nomsa: "She may be on her periods, you know how girls are" I looked at Nomsa who looked at me back. Her eyes were saying a lot, I can easily read them because they're like Nosi's eyes.

Me: "Mmmh" I turned my attention to Mlungisi "Can I have the bathroom?"

Mlu: "I---"

Nomsa: "I'll accompany you"

Mlu: "You're Married Nomsa and you can't hit up with my best friend" I chuckled standing up

Me: "Relax old Man!" I made my way upstairs following Nomsa.

Nomsa: "Please don't be too harsh on her" She murmured as soon as we were on the staircase

Me: "What's up with Your sister? She's not answering my calls or my texts" She looked up to me and smiled

Nomsa: "She's very lucky to have you as a boyfriend"

Me: "I'm not her boyfriend I'm

her Man "I snorts and she rolled her eyes

Nomsa; "Whatever!" She immediately walked out of my sight. I knocked on her door

Nosi: "Go away!" I sighed

Me: "Sweetheart open up" It went Silence for a while until I heard the opening of the door. She looked so cute in her look

"Sweetheart" She melt in my arms and I held her

Nosi: "I'm sorry" She whispered

Me: "What's wrong? Talk to your man Nosi" I stepped inside with her locking the door.

Nosi: "I love you"

Me: "I love you either
sweetheart, So much" I say
planting a kiss on her forehead
Nosi: "Please hold me" I am worried
about her but I don't say
anything. I took off my shoes
getting under covers as I cuddle
her to sleep

THANDO

Me: "Who's that Yummy thing" I
asked Nomsa who shook her head
Nomsa: "Nomsa's man, My father's
best friend" I frowned, Nosi is too
young to be dating such a niggur!
Me: "She's young"
Nomsa: "I know right? And they

love each other to death"

Me: "My Loss then!" She laughed at me

Nomsa: "You're crazy! It's your loss indeed Because that's Nosi's future husband"

Me: "Yeah Yeah! Is there some wine in this house?"

Nomsa: "We can go and get a bottle, I don't think there's wine here"

Me: "Let's go, Nosi and that yummy daddy are still locked up?" She shook her head

Nomsa: "Nhlakanipho is now downstairs with my Father" I nod following her out of the room.

NOSIBUSISO

I got off the bed with a yawn. I made my way to the bathroom and took a quick shower, I remember my Dream! I dreamt of Nhlakanipho. I sighed walking downstairs and I gasped as my eyes landed on him, was I really dreaming or something?

Me: "Good Morning" I cleared my throat walking in further

Mlu: "It's Good Afternoon"

Me: "Yeah I.. yeah, how's you?" I directed the question to Nhlakanipho

Nhla: "I don't know how to feel" My

heart beat out of my chest as I looked at Dad

Me: "Let me go and prepare something to eat, I'm hungry"

Mlu: "You do that so you could tell me all about it"

Me: "About what?"

Mlu: "The boy who broke your little heart" I made my way to the kitchen without entertaining that. I made something quick. I felt his presence, the power he holds is just too much as the atmosphere changed. My knees became so weak as I suddenly felt his hand over my hip. I miss this! I miss Him!

Me: "Nhlakanipho my Father..."

Nhla: "He's upstairs, Relax" His warm breath hit my neck and I bend a little as he bit my earlobe. I gasped as his hand under my pants.

Me: "My father might walk in Nhlakanipho" He didn't say anything. He slid his hand inside my pants and shift my panty. He inserted his finger a little as i flinched then he took it out

Nhla: "I love you" He walked out leaving me a little bit confused. He has never done that before, what's wrong?

.....

CHAPTER 38

SIZWE

I looked at the pictures once more not wanting to believe this. Here I am with Mapula's pictures on my hand, she was stripping for a certain man who might be old enough to be her grandfather. I have been looking at them for these past few hours and many questions has been going through my head. I chuckled in placing the pictures on top of my table

I took my phone dialing her phone number

Mapula: "Babe" She said as soon as

she accepted the call. I chuckled without saying anything "Baby, Sizwe" The innocence in her is just so adorable, knowing the things she does behind the closed doors or maybe I was a fool to see her true colors

Me: "Mapula Hi"

Mapula: "Babe you're not Fine, what's wrong?" I shook my head hanging up

She called back after some few minutes but I ignored the call and made my way downstairs, I have a meeting to attend so I don't need this.

Me: "Morning Mom" I say kissing

her cheek and Simphiwe ran up to me

Simphiwe: "Dada!!! Dada" I smiled picking her up

Me: "Daddy's little girl" I kissed her cheek too just like I did to her grandmother because knowing her, she'll want a kiss too.

Mom: "Mfanwam are you fine?" [My boy] I faintly smiled at her

Me: "I'll be fine Mom"

Mom: "You can talk to me you know that right? If there's something which is bothering you... I'm here" I smiled grateful

NHLAKANI PHO

I knew there is something Nosi is hiding from me but I'll give her time. The way she was apologizing and her being clingy all of a sudden was surprising but whatever it was; it had to do with a boy. I puffed my cigarette thinking about that little boy she his friends with. I wanted to handle this with maturity but he's getting too comfortable for my liking.

Mlu: "What's up with you? You've been puffing that cigarette like crazy" I shook my head

Me: "It's nothing, let's just drink and enjoy" I tell him, we were in a

pub. I wanted to drink and go home without thinking of Nosi and her ways. I love her so much and I don't want to lose her

Mlu: "Yaz I think we should do a ceremony" I looked at him and chuckled

Me: "What for?"

Mlu: "For the my kids, Bontle and I have been trying for children but we're failing in that department"

Me: "Cool then I'll support you"

Mlu: "See what I'm talking about? Our Bromance is on another level and I was miserable without you" I smiled

Me: "Same here, You just got too

much pride" I say gulping down my drink

NOSIBUSISO

I kept on tossing and turning on my sleep, I couldn't sleep. All I was thinking about was

Nhlakanipho. A part of me thinks he knows something but I didn't want to dwell too much on it.

Me: "Hello" I finally decided to call him; It's 2am in the morning and I can't sleep.

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I could feel that he was tired, it seems like they've been drinking since Dad came home drunk either.

Me: "Nhlakanipho" I whispered
Nhla: "Talk to me sweetheart
what's wrong?" You wouldn't miss
the concern in his raspy mainly
voice. He had that sexiest voice
you could ever imagine. I may be
exaggerating things because he's
my man but I know what I'm
talking about.

Me: "I need you" I say regardless
that he's tired. I can sense it over
the phone, his voice is tired too.

Nhla: "Should I come?"

Me: "No I....I---" he interrupted me
before I could say anything
further

Nhla: "I'll be there in few

minutes" He immediately hunged up, i sigh getting off the bed as I walked over to the bathroom and rinsed my face. I then applied Ponds sliding my silk gown. While at it, my phone beebed indicating a message.

-Come out sweetheart

I took a deep breath sneaking downstairs. Thankfully there was no one

"Uyaphi?" [Where are you going] I froze on the spot without turning that person "I'm talking to you Nosi" I sighed in relief as soon as I realized that it's Nomsa.

Me: "I.. I'm going outside"

Nomsa: "To Qhawe? Nosi I---" I interrupted her before she could go any further

Me: "----I'm meeting up with Nhlakanipho"

Nomsa: "Thanks God, I was literally going to kill you" I sighed walking out of the house.

Nhla "Sweetheart" He pulled me in his big arms as soon as I approached him. He smelled so perfectly, I sniffed his cologne as he squeezed my body harder to his

Me: "I love you" I murmur

Nhla: "I love you" I stayed in his arms for a while before I moved

from his grip

Me: "I'm sorry I made you come here this late" I took a person look to his eyes and you could see the tiredness though it was dark.

Nhla: "I'd do anything for you sweetheart, I would fly from America or anywhere In the world for you" I chuckled as he pulled me to him again and placed my head on his chest as his hand held my head.

Nhla: "You can talk to me, you know that right? Whatever it is we can sort it out"

Me: "Why did you do that? The thing you did earlier on while we

were in the kitchen?"

Nhla: "I wanted to see if you're still sealed a---" I looked up to his eyes even though it was dark.

Me: "You don't trust me?"

Nhla: "I do, it's them that I don't trust"

Me: "Them who?"

Nhla: "Them, forget it" I nod

MAPULA

Me: "They didn't see me when I sneak out, I'm good at this so Relax"

Mbali nods so did Precious

Mbali: "They're bringing in our staffs"

Me: "What staff's?" I looked at

them as they exchanged looks

Precious: "Cocaine"

Me: "What? You're doing Cocaine too?"

Mbali: "It's not harmful and it's very nice, you'll enjoy" I shook my head

Me: "I'm not doing it" a man walked inside the apartment which we were occupying. He placed 3 bags of white stuff and Precious handed few hundreds to him before he made his way out of the apartment. Mbali smile taking a tray and a Bank Card and she took a line.

Precious: "Come Mapula You'll

enjoy" I shook my head

Me: "No"

Mbali: "Just one line then" I looked at her then at Precious.

Precious: "Come" I sighed walking over to them as they gave me a Bank Card. I took a line, it hit me on my head as my mind goes off a little. I took another line following another line, another and another until I felt a little bit dizzy.

THANDO

Me- Is it that bad?

Sizwe- Yes, she cheated hence she's cheating with older men
imagine

Me-I'm sorry

I've been chatting with Sizwe for few months, I have never met him face to face as we've always chat on whatsapp. He told me about his problems and I tell him about mine. It's so easy talking to him and I always enjoy it.

....

CHAPTER 39

MAPULA

My head was so heavy. When I think about what happened yesterday, I closed my eyes once more regretting it. It was quite nice and all but it wasn't worth it.

Precious: "Hey" She threw herself on the couch

Me: "Hey"

Precision: "You seem out of place what's up?"

Me: "I shouldn't have smoked cocaine Pre, what if something goes wrong?" She sighed

Precious: "Nothing will happen, we've been smoking cocaine for years and nothing is happening to us" I nod taking my phone from my pocket. I sighed when I realized that Sizwe hasn't called. I'm a bit worried about him because it felt like he's not Ohk.

Precious: "Expecting a call?" I nod

looking at her

Me: "From Sizwe, I'm a bit worried about him"

Precious: "Sizwe is an adult, there's no need to worry about him"

Me: "I.. You won't understand, I need to get home" I say standing up

Precious: "Ain't you staying a little bit? For breakfast?" I shook my head

Me: "I need to get home before they realize that I'm not there"

Mbali suddenly made her way downstairs, she smiled and looked

between us.

Mbali: "What's up?" I shrugged my shoulders looking at her

Me: "Nothing, I'm leaving"

Mbali: "Do early!"

Precious: "That's what I asked her, we should have breakfast first I'm sure you're hungry" I snorts shaking my head

Me: "No, I'll call you guys Neh?" I called a cab immediately.

NHLAKANI PHO

5am, I just drove off home so tired. As much as I was drunk earlier on I knew Nosi needs me because she called so desperately.

I got my answers from last night or should I say in the early hours of the morning, I'm a 33 year old man so I couldn't miss all the signs. Nosibusiso has definitely messed up with that boy. I shift my mind from it making my way inside my bedroom.

Sizwe: "Where are you coming from?" I was startled by his voice
Me: "What are you doing in my room? You had sleepless night?" I asked because that could be the only reason for him to be in my room.

Sizwe: "I need to cry man" I walked over to the bed, where he

was seated.

Me: "What's up?" He looked at me

Sizwe: "I love her so much and it hurts"

Me: "Yini inkinga Sizwe?" [What's the problem] I say pulling him next to me. Shit happens but this one will always be my little brother, when he cries I always feel his pain.

Sizwe: "I gave her my love, I gave up everything for her just for her to do like this?" I felt so sad. I looked at him and he snuggled his arms around me and I pulled her closer

Me: "She has her reasons"

Sizwe: "I love her! How can it happen to me bro!? I thought she was the one for me bro, Fuck" I haven't seen Sizwe like this over a girl. Ever!

Me: "She doesn't deserve you then, Pick yourself up Sizwe" I huffed as he started shaking his on my chest. I know he's crying! Mapula did a number on him!

NOSIBUSISO

It goes quiet and we all turned to look at Dad who just discipline us to shut up so he could talk. I wanted to go up and sleep, nothing more or less. I didn't

sleep after all.

Mlu: "I've decided to do Umemulo for both of you guys" I looked at him with a frown

Me: "Did something happen?"

Mlu: "Things ain't going accordingly, we need to have this ceremony"

Me: "Oh" I looked at Nomisa and she was quite

Bontle: "Though you didn't need explanations" I rolled my eyes turning to her. She's been like this since Nomisa arrived "I'm not saying anything" I shook my head looking at Dad.

Me: "Are we suppose to go to

KZEN?"

Mlu: "Definitely, we can't hold a ceremony in Sandton baby" Thando and Nomsa chuckled

Me: "I was just asking Dad" I breath that out and he smiled

Mlu: "I know baby" I continued eating

Me: "I'm full, Can I be excused Daddy? I need some sleep"

Thando: "What were you doing yesterday huh!?" She smirked and I grinned

Me: "Fuck off"

Mlu: "Table manners Nosi!"

Me: "Sorry Dad, I'm out!" I made

my way upstairs to get some sleep.

SIZWE

I fell asleep after some time, I haven't been so emotional like this in a while. I looked besides me and Nhlakanipho was asleep on too. I got off the bed and made my way to my bedroom. My phone beebed indicating a message.

Thando-I'm around Johannesburg

Me-which side?

Thando-Sandton

Me-wow Cool, I could get to meet you

Thando-I don't think so, I don't

want trouble here

Me-Don't be a party pooper [With an Emoji]

I knew Thando in those 'People you may know' thingy. I sent a friend request unexpectedly and she accepted, we've been talking for Months but it was something I wouldn't talk about. She's kind and everything, I could see how she always reacts to me. I answered my ringing phone

Me: "Mmmh"

Mapula: "Babe, what's wrong?"

Me: "I'll call you a bit later

Mapula, I'm busy"

Mapula: "Ow" I immediately disconnected the call with a sigh.

NOSIBUSISO

It's in the afternoon and I'm busy scrolling through my phone. I saw a post from one of Qhawe's friend, it was easy for me to see it because he tagged Qhawe

'My man ate that tight pussy like some kind of a meal! Big up' I went through the Comments and it seems like there were holding a conversation through the Comments since it went like 'You're the man Qhawe' 'You

definitely went for a Virgin Pussy'
'I thought she's different from
any other bitch!' this seemed to
be a bet more than anything.

My phone rang and Lethabo's
name flashed on the phone screen.

I accepted the call

Me: "Hi"

Lethabo: "How could you Nosi!?" She
shouts

Me: "What it it Lethabo!?"

Lethabo: "You sleep with him
after everything?"

Me: "I slept with who?"

Lethabo: "Qhawe ofcourse, Check
his status which he posted 15
minutes ago" She hunged up. I

logged into Facebook again and my eyes landed on Qhawe's post. It was me in his shirt and I was laying my head on his bare chest, the picture looked so real and I almost believed it. I have never went to Qhawe and wore his T-shirt or something. It's Photoshopped though it looked so Real.

.....

CHAPTER 40

NOSIBUSISO

Lethabo called again after some few minutes. I accepted the call with my trembling hands.

Me: "I don't know what's

happening Lethabo, I swear I didn't sleep with him"

Lethabo:"I get you Nosi,I don't want to believe something I didn't see for myself"

Me:"But you were shouting at me minutes ago"

Lethabo:"I've realized my mistake Nosi, I'd suggest you tell Nhlakanipho before he sees this"

Me:"What am I going to say Lethabo?" I didn't know what to do. This is just so much for me because I'm all over the social media.

Lethabo:"Tell him Nosi,it will save you a lot of things"

Me: "Qhawe will know the Nosi who grew up on the streets"

Lethabo: "Don't do anything stupid, Deal with Nhlakanipho first"

She hunged up. I let my tears fall for a while, you can do this Nosi. I told myself as I dialed Nhlakanipho's numbers

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I melt on his deep beautiful voice. The Van Diesel Kind of Voice, it Always turned me on in a type of a way.

Me: "Baby" I cleared my throat when I felt a lump stuck on my throat

Nhla: "You good?"

Me: "I.. There's something I need to tell you" I sighed deeply closing my eyes. It's difficult!

Nhla: "Yes Sweetheart"

Me: "I can't tell you over the phone" My mouth opened up to that. I should have told him on the phone to avoid so many things

Nhla: "Oh, we could meet up at a Mall"

Me: "No" I sighed once again

"Somewhere quiet would be much better"

Nhla: "Stop stressing yourself over whatever it is baby, you sound reckless"

Me: "I'll be Ok, Let's meet at a

Park"

Nhla: "Cool" I wanted to hang up
but he called for me

"Sweetheart..."

Me: "Baby?"

Nhla: "I love you" i sighed as he
disconnected the call m

MAPULA

I sighed browsing on my
Facebook. Seems like Princess
Nosibusiso is not so Innocent
after all. I smirked wearing my
shoes and I made my way
downstairs

Me: "Good Day Miss"

Bontle: "Hey Mapula"

I was about to walk to the kitchen when she stopped me
Bontle: "You know I don't have a problem with you" I turned to her
Me: "Huh?"

Bontle: "I'm not a bad person here, Nosibusiso is being treated like a princess and I don't really like it" I nod because that's an honest Truth. Everything is always about Nosibusiso in this house

Bontle: "We can make something to get rid of her"

Me: "Like what?"

Bontle: "Killing her" I popped my eyes at her.

Me: "No no no I'm not killing anyone"

Bontle: "Come on Mapula, you'll get to live a wonderful life as the only Dube Princess since Nomsa is married"

Me: "I'm not a murder!"

Bontle: "Fine! But think about this" She made her way out of my sight.

NOMSA

Me: "No Mvelo I can't do this with you" I say to him over the phone.

Mvelo: "I miss you, I miss being inside you"

Me: "I'm spending time with my

family Mvelo, Dad wants to meet up with you even"

Mvelo: "For what?"

Me: "I don't know, It's a man-man thing I guess"

Mvelo: "Ooohk Babe, I should go" He's scared of my Dad and sometimes it's funny

Me: "We need to talk" I murmur

Mvelo: "We'll talk, I love you" I sighed hanging up. I made my way downstairs, Mapula was alone in the living room

Me: "Hey"

Mapula: "Hello how's you?"

Me: "Great!" I miss the innocent Mapula, this here is not the

Mapula I know "What happened to you?"

Mapula: "What do you mean?"

Me: "You've changed and it's scary"

Mapula: "Change is great dear sister!" She walked away

NHLAKANIPTHO

I kissed her forehead as the fresh air hit my face. I sighed as we pulled out of the hug and settled on the bench.

Me: "I'm worried about you Sweetheart, you've been... You're just different" She looked down playing with her fingers

Nosi: "Friday night I.. Qhawe

asked me to meet up with him" I huffed looking at her

Me: "You did? You went ahead and met up with?" I knew there was something involving this boy but I couldn't put my finger at it.

She nods

Nosi: "As friends though I---" I interrupted her

Me: "That's not it Nosi! I warned you about that little boy of yours and did you listen?" She shook her head

Nosi: "I'm sorry" I stood up looking down at her

Me: "Continue"

Nosi: "We went to his apartment

to watch some movies, I.. he started kissing me and I...I...."She didn't continue
Me:"Tell me you walked out,tell me something positive"

Nosi:"I responded,w..we almost had sex"She immediately bust with tears. I wanted to hold her and tell her that I'll deal with this Qhawe person but I couldn't hold her. I wasn't ready for this

Nosi:"I'm sorry baby" I breath out

Me:"Wow"

Nosi:"I wanted to tell you so bad but I couldn't,I was scared of losing you"

Me: "Did you think about me when you were exchanging spits!? Did you?"

Nosi: "I... Please Nhlakanipho, Baby I'm sorry" I shook my head walking away to my car as I took out a cigarette.

.....

CHAPTER 41

NOSIBUSISO

I looked at him from afar as he was puffing his cigarette, he's Mad. Nhlakanipho smoke only when he's Mad or Pissed and right now-He's Mad! I moved my little Pride to the side and made

my way to him. He was facing the other side.

Me: "Nhlakanipho" I whispered loud enough for him to hear me. He didn't look my way, he continued looking at whatever he was looking at.

Nhla: "Do you perhaps have feelings for this boy Nosi?" I was shocked. Where does that come from?

Me: "No... No I don't Nhlakanipho, I love Only you" He shook his head

Nhla: "It seems like I'm holding you from doing things you're yearning to do, things those

teenagers do" Maybe what he's saying is part of the truth. I want to do things like most teenager but because I'm inlove with Nhlakanipho, I can't do them.

Me: "I.... That doesn't mean anything Baby, I'm inlove with you and that's what is important" he finally turned to me.

Nhla: "I'm letting you go" I popped my eyes at him, what does he mean?

Me: "What do you mean Nhlakanipho?"

Nhla: "I'm giving you a break to

find yourself" tears immediately
streamed down my cheeks. I can't
lose him because of some
Highschool peer pressure

Me: "No" I whispered again
stepping closer to him

Nhla: "Yes"

Me: "I love you"

Nhla: "Nosibusiso i--" I interrupted
him by smashing my lips on his. I
was on my toes as my hands went
around his neck pulling him closer.
He slowly placed both his hands
around my waist and lead the
Kiss. He picked me up and my legs
locked around his waist. He pulled
out and shook his head

Nhla: "We need this, you're not fully in our relationship Nosi and I.... I can't deal with it" I nod with understanding.

Me: "Can we do it then before we take a break"

Nhla: "Do what?" I look straight to his eyes, he was in pain. His heart was in pain, I could see the reflection from his eyes.

Me: "Make love to me"

Nhla: "Nosibusiso I. "

Me: "Please, I want this baby" I wanted it, I wanted to give it all to him for so long but I was debating with myself.

Nhla: "Let's go then" He placed me

down and picked me up bridal style.

MAPULA

A knock came through as I had my focus on the television. I sighed dragging my feet to attend the door. I opened it and came face-to-face with some old lady

Her: "Hneeeeh Ubhuti wam sekaneengane ezingaka" [My brother now have children this old] She walked inside bumping to me but she didn't see any problem with that.

Me: "Who are you?"

Her: "Ngabe wenza itiye uyeke ukungbuza umsangano nesingizi" [You should be making tea instead of asking me Nonsense with English] I sighed walking to the couch and I threw myself on it

Her: "Aybo! Uba ozomikisa lemithwalo ekameleni uma uziphosa kwisofa?" [Who will take this suitcases to the bedroom when you throw yourself on the couch]

Me: "I'm not a Maid whoever you are! I won't be working for your old ass! Take this yourself" I say throwing my focus on the television.

Her: "Ubhuti uzalile
impela, bekfanele anilethe
emakhaya nisebacani buka manje
nisantukile, aay nimoshekile
impela" [My brother made them, he
should have come with you at the
village while you're still young look
now you're really damaged]
I rolled my eyes getting off the
couch as I made my way upstairs
leaving her shouting.

NOMSA

Thando: "Who's shouting?" She
asked making me stop talking

Me: "Who?"

Thando: "It seems like there's

someone downstairs and she's shouting!" She got off the bed and I followed making our way downstairs.

Me: "Good Day Ma'am" It was a village lady, judging by her outfit

Her: "Ungangikhulumeli isingisi, Ngicede la" [Don't speak English at me, Help here]

Me: "Unguba?" [Who are you]

Her: "UNelisa, Udadwabo Mlungisi no Lungani o sewashona

a Lungani" [Mlungisi and Lungani's sister, Lungani who passed on]

I cleared my throat with

understanding. Dad has never

introduced us with the the rest

of the family since he had things to take care of first. I Believe we have to go home, where I grew up at before the ceremony.
Me: "Let me help" I say taking her suitcases

Her: "Ave unomusa, awfani nalengane engiyithole la" [You're kind unlike the other child I found here]

Me: "Uba?" [Who]

Her: "Angimazi" [I don't know her]

Me: "Kulungile Ke" [It's Ok then]

NHLAKANI PHO

I didn't want to do this but it had to be done. Nosi wants to

experience different things as a teenager and I can't tie her from that. I know how it feels like to be a teenager Because I was one. I parked at the driveway and I climbed out.

Me: "Come"

Nosi: "Your Mom is here?" I shook my head

Me: "They all went out, Relax" She nods following me

Me: "I love you Nosi" We were at the living room

Nosi: "I love you"

Me: "This have to be done" I breath that out as I pulled her to me. I smashed my lips on her

without giving her a chance to reply.

NOSIBUSISO

I responded to his kiss as a strange sound escaped from my mouth. His hands went over to my waist as he pulled me to him [REMOVED PART]

....

CHAPTER 42

NHLAKANIPTHO

She was deep in sleep as I had my arms wrapped around her. I didn't want this to end but I knew we have to end it. I love

her so much and I hope she'll be able to let go and be a teenager that age is. I slowly got off the bed as I made my way to the bathroom, I did my hygiene process then made my way back. I kissed Nosi on her forehead then walked downstairs after dressing up.

Mom: "Nhlakanipho" I looked at her as she was settled on the bed. I looked besides her and there were clothes; Our clothes.

Me: "Mom" I say after clearing my throat

Mom: "Nhlakanipho I won't allow this in my house" She says

throwing the clothes at me.

Me: "I'm sorry Mom I---" She interrupted me

Mom: "Don't say you're sorry!

You're having sex in my

house? Nosi is too young for this,

what will happen if you

impregnate her?" I looked down so

embarrassed. As much as I hold

too much respect around, this is

my Mom.

Me: "I... I didn't mean to..

Uhhmmm" she sighed

Mom: "Just stop it! You didn't mean

to you didn't mean to

yamasimba" She imitate me. If

this was a different thing I

would have laughed.

Sizwe: "Mom I---" He looked at me then at Mom "----Ohk what's happening?" I shook my head looking at Mom

Me: "Can I go?" She huffed standing up and she walked upstairs

Sizwe: "What's up?"

Me: "She.. she saw this" I Point at the clothes

Sizwe: "You finally made her a woman" He smiled at me

Me: "It was not the love making I was expecting though"

Sizwe: "What do you mean?" I shook my head again. It was not

the love making I was expecting but I hope we'll do better when she's done with her teenage tendencies, only if we'll ever get back together.

NOSIBUSISO

Mrs Mhlongo: "Do you know teenager Pregnancy Nosi?" I nod looking down. I don't know what she's doing here but she's kinda Mad or something.

Me: "I know it Ma"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You want to be a Mom huh? You want to be a Mom manje?" [Now]

Me: "Has.a Ma" I was scared. My

honeypot was in pain and she's busy scolding me.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Simpfiwe is enough for me right now, Wena just finish your studies then you can give me a grandchild" I nod though I have just broken up with Nhlakanipho.

As much as this pains, I don't regret giving him my pride.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Good, I wouldn't want you to do something you'll later Regret" I nod once again.

Me: "I understand Ma"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Good I---" The door was pushed open and Nhlakanipho made his way in

Nhla: "I..I.. " He cleared his throat

and looked at me, I looked down.
Mrs Mhlongo: "I'll be leaving" She
stood up and made her way out.
Me: "Nhlakanipho" I murmur so
softly as I I looked up to him
Nhla: "When you have thought
about what you want, what you
really want Nosi you know where
to find me" I know for sure that
I can't without him. It was
much better knowing that he still
wants me though I'm scared of
losing him completely "I love you
so much and I'm doing this for
you, I love you"

Me: "I love you too" He walked over
to the bathroom to prepare a

bath then he came back to pick me up.

NOMSA

I looked at Mapula who was doing whatsoever at the table. She's starting to bore me and it's not interesting anymore.

Me: "Let me fix the table" I fixed the table then we settled around it for dinner

Mlu: "Where's Nosi?"

Me: "She.. She went out with her friend, Lethabo" I lied through my teeth looking down.

Mlu: "Oh"

Aunt: "Weeh Mlu ingani

ungalethanga iingane esgodi
sangekhaya?Buka bamosheke
Kanjani"[Why didn't you bring
these kids to the village, look how
damaged they are]

Mlu:"Jabulile awume"[Wait]

Aunt:"Umsombuluko ksasa,Kfanele
siye ngemfuleni"[Tomorrow it's
Sunday,we should go by the river]

There's no river here,I wanted to
laugh at her statement but I
should respect.

Mlu:"Awukho umfula
ngalaJabulile"[There's no river
here]

Aunt:"Bengithi siyahamba
ngoLwesibili, Kfanele Kube nomfula

ngizokhuluma nabaPhansi
ngaphambi kokuthi sihambe siye
ngala bekuhlala abentwana"[I
thought we're leaving on Tuesday
and there has to be a river so I
could speak to the ancestors
before heading your children's
home] Aunt Jabulile thinks
Mlungisi knew about us.

Mlu:"Sizohamba ngoLwesibili
ekseni"[We'll leave on Tuesday
Morning]

Aunt:"Kulungile,wena Ozitjelako
dlulisa utswayi"[It's Fine,Hand
me the salt] Mapula rolled her
eyes not doing as told

Thando:"They're talking to you

Mapula"

Mlu: "Mapula I'll fix you! It seems like you're getting big for your shoes!" Mapula frowned handing the salt to Aunt Jabulile

NOSIBUSISO

I walked inside the house and everyone was settled around the table. There was a woman whom I didn't know but I remembered a little bit about her.

Me: "Good Evening" I softly say walking in further.

Mlu: "You're back from Lethabo's house?" I looked at Nomsa and she nods

Me: "Yes Dad"

Mlu: "Come here" I stepped closer to him then he turned to the woman "You remember Nosi?"

Her: "Umtwana ka

Nomasonto?" Dad nods with a wide grin

Mlu: "Nguyena" [It's her]

Her: "Ukhulile! Usangikhumbula

mina?" [She has grown, do you remember me] I shook my head

Me: "Cha" [No]

Her: "Ngilama ubaba

wakho, Ngingu Auntie wakho

uJabulile" [I'm your Father's

sister, I'm your Aunt Jabulile]

Me: "It's nice to meet you" I looked

at Dad" Can I go upstairs, I'm tired" I was in pain than everything. My heart was so heavy.

Mlu: "Ohk you can go baby" I looked at Aunt Jabulile

Me: "Kwakhuhle ukukwazi" [It's nice to know you] I walked upstairs. While I was at it, the door was pushed open and Nomsa made her way inside.

Nomsa: "You're not fine Nosi, what's wrong?" I turn to look at her and tears immediately streamed down my cheeks followed by painful sobs. She didn't say anything, she just pulled me in

for a hug-something I need at the moment.

.....

CHAPTER 43

NOSIBUSISO

I woke up around her arms. She didn't leave my side and I was grateful.

Nomsa: "Hey" I smiled and looked at her

Me: "Hey" My raspy voice came out

Nomsa: "I'm worried about you

Nosi" I sighed snuggling next to her

Me: "Nhlakanipho and I broke up, he said I'm.. I still want to

experience teenage things and

all" I breath that out

Nomsa: "It it true?"

Me: "What?"

Nomsa: "Do you want to experience teenage things? go to

parties? Date the fuckboys? And

all?" I sighed thinking about it; I

would actually love to experience

some of those

Me: "Some of those"

Nomsa: "I think this would do you

good then, you'll think about what

you really want"

Me: "I love him Nomsa"

Nomsa: "He loves you too, I think

you need this than anything" I nod

with a sigh.

Me: "What time is it?"

Nomsa: "It's 23:38, I think you should go back to sleep because tomorrow it's school" I nod getting off the bed and walked over to the bathroom to rinse my face.

MAPULA

I walked downstairs after doing my hygiene process. I was in my shortest skirt you could find, I sighed taking an apple.

Bontle: "You ain't having breakfast?" I nod

Me: "I have somewhere to be"

Bontle: "Oh, did you think about it?" I sighed turning to face her

Me: "It's a no, I'm not about to kill Nosibusiso Bontle" She shook her head taking few steps to me

Bontle: "This would do us good, Don't you want to live a happy life? Be the only Princess?"

Me: "I do but I don't want to go to Jail Bontle"

Bontle: "You won't g---" She looked behind me and smiled "---We will talk" I turned to look at my behind

Nosi: "Good Morning"

Me: "You look miserable"

Nosi: "Mmmh" I looked at her, and

walked out of the house without saying anything.

NHLAKANI PHO

Me: "Hey Cynthia" I say to the receptionist.

Cynthia: "Mr Mhlongo, Good Morning sir" I smiled approaching her table

Me: "Any Messages for me?"

Cynthia: "Yes" Handing them to me "Here Sir"

Me: "Thank you Cynthia" I walked away

Cynthia: "You're a snack like always Mr Mhlongo sir" I chuckled walking over to my office. I found my

phone ringing

Me: "Good Morning, Mr Mhlongo talking"

Mandla: "It's Mandla sir, I found the person who has been stealing from you"

Me: "Who is it?"

Mandla: "It's Zama, someone called Zama" I took a deep sigh, did I have to miss this?

Me: "Ohk thank you Mandla, I will transfer your money in few"

Mandla: "Thank you" I hunged up the call

SI ZWE

Me: "Let's go Simphiwe!" I huffed as she fold her small arms on her chest

Simphiwe: "Funa uGogo miya" [I want grandma]

Me: "Your mother is expecting you man Simphiwe" Thus child can be so stubborn, at a young age.

Simphiwe: "Fun" [Fine] I shook my head as we walked over to my car. I helped her climb in and I did too

Me: "We're going to Mommy

Ohk?" She nods "Come on Simphiwe cheer up" I pressed the

accelerator and drove off

We finally parked outside Portia's apartment. We made our way

inside.

Me: "Hy" I say after she welcomed us in

Portia: "Hey" Looked down at Simphiwe "What's wrong baby?"

Simphiwe: "Dada"

Portia: "Dada?" Simphiwe nods and Portia picked her up "I'll beat him up Ohk?" She nods. I chuckled kissing Simphiwe's cheek

Me: "I have to go"

Portia: "Travel safe" I nod walking away.

NOSIBUSISO

Learners were whispering about me but I didn't care about them.

I had much bigger problems than to deal with stupid pupils who have no life, busy minding things which does not involve them.

Lethabo: "Nna I won't nurse your naïve self Nosibusiso! How many times did I tell you about this Qhawe dude?" I looked down avoiding her eyes

Me: "Many times"

Lethabo: "Yet you went ahead and did this! Aarrggg I'm mad" I sighed Looking up to her.

Me: "You don't have to be mad, it's not like you were the one who was dumped" I mumbled

Lethabo: "I'm Mad at you worse i

envy your relationship with Nhlakanipho. Phela you guys are goals"

Me: "Well there's no me and Nhlakanipho anymore" I mutter standing up

Lethabo: "You'll get back to each other, don't worry" I sighed

Me: "Let's go to Class"

.....

CHAPTER 44

NHLAKANIPHO

I couldn't Believe it. How can she do something like this? I didn't want to confront her as yet! It's too early for such. I made my way

out of the car to buy a drink. I walked out of the shop and bump to someone

"I'm sorry...I... I'm sorry" I helped her out with her papers which were scattered around the floor.

Me: "It's Ohk Sisi"

Her: "I'm always Clumsy" She was in a panick mode but I didn't find anything she could worry about.

We were both at fault

Me: "Hey it's Ohk" We both looked up and she looked at me for a while before she ran her eyes around.

Her: "I should go, I have an

important meeting to attend" I cleared my throat stepping back from her

Me: "Cool, I'm sorry again" I say walking away from her. I went to the parking lot and climb in my car. As I was about to press the accelerator, I saw the same woman who I bumb into

Me: "Seems like we're crossing paths many times" She smiled at me so Innocently

Her: "Yeah, seems like it" She sigh walking to her Audi Q5. I looked at her then pressed the accelerator. In few minutes I was outside the house, I'm

thinking of buying an apartment since yesterday. I really can't keep on having sex in this house. I walked inside and found Mom drinking wine as she was settled down the couch.

Me: "Hey Mom" I kissed her cheek settling down next to her

Mom: "Morning baby, Hectic day" I nod with a faint smile

Me: "You could say that"

Mom: "Mmh, I received an invitation from the Dubes. They are holding a ceremony for the girls" I nod

Me: "Yes, It will take place in KZN though" I tell her and she narrow

her eyes at me

Mom: "What's wrong baby?" I looked at her confused.

Me: "What do you mean Mom?"

Mom: "As much as you want to cover the pain you're feeling, I can see through you Nhlakanipho" I sighed leaning towards the couch.

Me: "Nosi and I broke up" I felt a slap on my cheek and I

immediately looked at her

Me: "Mom! What is that for?"

Mom: "How can you break her virginity when you're about to break up with her"

Me: "We were already on a

break, she insisted that I must

make love to her and I.. I wanted to be her first incase she date another guy" She huffed angrily.

Mom: "You use your dick to think instead of your mind Nhlakanipho, I'm sure she wasn't thinking straight" I pout, Something I don't usually do but this here is my mom. I could express my childish side to her.

Me: "I'm glad I was the one who took her virginity Though" I felt a slap. Again! "Mom" I whined.

Mom: "I want you to start thinking with your mind, Nithanda ucansi Nhlakanipho Maan" [You

love sex]

Me: "Mom aaay" I stood up as I chuckled

Mom: "I'm not laughing, Fix this"

Me: "How Mom?"

Mom: "You're letting your pride do the talking, You're inlove with Nosi but you're a fool. Fix your relationship Maan" She said sipping her wine.

MAPULA

Thato: "So Miss Slay" I looked at him

Me: "Futsek Thato!!!"

Thato: "Aaay whatever!"

Mbali: "So You're actually going to

KZN tomorrow?" Dad went report to the office about that so we're actually leaving.

Me: "Yes"

"Hello" I looked up, it was a nerd child who's so dirty

Me: "Yini wena nobubi" [What is it you ugly thing] She looked down playing with her fingers

Her: "There's a man who's looking for Mapula" I looked at her and huffed

Me: "Cool now walk along" I looked at the squad then stood up

"Guess I'm needed" I walked away to the school gate. There stood a BMW, I smiled walking out

of the school. The person climbed out, Mandoba!

Mandoba: "Hey"

Me: "It's you? I didn't expect to see you"

Mandoba: "I was just missing you"

Me: "Mmmh" I bit my lower lip

Mandoba: "You busy?" I shook my head

Me: "No"

Mandoba: "We can leave right? To a quiet place and... to do some things" He said licking his lip

Me: "Mmmh Yeah" I walked over to climb in his car.

NOSIBUSISO

Lethabo: "I'll miss your naïve self"
I chuckled softly looking at her
Me: "I'll be back next Monday, It won't be that bad"

Lethabo: "I'm still going to miss you though" I shrugged my shoulders as we made our way out.

Me: "Let's go, I need to do some parking" We walked on the street, I wasn't traveling with a transport afterschool.

"Hi" I looked up, it was Qhawe

Me: "What are you doing here?"

Qhawe: "I came to talk to you?"

Me: "For what!? I've never met someone so stupid! We both know

I've never slept with you and you go around posting nasty about me" I hissed

Qhawe:"I didn't mean to"

Me:"Fuck you Qhawe!Fuck your friends!Fuck your little dick and fuck yourself! Don't ever contact me or anything hear that?Or you'll be an example that no one messes with me"I say pointing him

Qhawe:"But I---" I spit on his face

Me:"But what?Fokof Maan"I walked away from his sight.

Lethabo cleared her throat and I looked at her

Lethabo: "I'm not saying anything
Nicki Bella" I laughed at that,
unexpected!!!

MAPULA

Mandoba: "That was great! You're
always great" I smiled as I
walked to the bathroom. I
showered then walked back to
the bathroom finding a folded
paper

'I got to run, will see you' there
was R5 00.00 on the side table.
Me: "Nice!" I wore my uniform
walking out. I called a cab which
came in few minutes then dropped
me at home.

Me: "Good Day"

Bontle: "Good Day"

Aunt: "Akenime nesingisi" [Wait with English] I rolled my eyes

Me: "You should get used to this then" I tell her

Aunt: "Mnx" She walked away from our sight

Bontle: "You should calm down a little" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "Whatever!"

Bontle: "Have you thought about what we talked about?" I looked at her

Me: "I'm not doing it, that's final!"

Bontle: "Mapula i--" I rolled my eyes walking upstairs leaving her.

I took my phone dialing Sizwe's number. It went straight to voicemail and I sighed throwing it on the bed.

NOSIBUSISO

It was now in the Evening, I didn't join the rest of the family for dinner. I didn't feel like eating.

Nomsa: "Hey" I smiled as she walked in followed by Thando

Thando: "Hey" I smiled looking at them

Me: "What's happening?"

Nomsa: "We're spending the night here"

Me: "You didn't have to" Thando

took out a big picnic basket as Nomsa placed a fleece on the floor. They placed everything on the floor, pillows, Junk, wine and a Laptop. I giggled looking at them Me: "This is just unnecessary" Nomsa: "Come let's cry together baby sis" I smiled settling on the pillow and they did too.

.....

CHAPTER 45

NOSIBUSISO

They woke us up in the early hours of the morning, I was really enjoying my sleep but there was nothing I could do. We all did our

hygiene process of then got Ready to leave.

Me: "I don't understand why we had to wake up around this time" I sulk dragging my suitcase downstairs.

Mlu: "Stop sulking let's go Princess" We made our way to the car. Dad was the one who'll be driving and the other car will be driven by Michael (the driver).

The journey was long and tiring. We kept on making stops at the garages to use the toilet and buy some snacks, eventually I fell asleep. I felt someone poking me
Me: "Mmmh what?" I say opening

my eyes with a yawn

Thando: "We're here" I nod looking out of the window. This was indeed a village.

Me: "I thought we're going home, my mother's home" I asked Dad

Mlu: "It's close by, and you girls are not going there" I sighed

Me: "Why?"

Mlu: "You'll be getting Ready for the ceremony" I thought the ceremony will take place on

Saturday. I shut my mouth and got out of the car. Nomsa made her from the other car, she looked at me and smiled

Me: "What?" I asked her.

Nomsa: "You're so cute" She huffed turning her attention to Dad

"You're going to my Mom? I'm so not ready for the Drama"

Mlu: "Everything will go accordingly, let's go and introduce you girls" We walked inside the yard which was big. It had rondovels, big houses all around the yard.

Nomsa: "Why is this yard so big?"

Mlu: "Your Grandfather had 4 wives" I gasped as I looked at him

Me: "What?"

Mlu: "Yes, My mother was the Third wife "

Me: "Are they all Late?" He shook his head

Mlu: "No, Two of the wives are here" I nod with understanding. I wouldn't want to see myself in a polygamy marriage, I'd die!

Mlungisi knocked a few times then the door was pulled open.

Me: "Kanti where's the rest of the people?" I whispered to Nomsa

Nomsa: "They're coming" She

whispered back and I nod. We walked inside the house which I believe it's a family house.

One of the man: "Mlungisi nguwenalo?" [Is that you]

Mlu: "Yebo Malume yimina" [Yes

Uncle it's me]

Him: "Aaw Ngane

kaPhelisani!" [Phelisani's

child] These old names sucks.

There were two women who were introduced as our Aunts then we were also introduced

Aunt Nel: "Asambeni zingane

zam, kfanele niye ngekameleni

lapho nizohlala ngakhona" [Let's

go my children, let's go to the

bedroom where you'll be settled

in] We followed Aunt Nel, she's my

father's step sister. We walked

outside to this rondovel

Aunt Nel: "Ngiyathenga

ningamatshitshi" [I believe you

girls are virgins] I almost dropped dead. I haven't told anyone about losing my virginity and I wasn't planning on telling. I would have to lie

Me: "Yebo ngilitshitshi" [Yes I'm a virgin]

Nomsa: "Mina ngishadile, angisiyilona itshitshi" [I'm married, I'm not a virgin]

Aunt Nel: "Kushukuthi wena

Nomsa ngekhe ugcoke

umzanyana, uzobakhona nje

kuphela kulomemulo" [That means

you won't wear the cows placenta,

you'll just participate in the

ceremony]

MLUNGISI

Me: "Kfanele siye kwankosi" [We have to go to the Nkosi's Household]

Uncle: "Kulungile Asambeni" [It's Ok let's go] I was nervous. I don't know what to expect from that family. We drove using my car and we finally arrived after a some few minutes

Uncle: "Yikhona la?" [Is it here]

Me: "Yebo" [Yes]

We found Martha who looked at me like I'm some kind of a ghost. I shook my head as we stood next to her.

Me: "Sawbona" [Greetings]

Martha: "Yebo Mlungisi, Wuwena lo?" [Greeting, it this you] I nod

Martha: "We may go in" We walked inside the house as I allowed my Uncle to do the talking "Ingane yam ayenzelwa Umemulo" [You won't do the ceremony for my child]

Me: "I don't want any problems or some sorts Martha"

Martha: "You didn't pay the damages for her"

Me: "I didn't know she exist! And Nomsa is no longer a part of this family so that doesn't matter anymore! We just want you to

support her"

Martha: "Fine!" This wasn't so hard!

NOSIBUSISO

We were settled on a grass mat,
It was so Boring if you ask me
and I wasn't ready for this.

Aunt Nel: "Ngifuna ukunifundisa
ukuba bafazi" [I want to teach
you girls about being women] I nod
as I looked at down

Me: "Yebo Auntie" [Yes]

Aunt Nel: "Ngiyathemba niyakwazi
ukwenza imisebenzi

yasendlini" [I'm sure you know how
to do domestic work] We both nods

"Kuyawashiwa,kuyaphekwa nakho konke lokho" [You wash,cook and all that]

Me:"Yebo Auntie"

Aunt Nel:"Yebo a--"The door was suddenly pushed open. She sighed and looked up

Aunt Jabulile:"Sawbona weNel" [Greetings]

Aunt Nel:"Yebo Jabulile" [Yes Jabulile]

Aunt Jabulile:"Ngibuya emfuleni,abaphasi bayasivumela" [I just came back from the river,The ancestors are allowing us]

Aunt Nel:"Kuhle lokho

Jabulile" [That's good]

Aunt Jabulile: "Ithi ngiyolungisa utjhwala besintu" [Let me go and fix the traditional beer] She said as she walked out. Aunt Nel sighed as she turned and looked at us

Aunt Nel: "As I was saying---"

NHLAKANIPHO

I called the head of HR Telling her that there's someone who needs to be transferred to another field. I then hanged up and made my way downstairs

Me: "Hey Mom"

Mom: "Hello Baby, Ain't you going

to KZN?"

Me: "I'll travel on Friday, there's something I need to sort out"

Mom: "Ohk, Let me go and prepare for dinner" I nod dialing Mlungisi's number

Mlu: "Hey man"

Me: "You sound tired"

Mlu: "Things here ain't easy, I'm trying so hard to do everything accordingly"

Me: "Oh man I wish I was there"

Mlu: "It's Ohk, I'll see you when you come down here"

Me: "Sho" I hung up

.....

CHAPTER 46

NOSIBUSISO

It is the eve of the ceremony and I'm scared. Izipelesi walked inside my hut covered in blankets. One of them: "Let's go outside" I nod as I stood up following them behind as Nomsa followed too. We had to welcome the cow which was a gift then we went back to the hut. They started to sing while I joined them as we sang throughout and I was really getting tired. In the middle of the night we left the hut completely naked until we made it to the river, the coldness was so thick. We sat there while singing

until in the morning.

We walked back to the house so we could get ready for the ceremony.

They were dressing up In different Zulu attires, single young girls wore grass-reed beads embellished skirts and short hair only, while engaged women covered their breasts and grew their hair. Married women had to fully cover up in cowhide skirt and izicolo, a circular shaped cotton and grass hat. Yes, zulu clothes are that interesting. I was in my bare breasts and a cowhide skirt and the beads which suited me

perfectly.

Aunt Jabulile: "Ufana no Nomasonto" [You look like Nomasonto] I smiled

Me: "Abaningi bathi ngifana nobaba" [Many says I look like Dad]

Aunt Jabulile: "Umzimba ngu Nomasonto asakhula, kodwa ubuso ngu Mlungisi azihlalele" [Your body looks like Nomasonto while she was growing up, the face is the reflection of Mlungisi] I chuckled as I sat down as Aunt Nel made her way inside

Aunt Nel: "Kfanele ngikufake umzanyana" [I have to put the

Cow's placenta on you] I nod as she walked over to me and made me wear a freshly removed placenta of a cow around my neck. Aunt Jabulile: "Yawa kusho ukuthi uwenzile ucansi ungashadanga" [If it splits it means you have engaged in extramarital sex] I nod so nervous and scared.

NHLAKANI PHO

Mom: "I can't wait to see u Nosi in her Zulu attire" I smiled as my heart beat out of my chest when I thought about it.

Me: "There's a problem Mom" I

sighed looking at her.

Mom: "Yini?" [What]

Sizwe: "Usesi woMemulo akaselona itshitshi" [Nosi is no longer a virgin] Mom gasped and looked at me

Mom: "How can I forget about such thing!? Aaaw weMa!"

Me: "I don't know where to do, That really didn't cross my mind when I took her virginity" I was now stressed about this. It didn't cross my mind indeed.

Mom: "Imisebenzi wakho lo Nhlakanipho, you shouldn't have broke her virginity" [It's all your work]

Me: "I..I have forgotten" we finally arrived at the Dube household. There were lot of people and girls who were dancing around

Mom: "They're so beautiful" She looked around then turned her attention to me "I should go and look for the ladies, U Nosi akfanelanga agcoke umzanyana" [Isn't suppose to wear a Cow's placenta] I nod as she made her way to the house.

MAPULA

We were dressed in Zulu traditional attire, it looks so good

In me. I wasn't allowed to go to the hut I don't know why. I walked to the kitchen so I could have some beers.

Aunt Nel: "Haw ntombazana" [Aaw Girl] I turned to look at her

Me: "What is it?"

Aunt Nel: "Hamba uyondeda abanye" [Go and help the rest]

she says as she walked out. I sighed as I took a can of a beer and gulped it down, I couldn't finish it so I placed the remaining beer on the cabinet as I walked out.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Sawbona Mapula" [Greetings]

Me: "Greetings Ma"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Didn't you see
oAuntie?"

Me: "I don't know where they
went"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Oh" She walked
away from me. I walked out of
the house and came across with
Sizwe who was with Nhlakanipho.

Me: "Hey" My eyes were on Sizwe

Nhla: "Hey, I.. I'll be looking for
Mlungisi" Sizwe nods and

Nhlakanipho walked out of our
sight.

Me: "Hey Sizwe"

Sizwe: "Hi"

Me: "It's been long"

Sizwe: "Yesh, we should talk"

Me: "I'll be waiting" he nods

Sizwe: "Let me go, I'll call" He walked away. I sighed and I made my way to the other ladies who were the 'It'

THANDO

I bumped into someone on my way to the house, I hissed looking up.

It was someone I have always wished to meet. He's been sending me his pictures and I did too so I knew how he looked like. He was more handsome in person.

Me: "S... Sizwe"

Sizwe: "Thando" I scanned him and

my eyes stuck on his face

Me: "You look more handsome in person" I say unexpectedly. He chuckled

Sizwe: "And you look more beautiful in person" I smiled

Me: "What are you doing here?"

Sizwe: "I came to support a family friend, Mlungisi is a family friend" I nod "You?"

Me: "I came to support Nomsa, she's my best friend"

Sizwe: "I see, we should talk"

Me: "Yeah we should"

Sizwe: "Let me not keep you, I'll see you around" I nod with a smile as he walked away. God!

NOSIBUSISO

Men looked so handsome in their Zulu traditional attire. Their attire consist of feathers and animal skins with a front apron (isinene) and a rear one (ibheshu) to cover the genitals. Only royalties are allowed to wear the leopard's skin, and headbands are purely for married men. We settled in my hut as we were served our food. Traditional food! It was the abundance of food, the abundance of porridge, fruit and grain beers and amazi the curdled milk. The food was also

very spicy and tasty which is a good accompaniment to the music and laughter. Umaskhandi was playing outside as the rest of the people sang throughout. We ate then rested a bit while we engaged in laughter and joy. It was only Me, Nomsa, Aunt Nel and Aunt Jabulile with the rest of Izipelesi. My hut was far from the Ceremony so no one could easily get to us but the noise was too much for us to hear.

Aunt Nel: "Isikhathi sokuyaphandle" [It's time to go outside] I nod as we stood up. We made our way outside then

they gave me a spear which I had to throw in front of different people who were required to present gifts. After Omkhonto, we had to dance. Mrs Mhlongo walked over to us

Mrs Mhlongo: "I've been looking for you! We need to---"

Aunt Nel: "Nosi hamba uyosina, ngisakhuluma noMaMhlongo" [Go and dance while I talk to MaMhlongo]

Mrs Mhlongo: "I---" I walked away from them leaving them to talk. Izipelesi started to dance then I walked over to the center as I started dancing. I kept on

dancing until I felt something fall from my neck.

"Haaawww" The sound came from the crowd and I stopped as I looked down at myself. That's when I realized that the Cow's placenta has spilt. I didn't know what to do at this moment, I just scanned the crowd before I ran out of the yard while a voice kept on calling me from behind. Tears started to drop as I continued to run.

.....

CHAPTER 47

NHLAKANI PHO

I called after her as she ran out of the yard, I didn't care about what people would say right at the moment. All I wanted was to get to her and embrace her, even though I broke things off with her I'm still in love with her. She ran up to the river and sat down near it.

Me: "Sweetheart!" I say as I breath out stepping next to her. I immediately pulled her in for a hug as my heart was in pain.

Nosi: "I...I... It's so embarrassing Nhlakanipho, what am I going to tell my father" She cried in pain as I sighed pulling her closer

Me: "We're in this together"

Nosi: "You don't understand
Nhlakanipho, you won't
understand"

Me: "I understand Sweetheart, I
betrayed Mlungisi so I
understand everything"

She pulled out of my embrace and
looked at me

Me: "Please make me forget a
little" I looked at her, she was so
beautiful. The beautiful human I
have ever laid my eyes on

Me: "Nosi I---" She interrupted me
by smashing her lips on mine, as
much as I wanted to pull out of
the kiss... I missed her! I

responded as we were already on our feet! I placed my hands on her waist as I deepened the kiss
[REMOVED PART]

Nosi: "Thank you"

Me: "Did you enjoy it?"

Nosi: "It wasn't as painful as the first time so yeah, it was incredible though you're so big down there" I chuckled as we laid so peaceful on my Jacket. We had our clothes on, I have never thought I would have sex in a place like this.

Me: "It's a family thing" she chuckled

Nosi: "Yeah" it went silence for a

while "What does it mean?"

Me: "What?"

Nosi: "This thing?"

Me: "Nosi we talked about this..."

Nosi: "No, you talked and I listened"

Me: "Let's not complicate things as they're already complicated"

Nosi: "I understand, let's get back"

Me: "Mmmh" I shook my head as she rested her head on my chest

"Let's enjoy this" She nods without saying anything

NOMSA

My father was fuming with anger, all he wanted was answers but Nosi and Nhlakanipho were nowhere to be found.

Mlu: "Where the hell is Nosibusiso!" He shouts

Aunt Nel: "Awkahle ngolakaka we Mlungisi" [Stop with anger]

Mlu: "I have to deal with both of them, bayangihlanyela" [They're crazy]

Me: "Baba awume ulaka, you have to talk with them don't jump on violence" [Father stop with anger]

Mlu: "Awuthule Nomsa, Ngifuna ukubalingisa laba" [Shut up, I want to fix them] I sighed as i

walked out of the house. I know Nhlakanipho is with Nosi wherever he is so she's safe. My eyes landed on Mvelo, I smiled and walked over to him.

Me: "What are you doing here?"

Mvelo: "I came to support my wife" I grinned as he planted a kiss on my lips

Me: "My Dad is angry and when he sees you" I shook my head "He'll eat you alive"

Mvelo: "What!?" She panicked and I laughed

Me: "Don't mind that, he won't do anything to you"

Mvelo: "Your Dad can throw

punches!"

Me: "Where did you get that?"

Mvelo: "I saw him punching Nhlakanipho, eey that was terrible" I laughed

Me: "Don't worry about him" he nods as I lead him to my hut

MAPULA

I laughed on the phone, I was talking to Mbali and I was telling her about what happened today.

Me: "Princess is not a virgin"

Mbali: "That's sad, she should kill herself" I laughed again as I looked at the door which was opening.

Me: "I got to go" I hunged up and looked at MaBontle

Bontle: "Hi"

Me: "Hy"

Bontle: "Are you still against my plan? We should just go on with the plan and everything will be sorted" I suddenly sniffed and looked at her

Me: "You should abort your plan, it won't working"

Bontle: "It will work, I know it will" I sighed

Me: "Leave me out of it, I don't want anything to do with your plan"

Bontle: "I'll be giving you some space" She said as she walked out

NOSIBUSISO

As much as I didn't want this to end, I knew it had to end one way or another.

Nhla: "Let's go"

Me: "I don't want this to end

Nhlakanipho, I miss you so much"

Nhla: "This is hard on me than you can ever imagine Nosi" I sighed and stood up then started to fix my attire on!

Me: "Let's go" I said already on my way

Nhla: "Nosi don't be like that

please" he shouts behind me

Me: "Asambe Nhlakanipho" [Let's go]

Nhla: "Sweetheart let's talk first"

I stopped and turned to face him

Me: "You made it clear that I'm no longer part of your life! You don't love me anymore!"

Nhla: "You're twisting my words"

Me: "Whatever Nhlakanipho, I don't know why I'm in love with you like this" I huffed walking away, Again!

Nhla: "Wait!" He pulled me and I landed on his chest, he looked down at me.

Me: "What is it huh!? You want t--

--"He shut me up by smashing his lips on mine, I placed my hands on his neck bringing him down to my face as I deepened the kiss.

.....

CHAPTER 48

NOSIBUSISO

I pulled out and slapped him. He held his cheek narrowing his sexy eyes on me. I Huffed as a tear escaped, I wiped it off and he pulled me on his chest as i rested my head crying. I was crying for his love! Knowing how much I'm so in love with him drives me to the edge. I was crying for him being my father's best friend! I

was crying for him giving up on up but mostly i was crying for the love he always showed me lately; before everything.

Nhla: "I'm sorry" His deep voice whispered as he held me tighter. I inhaled his cologne within my cries as I didn't want to let go.

Me: "I love you Nhlakanipho" I say with my raspy voice which came a little bit harder

Nhla: "I know, and I love you either sweetheart so much"

Me: "So why are you doing this?"

Nhla: "You need this more than I do sweetheart, when I love you I want to love all the pieces of

you" He sighed and slowly looked at me straight in my eyes making me to shift from his chest

Me: "But I----" He interrupted me before i could finish talking

Nhla: "We will get through this, all i want you to know is that in everything you do... You're mine" I sighed as my heart skipped a beat. I should be angry or something but I'm glad he still call me his.

Me: "And you're still mine" I blubber it out and he smiled

Nhla: "I'll always be yours sweetheart, let's head back to the House" I sighed and nod as he

takes my hand into his. We started to walk away.

Me: "Don't be a stranger"

Nhla: "I won't be, but we need to keep out distance" He sighed, deeply "Distance from each other" I swallowed the thick lump on my throat and nod

Me: "I understand" I sighed and we walked silently. No one dared to say a word to one another. We were few houses from the House and the yard was empty. I looked at Nhlakanipho so nervously as he squeeze my hand assuring me that everything will be fine. I looked down in a little relief as we

walked in, stepping inside the house of the Dubes. My heart started again, Beating out of my chest

Nhla: "Relax Sweetheart" I breath in as we walked in further. I held the handle and as I opened the door, my eyes landed on everyone who was settled around the living room but there was no sign of my father.

Nomsa: "Nosi" She whispered standing up to meet me halfway.
Me: "Where's Dad?" I ask looking at her

Nomsa: "He's in his room, he should b----" She was interrupted by the

opening of the door. I turned to look at the person and I found Dad who looked at me. A tear suddenly escaped from my eye, I looked at him and he held that glare. My eyes screamed 'I'm sorry' but his screamed 'why?'. I understood his frustrations, he's not angry or anything but he's disappointed. I once told him that I will be a woman when I get married to my husband, but now things have changed. They rapidly changed!

Mlu: "Nosibusiso"

Me: "Baba" [Father]

Mlu: "Who is he?" The last time we

talked I broke up with Nhlakanipho, obviously he didn't think it's him.

Me: "Baba..." [Father] My voice came out unexpected.

Mlu: "Nguba?" [Who is it] My eyes went straight to Nhlakanipho who was next to the door and I was few inches from him.

Me: "Ngyaqolisa Baba" [I'm sorry Father] His eyes were invisible that he was defeated.

Mlu: "I'll be in my room" He walked away and I looked at Nomsa as tears started to drop.

Nomsa: "Sisi" [Sister]

Me: "He hates me Nomsa, I saw it

in his eyes"

Bontle: "You were old enough to open your stinky legs to a grown man old enough to be your father gaaah" I love him! That's why I opened this stinky legs as you say it, but I was so emotional to say it out loud.

Nomsa: "Don't mind her Nosi, Dad loves you so much and he wouldn't hate you"

Me: "He does"

Nomsa: "He's Just disappointed, give her time" Nhlakanipho stepped closer and looked at me.

Nhla: "Your father loves you, if there's someone he has to hate

it's me"

Me: "Nhlakan---"

Nhla: "Shush sweetheart, He loves you and that's what important... I love you too" He whispered the last part and walked out.

NHLAKANIPHO

I knocked on his door and he opened. He looked at me for a while before uttering a word

Mlu: "What do you want?"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Mlu: "You don't mean it, it's useless to apologize for something you were doing intentionally" I sighed and looked straight up to him

Me: "I love her"

Mlu: "Who?"

Me: "Your daughter, I love her
Mlungisi and it hurts knowing
that I'm in love with my best
friend's daughter"

Mlu: "She's young! She doesn't
know anything about love! You're
not her type and she has bigger
things to focus on"

Me: "I know Kodwa I love her,
I'm stupid I know" I Huffed "I
let her go"

Mlu: "What?"

Me: "We broke up, she has to live
her teenage life and I know that
she won't do that with me"

around"

Mlu: "Please leave"

Me: "Fine, but man I want you to know that Nosi is special and she needs you. She's so amazing man and my love for her is too deep, If it would happen for me to choose between her and you. I would choose her, not because I don't value our friendship "I took a deep breath" It's because she will always come first in everything" I say and mean every word of it.

Mlu: "Leave" I turned as I stepped out.

NOSIBUSISO

The next morning I woke up in my bedroom, Things were so awkward yesterday that everyone decided to go their own way. I woke up so early to prepare breakfast for everyone, the family and our guests.

Aunt Nel: "Hlala phansi" [Sit down]
it was only me and her in the living room. I sat down and looked down at my hands

Me: "Auntie"

Aunt Nel: "Wangiphoda Nosi, Awukafanelanga ukhulume amanga ngalento" [I'm so disappointed Nosi, you didn't have

to lie about this]

Me: "I'm... I'm sorry Auntie"

Aunt Nel: "Ubabwako

uyakuthanda, Uphowekile nje

kphela" [Your father loves you,

he's just disappointed] I nod

Me: "Yebo Auntie" [Yes]

Aunt Nel: "Kfanele kukhokhwe

iFine yaloku bese kufunwa iinkomo

kuboMfana okuphule idolo" [A fine

needs to be paid for this then

demand cows from the boy who

broke your virginity]

Me: "Ngyezwa Auntie" [I hear you]

Aunt Nel: "Kulungile ke, Asilungise

la" [It's Ok then, let's fix here]

Me: "Yebo Auntie" [Yes Auntie]

A WEEK LATER.....

.....

CHAPTER 49

NOSIBUSISO

As usual I woke up to get ready for school, i did all the necessary things then head downstairs for breakfast. We came back yesterday afternoon after all the ceremony once again to pay for a fine. They haven't said anything about the damages but I think My Father will talk about it soon. My relationship with him; my father is still cracky. I sighed as i settled on the chair while Bontle

was dishing out for us. Everyone walked downstairs.

Mapula: "Good Morning" she smiled as she settled around the table.

Me: "Morning" I sighed and started eating

Mlu: "The Mhlongos will be here this Saturday to pay for the damages" He threw the bomb on the table. I looked down as I stopped eating.

Me: "Mmmh" I cleared my throat.

Bontle: "I have some news" I didn't want to hear anything from her. I've learnt not to trust anyone in this house; especially since I don't know where Mapula

stands anymore.

Mlu: "What is it?"

Bontle: "I'm pregnant" It went
silence!

What!? She's pregnant!? Is it
true or she's lying? You can never
trust this woman!

Mlu: "That's... That's
great! Baby" A wide smile flashed
across his face as he looked at
MaBontle. I smiled; fake smiled
as I looked at her.

Me: "Congratulations"

Bontle: "You're going to be a great
sister" i nod with my fake smile

Me: "Of Couse I am be to" I
sighed as I stood up "I'll be on

my way, Michael is waiting" I threw a glare at Dad then at Mapula before I walked out heading to the car which Michael is driving. Mapula walked in few minutes after as she chewed her bubble gum settling on the seat.

Mapula: "Hey Mike"

Michael: "Hey Princess" I rolled my eyes as I looked out of the window. The drive was so quiet, the only thing which made noise was Mapula's bubble gum which was annoying. Finally, we arrived at school and I jumped out.

Me: "Thank you Michael! See you

tomorrow morning" I wave leaving them behind. I found Lethabo on the gate and she smiled meeting me halfway.

Lethabo: "Oh dear friend, I missed you"

Me: "I see that I was missed" I grinned as she pulled me in for a hug, I hugged her back then we pulled out.

Lethabo: "You're glowing"

Me: "I received some sex during the ceremony" I whispered to her and she screamed causing me to place my hand on her mouth to prevent her from doing such

"Don't!"

Lethabo: "Oh My Goddess who is it?" I pulled my hand from her mouth.

Me: "Nhlakanipho" She popped her eyes "Oh Don't judge me please, I don't regret a single second of it" She grinned

Lethabo: "Oh my best friend is turning to a sexual addict! Or you're just addicted to Nhlakanipho's dick" I smiled placing my hands over my face.

Me: "Please don't, the guy is huge and I he did me good" I still had my hands on my face, she pulled my hands from my face and looked at me.

Lethabo: "You say?" I nod with a smile

Me: "Is it normal to a first timer? I mean I don't know these things but I damned! He's that great" I breath out imagining it!

Lethabo: "I can feel you, My man is a beast in the sex department and he made me an addict so I don't blame nor judge you" I sighed.

Me: "God!" I shook my head and she held my hand while giggling.

Lethabo: "Let's go to Class!"

NHLAKANI PHO

I paged through my personal diary then breath out before I placed it on the side. While at it, a knock came through and I invited the person in.

Cynthia: "Good Afternoon Mr" I smiled, I got used to Cynthia the minute I stepped in this building years ago and I really like her personal. She's more like a sister than an employee.

Me: "Morning Madam" She smiled widely

Cynthia: "There's a woman who's here to see you" I frowned confused

Me: "Who is it?"

Cynthia: "She's...uhmm Nontsikelelo Nkosi if I'm not mistaken" I shook my head

Me: "I don't know anyone by that name"

Cynthia: "I think she's here for business" I nod

Me: "You may show her in and bring something light to drink"

Cynthia: "Yes Mr!" She walked away and few minutes later another knock came through. I invited the Person in and the heels clicked in, the fragrance filled the office as that sweet voice filled in.

"Good Afternoon Sir" I looked up and my eyes landed on the woman

I met a week ago, she was in her simple clothes though she looked so breathtaking. I smiled and stood up

Me: "Good After, I'm Nhlakanipho Mhlongo" My heart was literally betraying me because it was yearning for its owner; Nosibusiso.

Her: "Nontsikelelo Nkosi" She held out her hand for a handshake and I shook it.

Me: "Well you may sit" I say settling on my seat

Ntsiki: "Thank you" she sat down. She was so beautiful in her curly brown hair, she was a Goddess but my Queen took the cup. Nosibusiso

screamed Beautiful, Gorgeous in every corner. I don't think I have ever met someone so beautiful than her, even this lady she's not as beautiful as Nosi; My Queen.

Ntsiki: "Mr Mhlongo" I snapped out of it and looked at her.

Me: "You're beautiful" I blubber that out and she popped her eyes.

Ntsiki: "I'm... I... I... Thank you I guess" I cleared my throat and looked at her

Me: "Do you remember me?"

Ntsiki: "Do I have a reason to?" I smirked, remembering the first time I met Nosi. She was so cocky and rude which made her so cure

in her little self.

Me: "We met a week ago, you were driving an Audi Q5" I say.

Ntsiki: "Oh the guy I bumped into while I was heading to a very important meeting" She smiled at me.

Me: "Yes! I'm that guy and it seems like the Universe is telling us something"

Ntsiki: "What Mr Mhlongo?" Her shiny eyes looked at me not leaving my face, something Nosi would do! Why do I think about her in everything I see!? Nosi!!!

Me: "We can do Lunch? After this"

Ntsiki: "Or maybe not!"

Me: "Come on Miss Nkosi, the universe is telling us some and I think we should listen to it"

Ntsiki: "Fine, just Lunch nothing more"

Me: "Nothing More Miss Nkosi" I smiled and she smiled back.

MAPULA

We were on the toilets sniffing a Cocaine which I was getting used to. This thing is great and I forgot about many things. The fact that I have no family, what would happen if the Dube family decides to kick me out? The fact that I was raped countless

times! I'm broken and no one seems to notice it. I've just realised how broken I am, I don't deserve a beautiful life. I'm a trash! Something which needs to be used and thrown! I sniffed a line after a line thinking about my life. Sleeping with married man, having a man which I don't deserve.

Mbali: "That's enough Maps" I shook my head taking a line.

Me: "I'm enjoying this"

Mbali: "You need to calm down" I took another line.

Me: "No, It's after school so there's no problem"

Precious: "Mapula take it easy" I took a line as I felt a pain traveling on my nose to my forehead causing me to close my eyes.

Mbali: "Mapula"

I dropped down and took the pain on my forehead which was too much.

Precious: "Oh my God Mapula are you Ohk?" They kept on shaking me but I couldn't respond. They were slowly fading from me, I couldn't reach them until I let my eyes shut!

NOSIBUSISO

We walked out of the school yard and head to the road.

Me: "I think I should see someone you know"

Lethabo: "Someone?"

Me: "Not a Shrink" I shook my head "No, someone like a pastor or something" I sighed and looked at her.

Lethabo: "Is that a good thing?"

Me: "I think, I want to be my old self Lethabo"

Lethabo: "I think you should work on your Real self" I turned to look at her confused

Me: "What do you mean?"

Lethabo: "You were brave because

you wanted to survive on the streets nothing more or less. You were holding on the strong face because you had no one, right now you have a family and people to look up to" She sighed and narrowed her eyes on me "Deep down you're a humble person Nosi, you're full of life and you're a wonderful person. Find your true self, not someone you were claiming to be on the streets" I nod with understanding. My phone immediately rang as Mapula's name flashed on my phone screen. Me: "Mapila" A cry pieced on the

speaker causing me to panick
"Mapula what's wrong?"

.....

CHAPTER 50

NOSIBUSISO

I rushed inside the Hospital and found Mapula's friends on the corridor. I took a deep breath and I approached them, I just got off the phone with Dad and he's on his way.

Me: "Where is she?"

Mbali: "Nosi..." Their eyes were red

Me: "Where is she?" I had no time to fall in a conversation.

Precious: "They're working on

her?" I sighed and narrowed my eyes on them

Me: "What happened? And please tell me the truth" They both dropped their head looking down. I felt a hand on my shoulder and looked up to Lethabo

Lethabo: "I'm here" She assured me with a smile. I faintly smiled then turned my attention back to the ladies

Me: "What happened?" Mbali started sobbing. I sighed as I looked at her as she sob, I'm not buying it!

Mbali: "I'm sorry Nosi"

Me: "What are you sorry for? What

happened to my sister!!?" I shout.
Precious: "She overdosed" I popped
my eyes on her, what is she
talking about?

Me: "What are you on about?"

Precious: "She overdosed, we tried
speaking to her about taking it
easy but she didn't want to listen.
She kept on crying going on and on
with the cocaine"

Me: "A cocaine?" They nod

Mbali: "Yes a cocaine" I sighed as I
slid in one of the chairs. I failed
her, again!

Lethabo: "Don't beat yourself to
it"

Mbali: "I'm sorry"

Me: "I failed her" I whispered placing my hand on my mouth preventing a sob which wanted to escap down my throat

Lethabo: "You don't have to cry, she needs you to be strong for her"

Me: "I failed her Lethabo, what kind of a sister am I?"

Lethabo: "You're a great sister, you're a wonderful person

Nosibusiso and don't doubt that" tears followed each other as they drop. I let it all out when

Lethabo pulled me in for a sudden hug.

NHLAKANIPTHO

We were driving back to the Company where she's going to take her car. We just had Lunch and it was good, I really enjoyed it. She was a fun person to be around with and it was so easy to open up with her. I didn't tell her about Linda though, I told her about Nosi and what happened between us. She was so understanding and a great listener.

Me: "I'd love to do Lunch with you again" I broke the silence as I looked at her.

Ntsiki: "I don't want to be your rebound Nhlakanipho" I sighed and held her hand.

Me: "I enjoyed spending time with you, I'd love to spend more time with you Nontsikelelo" I say to her and she looks at our hands. I shifted mine from hers and she looked up to me

Ntsiki: "I'd love to" I smiled

Me: "Thank you"

Ntsiki: "Will you be able to love someone? Someone else who's not Nosi?" I sighed and looked ahead of the road. I understand her question and I'll be honest

Me: "Honestly I don't think I will

ever love someone else more than Nosi"

Ntsiki:"Oh"

Me:"Yes,the person whom would be in a relationship with me will have to understand that my heart has its owner already"I say to her as I looked at her before fixing my eyes on the road"Nosi will always be the love of my life,I hope you understand"

Ntsiki:"Yeah"Swallowed"I understand"

Me:"I hope this won't change the way you were feeling about me a hour ago"I tease her and she chuckled

Ntsiki: "Oh come on! I wasn't feeling anything for you an hour or any hour from here"

Me: "You say?"

Ntsiki: "Yes, I'm very much happy as a single woman"

Me: "Hence you're sexually frustrated" She playfully slapped my shoulder

Ntsiki: "That's not how you say it! I trusted you to keep that secret" I laughed throwing my head back making sure not to shift my attention from the road.

Me: "Well It's just us" I threw it back and she nods looking at me again.

Ntsiki: "What does she have that you can't find in a woman older than her! Women who are your types?" I smiled widely as I looked ahead

Me: "She's arrogant, has a great heart. She gets me and she's everything! When I say everything it's because when I'm with her, I feel so complete. Nothing worries me, she's everything"

Ntsiki: "I see"

Me: "I didn't realize we're here"

Ntsiki: "Mmmh" I parked the car and she immediately climbed out.

Me: "Ntsiki!" I called her out.

Ntsiki: "I'll see you" She breath
that out heading to her car.

NOSIBUSISO

I looked at her beautiful self,
she's still beautiful in this
hospital thingy. I smiled and
squeezed her hand a little
Me: "You have to wake up
Mapula, I know I haven't been a
great sister but I promise to be
a better sister" I looked at her,
she's at peace! She looks so
unbothered "I miss you, crazy I
know but I really miss you" I felt
a hand on my shoulder then a
voice

Sizwe: "She'll be fine"

Me: "How are you?"

Sizwe: "After everything, I still care"

Me: "You don't love her anymore?"

Sizwe: "It wasn't love" I looked up to him

Me: "What do you mean?"

Sizwe: "It wasn't love, love is what you and Nhlakanipho have. What Mapula and I have is not love, I've found love"

Me: "You've found someone?" He nods

Sizwe: "She's amazing, we're taking it slow though so I'm not telling"

Me: "Are we allowed to talk about it next to her? What if she can hear us?"

Sizwe: "Let's not talk then" I nod and looked at her

Me: "She's so Beautiful"

Sizwe: "Very, She deserves love"

Me: "So much love"

Sizwe: "Where's Mlungisi and Bontle?"

Me: "They went out, but they will be back soon" I nod and stood up

Me: "I'll leave you two" I looked at Mapula before heading out. I took my phone and changed the Sim to another one which is unknown, I just need to hear his

voice then I'll be fine. It rang
then it was answered on the
second ring
Nhla: "Hello" I didn't say
anything "Is anyone there" I
hunged up and wiped off my tear
Me: "You need to let him go
Nosibusiso, you need to find
yourself and I hope it won't be
too late" I say to myself and my
phone rang again, Nhlakanipho!
Second ring it was Nomsa who
was planning on coming down to
Johannesburg.

NONTSIKELELO

I crawled on the couch as I let out a cry. What did I do to deserve such? Why can't God give me a man who'll love me?

I heard footsteps coming from the kitchen before I felt an arm wrapping itself on my shoulders.

Phindi: "What's wrong my sis*U
snuggle myself on her

Me: "The guy I met a week ago h....I met him again Sesi and we had Lunch. It is normal to fall for someone in few days?" I cry.

Phindi: "It's Normal, don't feel bad" I shook my head

Me: "Oh God!"

Phindi: "I thought this would

make you happy, Your future husband has finally been found and brought to you"

Me: "He's in love with someone

Phindi! So in love" I tell her

Phindi: "Oh sisi, I'm sorry" She

holds me tighter

Me: "His eyes said it all, he loves

her so damn much but I love him

too. I keep on falling for an

unknown person" I don't know

what's happening to me!

.....

CHAPTER 51

NHLAKANI PHO

I walked downstairs and found the family settled around the table. I sat down and greeted them as they greeted back.

Mom: "You look good" I smiled faintly

Me: "I feel good"

Mom: "Found someone special?" I chuckled briefly and looked at my plate

Me: "I've found someone but I won't say she's special, my heart is with Nosi"

Mom: "Your pride"

Me: "Mom I have needs as a man, And this woman will just keep me company so I'm passing time with

her" I honestly say, I won't say I feel something for Notsikelelo. Maybe Lust but not more than that.

Mom: "I feel sorry for Nosibusiso"

Me: "Mom please... I want to date Nosi as someone who'll be fully committed to me so clearly she still wants to play games"

Mom: "Do whatever you want Nhlakanipho, I've never seen someone so foolish as you" Sizwe chuckled, I almost forgot that he's here.

Sizwe: "He's indeed foolish, unePride" [He has pride] I threw a look at him then turned

my attention to my Mom

Me: "Let's talk about the damages Mom than talking about my pride"

Mom: "Oh Yes, Your Aunt Jessica will be here" I rolled my eyes

Me: "The Drama she's going to bring Mom"

Mom: "She's your Aunt though so there's really nothing we could do"

Me: "Yeah, is Uncle Sam coming?"

Mom: "Yes, They're going to handle everything" I nod

Me: "I trust Uncle Sam though I'm not sure about Jess"

Mom: "She's your Aunt"

Me: "I know Mom" I whined and

Sizwe laughed

Sizwe: "You're a Mama's baby

Nhlakanipho" I frowned and look at him

Me: "Don't piss me off"

Sizwe: "Whatever! I'm going to the hospital this Evening so don't expect me for dinner" He stands up

Me: "Is she fine?"

Sizwe: "I hope she pulls through, I care deeply about her and I really hope she pulls through" I nod as

he kissed Mom's Cheek "Have a wonderful dad Mom, You too

Bro" He heads out and I looked at Mom

Me: "I really hope everything will

go well on Saturday, and you can pay any amount of money they want"

Mom: "Nhlakanipho are you sure? They can milk you oo Auntie bakwa Dube" [Dube Auntiea]

Me: "Nosi's virginity was worth more than any amount of money, I'd buy the whole universe for her" Mom chuckled

Mom: "You remind me more like your Dad Nhlakanipho, He was just like you when when we met. Love sick!" I chuckled and stood up.

Me: "Oh Mom, Let me go" I kiss her cheek

Mom: "Have a great day son, and

becareful"

Me: "Of what?"

Mom: "Of losing the love of your life, Fair well I love you"

Me: "I love you too Mom" I kissed her cheek once more.

NONTSIKELELO

I pulled out on the garage and took a deep breath before walking out of the car. I made my way inside the tall building which is owned by Nhlakanipho. We'll be working on a certain plan so I'll be here as much as I can. Seeing him everyday would make me sick because there's no second where

I'm not thinking of kissing the shit out of him. Love hurts! I love him but he's in love with someone else. I fell in love with him the minute I bumped into him causing me to scatter my papers all over the floor. I was afraid to even look at him but eventually I did and I shook my head placing all the thoughts away as I stepped at the reception.

Me: "Good Morning"

Cynthia: "Miss Nkosi, Good Morning"

Me: "I'm here for Mr Mhlongo"

Cynthia: "He's expecting you" I smiled as I walked over to the

black door. His name was written in bold letters on the door which was so perfect. I knocked and he invited me in.

Me: "Good Morning Mr Mhlongo" He flashed a smile and stood up walking over to my side

Nhla: "Good Morning Ntsiki, so formal"

Me: "We're at the workplace" I say looking at his beautiful eyes. He stepped closer to me causing me to gasp for air.

Nhla: "Breath Nontsikelelo

breath" I calm myself as I looked straight in his eyes

Me: "What are you doing?" It came

as a whisper

Nhla: "I'm not doing anything, I just have an effect on you" I breath stepping away from him.

Me: "Let's get to work"

Nhla: "Cool, Let's get to work"

SIZWE

I held her soft hand. She looked at me and frowned

Thando: "You still love her?"

Me: "I care about her"

Thando: "That was not the question I ask Sizwe" I sighed

Me: "Baby I don't love her, I care about her that's all"

Thando: "You just spend too much

time with her, please Sizwe don't play games with me"

Me: "I'm not playing games with you Thando, I love you and don't ever doubt that"

Thando: "Ohk I love you too"

Me: "So I was thinking of spending the whole weekend with you"

Thando: "I thought you're going to the Dube household for the damages" I shook my head

Me: "I'm not going, The only people who'll be heading there are the Uncles and Aunts" she nods

Thando: "Ohk, but Sunday evening I'm heading back to Cape Town" I frowned

Me: "I thought you'll be moving to this side"

Thando: "Please understand Sizwe, I can't just up and leave Cape Town. I have friends, family and a job there" I sighed

Me: "You can always get a transfer"

Thando: "Don't rush it Sizwe, we've been dating for some days and I want to be sure about my decision"

Me: "I understand babe, I love you"

NOMSA

Mvelo: "Are you sure?" I nod

Me: "I want us to take it easy though, our marriage is still fragile and I don't want us to rush things"

Mvelo: "What matters is that you're willing to give us a chance, thanks baby" I smiled. It feels so good! So good and I'm willing to give him a chance. My phone rang and I answered

Me: "Mom"

Mom: "Sewakhohlwa ngathi?" [You have forgotten about us]

Me: "Mom It's not like that"

Mom: "I want us to talk about your Father, we never really got a

chance to talk about him and to him"

Me: "What's wrong Mom?"

Mom: "Sakhuluma ngalokhu Nomsa, Ngifuna ukuba ngumfazi wakwaDube" [We talked about this, I want to be a Dube wife]

Me: "Mom, Dad is married so please"

Mom: "Ukhuluma ngalomfazi weGoli, Awkahle wena" [You're talking about a Gauteng wife, wait a minute]

Me: "Let it go Mom and focus on whatever thing you were doing this these past few minutes"

Mom: "Ngiya eGoli ksasa, aykho into

ongayenza ngalokho" [I'm going to Gauteng and there's nothing you will do about it]

NOSIBUSISO

We got out of the class to the playground. I sighed as we settled on the bench

Lethabo: "I'm sorry to say this but your sister has drama"

Me: "She just didn't know what she was doing"

Lethabo: "I hate it when you're being like this"

Me: "Like what?"

Lethabo: "The church kind of a lady, it sucks!"

Me: "Whatever" I rolled my eyes taking a bite on my sandwich

Lethabo: "So I found someone you could talk to"

Me: "Who?"

Lethabo: "A pastor, he's good and he can talk to you" I nod

Me: "Thank you Lethabo"

Lethabo: "You're my friend, I'll go with you throughout the sessions"

Me: "It's not necessary"

Lethabo: "I'll be there"

Me: "Thank you, Again"

Lethabo: "You're welcome babes, I'll always be there for you" I smiled

.....

CHAPTER 52

NOSIBUSISO

We were going out this Evening for dinner, me and Lethabo. I thought this would be a great idea since I need some fresh air. I fixed my hair then applied a lip bum before heading out.

Bontle: "You going to sugar daddy" I rolled my eyes and looked at her

Me: "What do you want from me?"

Bontle: "What would I want something from you? You got nothing"

Me: "I thought you're good"

Bontle: "Maybe I have hormones, don't you think?"

Me: "Are you even pregnant? One can never know with you"

Bontle: "I'm pregnant dear daughter, Better except it" I heave a sigh as Daga walked downstairs looking so handsome.

Mlu: "Morning ladies"

Me: "Morning Dad, you look good"

Mlu: "I feel good baby, I hope you're not going to entertain any guy somewhere" I looked at him lazily.

Me: "Dad I'm not looking for any relationship"

Mlu: "Good because I don't want

you entertaining any boy, after what happened with Nhlakanipho I want you to focus on school"

Me: "Let's not talk about Nhlakanipho"

Mlu: "I don't want you near him, Nhlakanipho is a great guy baby but he's not good for you" He kissed my cheek walking to the kitchen

Bontle: "Daddy said no boys" She mocked walking away from my sight. I sent a text to Lethabo telling her about our meet up. I walked out calling a cab while at it, In few minutes we were outside of the restaurant.

Me: "Thank you" I handed him few notes before climbing out. The sky was slowly starting to be darker proving that there will be rain. I catwalked my way inside The restaurant is very quiet, a sound of a saxophone playing on the far end causing a comfortable silence. I spot Lethabo settled down and I walked over to her

Me: "Hey"

Lethabo: "Hey, You look good" I smiled

Me: "Thank you, this place is good and quiet"

Lethabo: "Very, This is the greatest place in Sandton"

Me: "I don't really travel that much"

Lethabo: "I get you, what are we having?"

Me: "Are they selling Sea food?"

Lethabo: "Definitely" I grinned taking the menu. I set my eyes on it scanning it a little.

Me: "Prawns"

Lethabo: "Same here and lemon juice, that'll be good" I nod as Lethabo signalized for a waiter to come to our table. We placed an order and started a conversation.

SIZWE

I held her hand looking at her beautiful face, she's still beautiful in the hospital dress. She had always been so beautiful, I smiled planting a kiss on her forehead. Me: "You have to wake up Mapula, everyone needs you and you still have a long way to travel" I sighed looking at her face "You're still young, you don't deserve any of this" I shook my head retraining my hand from hers "I'll see you" I walked out sending a text to Thando.

-I won't be able to come anymore, be safe I love you.

She called immediately after the

Text

Thando: "Baby"

Me: "My Love, I'm sorry I won't be able to come"

Thando: "I'm disappointed but it's fine"

Me: "I love you"

Thando: "I love you too" I walked out heading to the park. It took me few minutes to drive home.

Mom was settled on the living room with a glass of wine.

Me: "Isn't it a little bit late for wine?"

Mom: "Wine has no time" I smiled

Me: "Where's Nhlakanipho?"

Mom: "He went out for dinner, come

here" She pat next to her. I sat down looking at her beautiful face. My mom is still beautiful in her 50s

Me: "Ma"

Mom: "Yaz I miss the days where you guys were still kids" She chuckled "I can't believe you'll are grown"

Me: "Life is... Just like that"

Mom: "It sure is, How's Mapula?"

Me: "She's not responding Mom, I'm scared"

Mom: "You still love her"

Me: "No mom I---"

Mom: "It wasn't a question, You're just trying to convince yourself"

that you don't love her anymore"
I run my hands on my face.

Me: "It's complicated Mom"

Mom: "Uncomplicate it then, don't
string the poor girl Thando along
just because you weren't sure
about your feelings" I nod

Me: "I love Thando though, She's
so incredible Mom. I have known
her for some weeks on Facebook
but it felt like I've known her
forever"

Mom: "You're confused, so confused"

Me "Maybe" Lower, I said.

Mom: "Everything will work out,
just stay true to yourself" My
Mom knows how to hold these

kinds of talks and it always makes me feel better.

NONTSIKELELO

I smiled looking on the mirror. I'm so beautiful and I feel so good! I walked downstairs with a wide smile across my face.

Phindi: "You look so beautiful, gorgeous"

Me: "I feel so good, I'm not too much right?" She nods with a grin

Phindi: "Nonsense! You're just beautiful and Nhlakanipho will faint when he sees this" I smiled nervously. A knock came through and she smiled walking to attend

to it.

Phindi: "She's here, Come in" A handsome, sexy man walked inside. That could be the only Nhlakanipho Mhlongo who looked so breathtaking. I smiled nervously stepping closer to him, he had flowers.

Me: "Hi"

Nhla: "You look beautiful"

Me: "You don't look bad yourself" He handed the flowers to me.

Nhla: "This are yours"

Me: "Thank you" I took them and Phindi snatched them from me

Phindi: "I'll put them in water, I think you guys should go" She

utter and Nhlakanipho nods

Nhla: "You may" I held on his arm as he lead me out to his car, he climbed in after helping me in.

Me: "Thank you" He smiled, briefly.

Nhla: "You're welcome, again you look beautiful" I smiled looking at him, how can one be so perfect?

Me: "Thank you" In few minutes we were outside this restaurant.

Nhla: "I think the rain will be pouring soon" I looked up to the sky and indeed the sigh was there.

Me: "Are we continuing with dinner or..."

Nhla: "We're continuing" We walked

out and the restaurant was silent. The only sound which was heard was that sound of a saxophone which was playing on the far end. The moment we stepped inside his eyes ran around the restaurant then he froze with her eyes on someone. I followed his eyes they landed on this girl who looked so young, she could be 15.

Me: "Nhlakanipho are you Ohk?" I turned my attention back to him then to the girl who looked up then her eyes landed on us.

Nhla: "I..I'm..." He cleared his throat and that girl stood up to

the exit, where we were standing
"Sweetheart" My heart broke as
she held her arm. She was a
Goddess, this must be her! The
girl who has his heart.

Her: "Leave me alone

Nhlakanipho!" She shouts freeing
herself from his grip. Nhlakanipho
looked so soft with her, he was
handling her with care judging by
the soft grip. I have never seen
him like this, he looked at her like
she's the only human on Earth.

A girl who looked her age walked
over to us

"Nosi are you fine?"

Her: "Let's go Lethabo"

Nhla: "Sweetheart let's talk"

Her: "I...I.." Her eyes went to me, Nhlakanipho had long withdrawn his hand from mine "No..." She ran out and that girl whom I assume she's her friend looked at him.

Nhla: "I need to talk to her, I... I need to talk to her" I looked at him as he looked at me

Me: "She's your past Nhlakanipho, you said she's your past"

Nhla: "Yes she is but... No she's not... I mean I.... I'm sorry Ntsiki I thought I could do this" He left running out of the restaurant.

Tears streamed down, I sniffed them away as it stung that he

loves her and there's literally nothing I could do to change that.

NOSIBUSISO

I ran as fast as I can, He moved on! I thought I won't be hurt if this happens but I'm hurt, no I'm broken! I felt a hand grapping my arm causing me to turn to the direction.

Me: "What do you want from me?"

I pulled my arms from his hold.

Nhla: "Sweetheart we have to talk, That's not what it looked like" I shook my head

Me: "It looked like what!?! I get it

Nhlakanipho I'm no longer important in your damn life!" I stepped backwards a little and he stepped forward

Nhla: "I love you!"

Me: "No you don't! You don't love me Nhlakanipho, you moved on in such a short notice"

Nhla: "It's not what it looks like!" He points out

Me: "It doesn't matter anymore! You said we're taking a break so it doesn't matter anymore"

Nhla: "I'm sorry" He said softly.

Me: "I'm sorry too, I'm sorry I couldn't be the one for you

Nhlakanipho but believe me when

I say I love you" I say and it started pouring. He took another step to me. The rain was pouring lightly.

Nhla: "You're the one for me, I'm just stupid not to see it" tears were still streaming, seeing him just pains me more. Why can't we be happy? I love him!

Me: "Please leave me alone, go back to your woman and leave me" I turned to walk away only to be pulled as I landed on his chest; he loves doing this a lot

Nhla: "Can we fix this?"

Me: "What? If you didn't see me you were going to continue with

her? Nhlakanipho please leave me" He tilted his head then looked down at me. His suit was now wet, I was also wet from the rain.

Nhla: "I love you"

Me: "Please leave me alone" his warm breath immediately hit my face as I looked straight in his eyes, He had glasses looking so ready to cry.

Nhla: "I'm stupid! I'm stupid I know" He whispered, loud enough for me to hear him.

Me: "Nhlakanipho leave..." My voice was now lower than before.

Nhla: "We should talk"

Me: "I don't want to talk, go back to your woman"

Nhla: "She's a non factor, I can't live without you. I can't keep sane Sweetheart"

Me: "Please leave" It was lower, Lower than it was. I think lower than anything.

Nhla: "I love you" He leaned closer, I licked my lips so ready to kiss him but I kept on saying leave me alone. He finally kissed me, I held to him close as he kissed some of my tears. The Emotions were screaming at us as we kept on kissing. It has been a week but it felt like I have been

apart from him years ago. He pulled out looking at me, he was so close.

Me: "Don't let me go, please hold me Nhlakanipho" My heart can be the biggest betrayer when it comes to Nhlakanipho.

Nhla: "I got you Sweetheart" He pulled me to him, The rain kept on pouring as we were standing out of nowhere enjoying being In each other's arms "I got you" Lastly he whispered. I rested my head on his chest letting go of all the pain, he got me!

.....

CHAPTER 53

NOSIBUSISO

We eventually went home after that encounter with Nhlakanipho. He dropped off Lethabo then me, unfortunately the girl who he was with called a cab. I don't want to know about what happened between them but all I know is that Nhlakanipho has to be specific on what he wants. He has to me mine; mine only if he really wants to be with me.

Nhla: "Life wasn't that good without sweetheart" I breath turning to him.

Me: "I'll act like I believe that"

Nhla: "When I sleep I would

always think about you, what you're doing or if you'll replace me. Yes I kept on smiling like everything was fine but I was a mess" I sighed believing what he's saying.

Me: "I love you Nhlakanipho" I murmur and he pulled me to his lap. The rain is still pouring, only if I were to spend the night with the love of my life.

Nhla: "I love you sweetheart, I love you so much"

Me: "I don't want to keep you as a secret, let's fight for this" he sighed, deeply.

Nhla: "This won't be easy"

sweetheart, there are too many people who are against us even though they're hidden"

Me: "I'm willing to be strong, for us" That was an honest truth. I was willing to be strong just for him, us!

Nhla: "Ohk Sweetheart, Let's do this Ohk? I got you" I smiled placing my lips on his, he smiled a little before he led the kiss.

Passionate and slowly, I miss this. I miss everything about him.

Me: "I miss you" I mumbled on his lips as he continued devouring my lips. I moaned placing my hands on his neck pulling him closer, it went

not instantly as he pulled out still
with his eyes closed

Nhla: "Damned" He whispered
flipping his Sexy eyes opened. He
had red eyes and I immediately
felt his huge dick growing.

Me: "Mmmh" I retrieved my hands
from his neck as one went to his
bulk.

Nhla: "Don't start with me" he
chuckled lightly and I looked at
him and frowned "What's wrong?"
I sighed

Me: "Why can't we love each other
freely? I want to love you

Nhlakanipho, I love you so much. I
know I'm still a teenager and I'm

literally out of your league but I love you, it scares me" He held me tighter

Nhla: "I love you too, Believe it when I say I'm in love with you and I'll do anything in my power to make you feel loved like you deserve. You deserve me, you may be younger but you have my heart" He made me rest my head on his chest. I listened to his heartbeat which seemed to be in sync with mine.

Me: "I love you" I whispered

NONTSIKELELO

I held tight on her arms as sobs uncontrollably escaped from my lips which was now wet. Why did this have to happen to me!? I snuggled closer as sobs continued
Me: "How can I be a fool? I thought he would forget about that girl Phindi" I gasped on my sob as she brushes my back.

Phindi: "Please calm down Sis, you knew he's in love with someone"

Me: "I thought he'll love me too, most men fall in love with two ladies" I say faintly while trying to stop my sobs, this was just too painful and too much to handle.

Phindi: "You'll find someone who'll

love you Ntsiki, don't force yourself to someone" I shook my head, They won't understand. I want Nhlakanipho no one else!

Me: "I want him Phindile, You won't understand"

Phind: "Make me! You only knew this guy for what? A week and boom you can't live without him" She chuckled "I can't be nursing your stupid arse" she says shift from me.

Me: "You don't understand understand Phindile, I love him!"

Phindi: "Aaay uyangehlula mtakama" [You're failing me my Mom's child]

Me: "I need to talk to him, Maybe he'll change his mind" She shook her head

Phindi: "Don't be obsessed

Ntsiki, such things are scary"

Me: "I'm not being obsessed" I stood up from the bed walking to the bathroom with her following me.

Phindi: "You'll find someone who'll love you" I shook my head, she doesn't want to understand me. I rinsed my face looking on the mirror

Me: "I want him!" I Huffed walking back to the bathroom

after throwing a glare on the mirror once again.

SIZWE

I woke up the next day and did my hygiene process. Walked downstairs and everyone was settled on the table.

Me: "Good Morning" I kiss my Mom's cheek

Mom: "Morning Baby"

Nhla: "Sho"

Me: "What are we having?" I smiled as Mom dished out me for me, she was smiling like a teenager who just had her first kiss "You look happy"

Mom: "I don't have a reason to be mad or whatever" I looked at Nhlakanipho and he shrugged his shoulders

Me: "Mmmh"

Mom: "Your Aunt is coming this evening"

Nhla: "Aunt Jess?" Mom nods

Mom: "Yes her, we need to pay the damages"

Me: "But it's still Wednesday"

Mom: "You know your Aunt" She rolled her eyes and sip her coffee still smiling

Nhla: "Well... I... Nosibusiso and I got back together" Mom snapped her head at Nhlakanipho.

Mom: "Finally you let your pride slide"

Nhla: "Come on Mom it was not Pride or something like that"

Mom: "I'll act like I believe that"

Me: "Mom your son is too deep for Nosi, and I must say he changed you"

Nhla: "Don't piss me off with my change!" he Huffed

Mom: "I thought you were going out with your new girl though"

Nhla: "I bumped into Nosi and my heart betrayed me"

Mom: "I don't want you to play these girls Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "I know Mom, Ntsiki is a

mistake and my hear is beating for Nosi"

Mom: "Njomane" I smiled briefly, I'm glad he's happy. He found love and that what matters! I also need to fix my issues.

NOSIBUSISO

Me: "I'll be going to visit Mapula after school" I say to everyone. My Dad and Bontle.

Mlu: "Ohk, I'll go there in the Evening" I nod and a sudden knock came through.

Me: "I'll get it" I stood up to attending the door "Nomsa" I smiled throwing myself on her.

She giggled welcoming me in her arms.

Nomsa: "Who's your baby sis?"

Me: "Good, come let's go in" we walked in and I grinned looking at Dad "Look who's here?" He snapped his head to us.

Mlu: "Nomsa!"

Nomsa: "Dad, how are you?" She looked at Bontle "And you?"

Mlu: "I'm good, very good my baby"

Nomsa: "Perfect, I took the first flight from Capetown since I wasn't able to come yesterday"

Me: "I'm glad you're here, I miss you" I sighed and she pulls me back to her embrace.

Nomsa: "I miss you too, I think I should move this side but I'll talk to Mvelo*

Me: "Great! Let's eat then" we settled around the table once again. A text came through while at it.

- Morning Sweetheart, have a splendid day baby. I love you!
I smiled tossing the phone on the table and I looked at everyone who had their eyes on me. I cleared my throat

Me: "What?"

Mlu: "Do you have a boyfriend?" I looked at him tongue tied, my Dad loves these questions. I don't

know if I should be honest or what.

Me: "Dad---"

Mlu: "Answer the question" I sighed and nod

Me: "I don't have a boyfriend, but a man" He carefully looked at me narrowing his eyes at me as he raised her left eyebrow

Mlu: "Who is he? Be honest Nosi" I sighed looking down then turned back my attention to him.

Me: "It's Nhlakanipho, we got back together" I utter and it went quite!

.....

CHAPTER 54

NOSIBUSISO

Mlu: "Nosibusiso we talked about this" He huffed and I Looked at him

Me: "No Dad, you talked and I listened" Softly, I said.

Mlu: "Nhlakanipho is not your type! He's my best friend"

Me: "And I love him!" I shout back regretting it a little later

Nomsa: "Can we just calm down" I looked at her before turning back my attention to my Dad.

Me: "I love him Dad" I say to him and he shook his head.

Mlu: "No" No? Why can't he get this? "You're still young Nosibusiso"

Me: "I know, Please give us a chance. Give him a chance Dad please"

Mlu: "Nosibusiso" he was so emotional. His voice Said it all.

Me: "Dad I'm sorry! I'm sorry I had to fall in love with your best friend but I can't help it, I love him" he scoffed frustrated. This must be harder I know, but I can't stay away from Nhlakanipho.

Mlu: "No" I popped my eyes looking at him

Me: "No?"

Mlu: "You're going to break up with him, you're going to break up with

him Nosibusiso!"

Me: "But Dad---"

Mlu: "It's either you break up with him or you are disowned" I gasped not believing it. What is he saying?

Me: "Dad! You can't make me choose"

Mlu: "I just did, It's your choice" I stood up

Me: "Fine, I'll be out of here" I say aiming to go upstairs

Mlu: "Where do you think you're going?" I stopped on my tracks and stood still.

Me: "To take my things"

Mlu: "Leave everything I had

bought you, and that phone" I hissed turning to place the phone on the table before I walked out of the house with tears. What did just happen?

"Nosi!" I turned to find Nomsa

Me: "What are you doing?"

Nomsa: "I'll drive you to a Hotel, I'll pay" I shook my head. I have to go to Nhlakanipho, I'm here because of him. Our Love!

Me: "I'll go to the Mhlongo Residence"

Nomsa: "Are you sure?" I nod wiping off my tears.

Me: "Yeah, I won't be staying at a Hotel forever right" I gag on my

tears and she pulled me in for a hug

Nomsa: "I'm sorry" I held on her too tight

NONTSIKELELO

I turned over my heel walking straight to the receptionist.

Me: "Hey Cynthia, Is Mr Mhlongo in?" She smiled

Cynthia: "Yes, but he's in a meeting at the boardroom"

Me: "I'll be waiting at his office"

Cynthia: "I don't think it's a good idea" I sighed walking to the office without saying anything.

I closed the door behind and

looked around, this was so beautiful. Classy! I catwalked to his desk and there were Framed pictures there. It was an older woman who looked beautiful then on the other frame it was the girl I saw yesterday. I slowly took it then looked at it.

Me: "She took my man" I whispered as I landed my eyes on the picture. She was really beautiful, so Beautiful. I Huffed throwing the frame across the room as it scattered on the floor. The glasses were all down as the picture was now out of the frame "He's mine"

NOSIBUSISO

I rang the bell few times before it was opened. Mrs Mhlongo looked at me with confusion.

Mrs

Mhlongo: "Nosibusiso.." Faintly, she said.

Me: "I...Ma" Lucky my voice didn't betray me. I cleared my throat a few times.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Come in, You're welcome" I breath in making my way in.

Me: "I'm sorry for just coming here unannounced"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You look tired,

What's wrong my daughter? Ain't you suppose to be at school?" Tears dropped. I sniffed them away and settled on the couch.

Me: "My father disowned me"

Mrs Mhlongo: "What!? Why?"

Me: "He wanted me to Break up with Nhlakanipho, I couldn't Ma I can't"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Oh God! I'm sorry Sisi, your father will come around"

Me: "He meant it Ma, you should have seen his face when I told him that I'm dating Nhlakanipho. Why can't we be happy? Why do we have to have a Challenge

after a Challenge Ma?" I cried in her arms.

Mrs Mhlongo: "That's Love my daughter, challenges after a challenge but if it's true love you'll conquer it all" She kept on brushing my back as my head was now on her shoulder. the

Me: "I'm drained, but I know that I can't be without Nhlakanipho" I say

Mrs Mhlongo: "You're too young Nosi, Find yourself in the process"

Me: "I'm working on that"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Draw up a table, what you like and dislike. What you wish for, The things you're

afraid of-- that could help"

Me: "Thank you, Nhlakanipho won't mind finding me here right? I feel like I'm a burden to him"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Believe me, he loves you" I started feeling drowsy a little as a yawn escaped "Sleep"

NHLAKANIPHO

Me: "Cynthia any message thus far?" She nods

Cynthia: "Yes, Two appointments here"

Me: "Great, when last did you talk to Sam"

Cynthia: "Two days ago, she was fired on the job you transferred

her to"

Me:"Ow"

Cynthia:"And depts are down her neck, I'm scared for her"

Me:"Let me go to my office" I sat afternooon a while

Cynthia:"Oh Yeah! There's someone in your office"

Me:"Who?"

Cynthia:"Miss Nkosi" I nod walking to mu office. I opened then walked in

Me:"Ntsiki" Softly, I said. She was settled on the couch, he looked up to me and smiled.

Ntsiki:"I've been waiting for you"

Me:"Ow"

Ntsiki: "Nhlakanipho I love you, why don't you see that?"

Me: "I don't love you, I'm in love with someone else Ntsiki"

Ntsiki: "Please Nhlakanipho give me a chance"

Me: "Leave"

Ntsiki: "Nhlakan ---"

Me: "I said leave" She got startled and immediately walked out. I was pisses! I noticed the missing frame on my desk, This is the most beautiful frame ever. I walked to the dustbin after searching in a little it. There it was in pieces, I don't know this girl is playing at.

NOMSA

Me: "Kicking her out was not an option Dad"

Mlu: "I know" he sighed deeply "I know but I thought she would choose us, her family" I chuckled

Me: "Nosi is deeply in love with Nhlakanipho, same goes for Nhlakanipho

They would do anything to keep their relationship stable"

Mlu: "They don't know what they're doing, Nosi can't date Nhlakanipho"

Me: "What is it about you Dad? Why are you so keen of keeping

Nhlakanipho away"

Mlu: "They're just not good for each other"

Me: "So it's better if you'd lose your daughter in the process of keeping them from each other?"

Mlu: "I won't lose her, She'll come back home" I chuckled

Me: "I told you, Their love is too deep and I think they'd choose each other in anything"

SIZWE

Thando: "Sizwe what's up with you?"

Me: "What do you mean?"

Thando: "You're off, Am I boring

you huh?"

Me: "Don't think like that"

Me: "What should I think? You're off it seems like your mind is not here" I sighed

Me: "I'm here baby, I'm just worried"

Thando: "Worried?"

Me: "About Mapula, I thought she would be awake by now"

Thando: "Ow" she shifted from me

Me: "Baby don't be like that"

Thando: "I feel like I'm a Rebound Sizwe, You still love this chick"

Me: "No"

Thando: "Then what's your problem?"

Me: "I care about her baby, I just care"

Thando: "I don't know what to say, Your actions are saying the opposite Sizwe"

Me: "I.. I'm sorry if you feel like that then baby, I.m... believe me when I say I don't love Mapula anymore" she stood up

Thando: "I'll be preparing something to eat" She disappeared on my sight.

NHLAKANI PHO

I knocked off early today, I made my way inside the house and Mom was preparing dinner.

Me: "Hey Mom" I kissed her cheek.

Mom: "Hey baby" she closed the pot and turned to me "You knocked off early today" I nod

Me: "Yeah" I sighed "I'll just go and take a shower"

Mom: "Nosibusiso is here"

Me: "Mmmh wait... Nosi is

here?" She nods "Ufunani? Ingabe kukhona okumvelele?" [What does she want, Did something happened to her] I panicked

Mom: "Go talk to her, she's at your bedroom" I nod walking upstairs. She was settled on the bed.

Me: "Sweetheart" I say walking in

further.

Nosi: "Nhlakanipho" Her voice was a bit raspy, meaning she was crying.

Me: "What's wrong

Sweetheart, talk to your

man" Tears dropped. She sniffed looking at me.

Nosi: "Dad disowned me, I told him about us"

Me: "Oh Baby I'm... I'm sorry, You should have called"

Nosi: "I've been asleep,

Nhlakanipho what am I going to do?"

Me: "Please don't cry baby" I pulled her in my arms.

Nosi: "Why is the world against

us?"

Me: "I don't know, I don't sweetheart but we'll surely get through this"

Nosi: "I don't want to lose you Nhlakanipho"

Me: "You will never, Please don't cry you're hurting me"

Nosi: "It hurts"

Me: "We'll overcome this baby I, just stop crying" I held her tight as she continued crying.

.....

CHAPTER 55

NOSIBUSISO

I woke up with a light headache. I slowly got off the bed and sighed setting on it. I had two missed calls from Nomsa but I wasn't going to call her back anytime soon; Maybe tomorrow. Nhlakanipho managed to get me a phone in a short period of time and I did a Sim swap which wasn't that hard. Nhlakanipho walked in with a tray.

Nhla: "Evening Ma'Lady" I smiled forgetting about my problems.

Me: "Evening, why didn't you wake me up?"

Nhla: "You were sleeping peacefully, I didn't want to wake

you up" he hands me the tray "I made something for you"

Me: "Thank you, It looks good" I looked at him and he settled next to me.

Nhla: "I've been looking for an apartment and I think I got one"

Me: "You're purchasing an apartment? Why?" I asked narrowing my eyes on him

Nhla: "I've been planning on purchasing it so now I think I should, Sweetheart I have to take responsibility" I sighed

Me: "I'm not burdening you right?" He looked at me Tilting his head

Nhla: "No, and don't ever think

about that nonsense!" He Huffed and a smile appeared across his face "I'll send someone to get you clothes and everything, Tomorrow you're going to school" I nod
Me: "Thank you"

Nhla: "We're in this together, we'll go and view the apartment over the weekend"

Me: "Ohk, are they still going to pay the damages? I mean after what happened today" I shrugged my shoulders and he tilted his head again, he likes doing that a lot!

Nhla: "Definitely, I'll be showing respect and I would buy the

whole universe for you if possible" I laughed eating my food

Me: "Stop being crazy"

Nhla: "I'm serious Sweetheart, I love you"

Me: "I Love you too"

Nhla: "Now let's get you feed up" He takes my food from me.

Me: "I can do that myself"

Nhla: "I'll help you" He got on top of the bed and made me sit in between of his legs.

Me: "This is pure abuse" I sulked as he took a spoon feeding me.

Nhla: "Well, this is a beautiful abuse. Don't you think?" I chuckled

Me: "There's no such; Beautiful abuse"

Nhla: "This is beautiful, now open up" I rolled my eyes doing as told. We were distributed by Mrs Mhlongo banging our bedroom door.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Don't make a baby in there" After that we heard footsteps fading. I laughed and Nhlakanipho joined in throwing his head back, I stopped for a while with a wide smile across my face looking at him. He stopped too and looked back at me.

Nhla: "What?" I giggled

Me: "You're just Cute"

Nhla: "Yabonake Sweetheart, I'm a Zulu man ngalokho ayikho loku okukhulumako" [See, Therefore there's no such in what you're saying]

Me: "Weeh Ndoda yomZulu, Amadoda yamaZulu anePride nje. They're just on another level" [Zulu man, Zulu men have pride] He grinned feeding me

Nhla: "We have dignity though Sweetheart, there's no man than a Zulu man" I must admit, that is so much true! Zulu men are the 'Yeah I'm here, what were you saying?' kind of an attitude. They smell power more than anything,

Romance is another thing to them.

Me: "Mmmh"

NONTSIKELELO

Phindi: "What? He kicked you out?"

Me: "Just imagine! He has a liver sis"

Phindi: "Ayy no, you should just let him be because this guy is not into you"

Me: "What am I supposed to do with my love for him?"

Phindi: "You'll find someone whom you can love, I'm sure you'll do"

Me: "I don't want someone other than Nhlakanipho"

Phindi: "I'd say you're possessed Ntsiki, your obsession is dangerous"

Me: "I'm not obsessed" I Huffed

Phindi: "Yes you are, God You're dangerous"

Me: "I'm not obsessed! Fuck you yezwa" [Hear that] I walked straight to my bedroom. I took breathing exercise as I started pacing around the room.

Me: "He has to be mine" I nod in what I'm saying, he really has to be mine. My phone rang and my Mom's number flashed on the screen.

Me: "Ma"

Mom: "You're not Ohk Ntsiki, I don't like what's happening to you"

Me: "How do---Yeah" My Mom is a Traditional healer. She's good at what she does and has a great heart. Many says Phindi inherited that personality from my Mom while I inherited my personality from Dad as he was stricked and a grumpy angry human being.

Mom: "My baby, Stay away from lamfana" [That boy]

Me: "I can't"

Mom: "You'll have to, His ancestors are very strong and he's protected both with his wife"

Me: "Wife?"

Mom: "Yebo, wakwa Dube" I sighed climbing on the bed as I closed my eyes.

Me: "God"

Mom: "I'll pray for you, I'll also speak to the Nkosi ancestors"

Me: "Ohk Mom, Bye" I immediately disconnected the call "I love him" I whispered to myself.

NOMSA

I'm sure she's fine, I walked downstairs and Dad was settled on the couch drinking his whiskey, it's 8pm.

Me: "Dad" he looked up

Mlu: "MaBaby"

Me: "You're not Ohk"

Mlu: "How can I be when my daughter is out on the streets? I'm such a bad parent"

Me: "Worry not, she's with Nhlakanipho"

Mlu: "And I had to push her in his arms" I sighed settling on the couch.

Me: "I don't know why you don't want to approve their relationship but Dad--- you're losing your daughter in the process"

Mlu: "They can't date though" I sighed

Me: "What's going on Dad? What is it that you're afraid of ngale Relationship?" [With]

Mlu: "Nothing, Nosi is still young for Nhlakanipho"

Me: "You can talk to me you know"

Mlu: "No, There's really nothing" I nod holding his hands.

Me: "Nosi needs you so much, She's growing up and you don't want that right?"

Mlu: "Honestly no, I don't want her to grow up. I'm scared about the cruelty of this world for her"

Me: "Let her be Dad, let her learn from her mistakes. Just be there kphela Baba" [Only Das]

Mlu: "She'll come back to her senses"

Me: "If she doesn't? What are you going to do?"

Mlu: "She will" He pulled his hands from mine taking his glass of whiskey.

NOSIBUSISO

Nhla: "Ain't you taking that?" My phone kept on ringing and it's an unknown number

Me: "What if it's a serial killer?"

Nhlakanipho chuckled

Nhla: "It might be important" I nod accepting the call.

Me: "Hello" the person didn't say

anything, all I could hear was the breathing pattern from the other side "Hello is anybody there" The call was suddenly disconnected.

Nhla: "What is it?"

Me: "The person didn't say anything, all I could hear was his/her breathing pattern"

Nhla: "Strange"

Me: "Very"

Nhla: "Let's forget about that bored person Sweetheart" He smiled seductively

Me: "Aaay No, not in your Mom's House"

Nhla: "Kodwa we were able to do it"

the first time"

Me: "That was different, now your Mom is downstairs Nhlakanipho no"

Nhla: "But Sweethe---" I smiled pecking his lips.

Me: "I should get some rest" I got under covers pulling the duvet over my head

Nhla: "Are you really sleeping?" I ignored him "Sweetheart..." I ignored him "I'm in need" Once again, I ignored him "You're not fair" He sighed kissing my hair "I love you" He joins me as he got under covers.

.....

CHAPTER 56

NOSIBUSISO

Lethabo: "You mean your Dad kicked you out?" I nod with a sigh

Me: "Yes, well not exactly but he made me choose between them and Nhlakanipho"

Lethabo: "You choose Nhlakanipho? That is such a great love story" She grinned at me and I shook my head.

Me: "There's no life story here, this is reality"

Lethabo: "Sadly"

Me: "Let's go to Class before your grandma goes to class" she laughed

Lethabo: "She should hear you call her that" I shrugged my shoulders with a chuckle

Me: "Whatever, Loyamama uyadika mae" [That mother is exhausting]

Lethabo: "I know, Let's go" we stood up heading to class

Me: "This evening I'm going to see Mapula, she woke up last night"

Lethabo: "I'm glad she's awake though she should have died" I slapped her shoulder

Me: "Aaay, That's my sister" I Huffed

Lethabo: "I know" She rolled her eyes "It's just that Mapula is

something else, I really don't understand her"

Me: "You guys failed to spend even some few seconds together, there's no way you were going to understand her"

Lethabo: "She doesn't like me" We stepped inside the class.

Me: "And s--" I was interrupted by someone calling me. I turned to find Qhawe

Me: "What the fuck do you want from me?"

Qhawe: "Can we talk?"

Me: "No! I don't want to hear anything from you"

Qhawe: "Give me a chance to talk,

Please Nosibusiso" I sighed and shook my head as I walked away from him. The last thing I want is to be in a cracky relationship with Nhlakanipho because of Qhawe!

Lethabo: "You did great! He's such a jerk" I smiled as I looked at her
Me: "Yeah well..." I shrugged my shoulders settling on the seat.

NHLAKANIPHO

I walked inside the building which was occupied with few gentlemen. Zama stood up and walked over to me as soon as her eyes landed on me.

Zama: "Afternoon" I looked around then held her arm as we walked over to a certain.

Me: "Afternoon" she yanked her arm from me

Zama: "What are you doing this?"

Me: "You stole my money" calmly, I said.

Zama: "Mamba is going to look for you and find you! Trust me on that" I chuckled

Me: "Really? If he was serious on finding me he should have found you long ago" tears were on the edge to drop from her eyes

Zama: "Does she know?" I scoffed narrowing my eyes on her

Me: "She doesn't have to, Just do your job so you could pay the money you stole"

Zama: "You're heartless! You're a Criminal!!" She kept on throwing the insults. I sighed

Me: "Zama just do as told, we don't want trouble now do we?"

Zama: "I thought you were transferring me to another Company Nhlakanipho not this!"

Me: "This is a company! Sleep with your Clients and all would be forgotten after paying back all my money. The money you stole"

Zama: "Oh God!"

Me: "Do as told babes" I scanned

her with pity eyes "Do as told" I
Huffed walking away.

"Mr Mhlongo" I slowly turned to
that voice

Me: "If it isn't Cowen"

Cowen: "Long time no see"

Me: "I'm keeping things under the
carpet Cowen, How's business?" He
gulped down his scotch.

Cowen: "Good, Your girl is doing the
most" I nod.

Me: "Great, she has to pay back all
my money"

Cowen: "We should catchup on some
whiskey" I nod

Me: "Definitely, I'll be in touch" I
walked away. This is something

Nosibusiso won't find out about. I bet she doesn't remember me asking about the boys who raped Mapula, honestly I won't tell her anything about this as yet!

NOSIBUSISO

I saw Nhlakanipho's car after school. I bid Lethabo goodbye as I made my way to him, It felt so good!

Me: "Baby" He slid his phone in his pocket as he held my waist. I smiled and he pulled me closer as he smashed his lips on mine. It took me some seconds to respond then we pulled out.

Nhla: "That's what I needed" I smiled looking down "Aay aay sukela nini unje" [Since when are you like this]

Me: "Like what?"

Nhla: "Shy? Sweetheart look at me" I looked at his sparkling beautiful eyes

Me: "You just make me smile without trying Baby"

Nhla: "Wait till our wedding vows phela Nosi!" I laughed as he helped me climb the car. He did too and drove off "We're going to the hospital right?" I nod

Me: "Yes" He turned on the radio and James Bay bust. He loves

English music!

Nhla: "We're going to find Aunt, she was supposed to come yesterday"

I nervously looked at him

Me: "Really?"

Nhla: "Ungathukwa Sweetheart, Aunt Jess is a cool person though

uneDrama" [Don't be scared] I

nod

Me: "Ohk"

MLUNGISI

I walked inside the hospital, I feel bad for staying away from

Mapula. She's my daughter! I

walked inside as she was still

asleep. I stood next to her as she

slowly Flipped her eyes closed.

Mapula: "Da.... Daddy" She chocked on her saliva.

Me: "Shush baby don't say anything"

Mapula: "I'm sorry"

Me: "We will talk, not now"

Mapula: "I have disappointed you Daddy, You gave me everything but I went on and do this" I sighed

Me: "Honestly you have disappointed me Mapula, I thought all that attitude it's a stage but doing drugs?" I shook my head so disappointed in her.

Mapula: "I'm sorry, I'm such a

fool"

Me: "No you're not a fool, you're not"

Mapula: "I'm sorry Daddy"

Me: "Shush mababy"

The door was suddenly pulled opened and I looked at Nosi who was hand in hand with Nhlakanipho.

Nosi looked away and Nhlakanipho looked at me with a straight face.

Nhla: "Mlungisi"

Me: "Nhlakanipho"

.....

CHAPTER 57

NHLAKANIPHO

I looked at him as I break our handlock pulling Nosi closer to me. He looked down at my hand on his daughter's waist then cleared his throat.

Mlu: "Nosibusiso" She looked up to him without saying anything. I doubt she's going to utter anything at the moment

Nosi: "I need the bathroom" Finally she murmur looking at my face. I sighed with a nod releasing her from my hold. She stumble her way out of the ward.

Mlu: "Nhlakanipho you can't do this"

Me: "I love her, I told you I love

her" I firmly said.

Mlu: "I'm sure you can sacrifice your love to keep her safe" I huffed as my eyes went to Mapula who was awake.

Me: "We won't do this here" I walked out and he followed. We went outside the hospital.

Mlu: "You're not good for Nosi Nhlakanipho, you can't date her"

Me: "It's been years since I got involved with any illegal shit! I'm only handling gun smuggling"

Mlu: "That too is dangerous! I don't want this illegal shit on my daughter Nhlakanipho" I sighed

Me: "I'll keep her safe"

Mlu: "No, Save her from all of that. Does she even know?" I Huffed walking away from him. I can't tell her as yet, I'm only involved in gun smuggling. The Rest, I have people taking care of it.

Nosi: "Where did you disappear to with my father baby?" She asked as soon as I stepped inside Mapula's ward.

Me: "We were talking"

Nosi: "What was he saying" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "Nothing much sweetheart, How's she?"

Mapula: "I can hear you, you

know "I stepping closer

Me: "How are you?"

Mapula: "I'm good, I'm trying" She cleared her throat "How's you?"

Me: "I'm perfectly fine"

Mapula: "That's great, what's up between you guys and Dad?"

Me: "H---"

Nosi: "Nothing, Nothing to worry about"

I threw a look at her then smiled

Me: "Yeah, Nothing"

NONTSIKELELO

16;47. I threw myself on the couch with a bottle of wine.

Phindile made her way downstairs

and shook her head

Phindi: "I give up on you"

Me: "Let me be Phindile"

Phindi: "You're just destroying yourself, Mom called me" I chuckled

Me: "Mom is crazy, I won't listen to her" I Huffed gulping the wine from the bottle

Phindi: "Mom is not crazy!"

Me: "Don't tell me you believe all her nonsense"

Phindi: "You know how Mom is, you know her gift"

Me: "That was before she told me all that nonsense! I'm not giving up on Nhlakanipho, he's mine"

Phindi: "What happened to you"

Mtakama?" [Mom's Child]

Me: "Love happened, I fell deeply in love with someone who's not in love with me"

Phindi: "You're deeply obsessed" I huffed standing up.

Me: "I'm not obsessed! Aaay there's no peace in this house" I say making my way upstairs.

MAPULA

After Nosi and Nhlakanipho walked out, Sizwe made his way in. I didn't expect to see him, after everything.

Me: "S..Sizwe" I stutter and he walked closer

Sizwe: "How are you?"

Me: "Getting there"

Sizwe: "Great"

The silence took over, awkward and that thick atmosphere. I cleared my throat

Sizwe: "I was checking up on you"

Me: "I really appreciate that"

Sizwe: "I care about you Mapula, I really care and what you did pains me" My heart skipped a beat. He cares!

Me: "I'm sorry"

Sizwe: "There's no need, I'm Glad you're awake and fine" I nod, slowly.

Me: "Thank you, for caring"

Sizwe: "I really care about you"

Me: "What about us?" I carelessly asked

Sizwe: "There's no us anymore" I swallowed a lump which was stuck on my throat before a nod.

Me: "I understand"

Sizwe: "I have found Someone"

Me: "Someone?" I whispered, loud enough for him to hear me

Sizwe: "Yes, I love her. She's so great and she understands me"

Me: "I'm happy for you, I hope she'll treat you much better than I did"

Sizwe: "Let's not go there" I nod

Me: "Ohk"

Sizwe: "Let me leave, There's a guest at home" I sighed

Me: "Thank you for checking up on me" He nods once more before he walked out.

NOSIBUSISO

We made our way inside the house.

There was this lady who was settled on the couch having tea.

Nhla: "Auntie" She looked up to us and smiled.

Auntie: "Oh Nhlakanipho mfanwam, usukhulile" [My boy, you have grown]

Nhla: "Yebo Auntie" [Yes]

Auntie: "Ufana ncamashi nobabwakho" [You look exactly like your father] He grinned pulling me closer to him as he held firmly on my waist

Nhla: "Yebo Auntie" [Yes] he cleared his throat "Auntie longu

Nosibusiso Dube, Umakoti wakwa Njomane" [This is, Njomane's

wife] She looked at me and smiled

Auntie: "Ave umuhle, Aay Mfanwam ukhethile impela" [You're

beautiful, my boy you have really chosen]

Nhla: "Ifuzo" [Inheritance]

Auntie: "Wee Makoti ngcela utea

omunye Phela" [Bride, Can I have

another tea] I looked at Nhlakanipho who shrugged his shoulders. I sighed taking the tray and made my way to the kitchen. It didn't take me a while to prepare the tea then I went back to the lounge.

Me: "Nali utea Auntie" [Here's a tea]

Auntie: "Ngyabonga Makoti" [Thank you Bride] I sighed "Awungtjele la Nhlakanipho, wenza umahlalisana nalengane?" [Tell me here, are you cohabiting with this child] he almost died, I wanted to laugh
Nhla: "Cha Auntie, Sinenkinga nje

kphela" [No, we have a problem" She nods Auntie; "Kulungile Mfanwam" [It's alright my boy

.....

CHAPTER 58

NOSIBUSISO

I woke up early in the morning to prepare breakfast before I could get ready for school. Nhlakanipho didn't like that at all but I did it anyway.

Nhla: "You shouldn't have woke up so early to prepare breakfast"

Me: "I wanted to, I also want this to end" I sighed turning to fix his

tie. He placed his hands on my waist.

Nhla: "Tomorrow everything will finally come to end, we'll be going to view an apartment though"

Me: "I don't know if I'll be able to concentrate on finding a good apartment, what if things ain't going to be Ohk" I say softly and he pulled me closer.

Nhla: "Sweetheart everything will be Ohk, stop worrying about unnecessary things"

Me: "Ohk"

Nhla: "I love you"

Me: "I love you" He plants a kiss on my forehead

Me: "Mmmh"

Nhla: "Yeah, Let's go before you become late" I grab my school bag following him behind.

Me: "Good Morning Ma" I say to Mrs Mhlongo, I didn't see her since I woke up.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Morning my daughter, you're already leaving?" She looked at us

Me: "Yes, I can't be late" She nods

Nhla: "Morning Mom" He walked over to her as he kissed her cheek.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Morning baby you good?"

Nhla: "Very good, You?"

Mrs: "I'm good"

Nhla: "Great then Mom, we should get going" He looked at me, I love how he looks at me. So perfect!

Mrs Mhlongo: "Have a great day"

Me: "Thank you Ma, Have a great day too" I say as we walked out heading to his car. He stepped on the accelerator as soon as we settled in.

Nhla: "I can't wait to have our freedom" He suddenly sulked and I frowned looking at him

Me: "What is that

Nhlakanipho? Are you being a cry baby?" I asked him, Jokingly.

Nhla: "I have every right to

sweetheart, I want us to make love on the bed, Kitchen counter, garage a--"I cleared my throat Me:"I get you" He looked at me and chuckled shaking his head. Nhla:"I'm going to love Corrupting you" He grinned and I rolled my eyes.

NOMSA

I heard a knock on the door while I was washing the dishes we used for Breakfast. I walked over to attend the door Me:"Ma!How did you get here?How do you know this place?"She pushed me out of the

way walking inside.

Mom: "Awungiyeke weNomisa, Ave iyinhle lendlu" [Leave me alone, this house is so beautiful] I sighed closing the door behind me. She was looking around the house

Me: "Ma ufunani? Ubaba ngekhe ayithande nakancani lento" [Mom what do you want? Dad won't like this]

Mom: "Awungikhombise indawo engiyolala kuyo Nomisa, ngibeke imithwalo Yami" [Show me where I'll be sleeping so I could place my burden]

Me: "Ma ngilalele" [Mom listen to me] I sighed giving up. What

does she want?

Bontle walked downstairs as her heels kept on making that sound. This is going to be a trouble.

Bontle: "And then?" She throw a look at my mom "Who are you?"

Mom: "Sancishwa isikhathi sokwazana le esgodini

sangekhaya, Unjan Kodwa?" [They denied us a chance to get to know each other back at home, how are you though]

Bontle: "Should I know you?" she narrowed her eyes at my Mom.

Mom: "Yebo, uNomisa yindodakazi Yami. Bengikhona ngomemule Kodwa asikakholi isikhathi

sokukhuluma njengoba keenzeka
leyanto kaNosi"[Yes, Nomsa is my
daughter. I was there at the
coming of age ceremony but I we
didn't get a chance to talk after
what happened with Nosi] I
cleared my throat. They didn't
really meet, we had a lot of
things to deal with.

Me:"MaBontle this is my Mom, Ma
MaBontle is my dad's wife" She
nods

Mom:"Nginyabona, nicebile
kulomuzi"[I see, You're rich in this
house]

Bontle:"Nomsa, I want her out of
my house" she looked at my Mom

once again "Such rubbish!"

Mom: "Ngiyasizwa isingisi kedadwethu, ngizamile ukuba muhle Kodwa uyangesukela" [I can hear English, I tried to be nice but you're starting with me]

Me: "Mom please"

Mom: "Awkahlle Nomsa, Uyangesukela lonondindwa lo" [No Nomsa, this slut is starting with me]

Bontle: "I don't have time for this, clearly being Hobos is running in the family" Mom placed her old school handbag charging to Bontle. I held her back.

Me: "Mom please"

Mom: "Ngiyeke Nomisa, Ngifuna ukumbonisa ukuthi nginguba.

NginguMartha

angibhenywa! Angsiyona

insangu" [Leave me, I want to

show her how I am. I'm not a

weed] I Huffed blocking her from

going to Bontle who clicked her

tongue.

Bontle: "She Better leave" She

turned upstairs And I sighed

looking at Mom.

Me: "Ma Yini inkinga?" [What's the

problem]

Mom: "Mnx, Ngiyeke wenza

utea" [Leave me and make a tea]

Me: "How did you know this place

Ma?"

Mom: "Bangilethile, hamba ke" [They're dropped me off, go then] I sighed

NHLAKANI PHO

Cowen: "The Mighty Njomane" I nod holding my straight face.

Me: "Cowen" I settled on the couch, far from everyone.

Cowen: "it's been long ey, I don't know you anymore" I nod

Me: "I'm keeping things legit" He chuckled signaling someone to bring something to drink.

Cowen: "Anyone in your life?" I looked at him briefly before I

shook my head

Me: "I don't have someone yet"

Cowen: "Great, no weakness"

Me: "Yeah" They bought out drinks and walked away from our sight.

Cowen: "I want us to do some business"

Me: "Business?"

Cowen: "Yes, Business"

Me: "What kind of business?"

Cowen: "Drugs? Gold smuggling?" I chuckled

Me: "No thank you Cowen, I'm not there"

Cowen: "We can do Human trafficking too" I stood up

Me: "I wasted my time here, I'm

not involved that shit and I
won't be" I Huffed walking away.

NONTSIKELELO

I held his picture, so perfect. I
smiled humming a song, a beautiful
song.

Me: "We're Going to be perfect
together baby, so perfect" I
grinned widely "They want to keep
us apart huh? They should go, yes
they should" I mumbled "They
Should go" I whispered looking at
the picture "Everyone who's
against our relationship should go,
even my crazy Mother" I chuckled

"Mmmmmh perfect" I continued humming.

.....

CHAPTER 59

NOSIBUSISO

Me: "Good Morning" I say standing on my toes to kiss him. It's in the early hours of the morning, the family is getting ready to go to work. I'm slightly nervous about this day.
Nhla: "Morning sweetheart, How are you?"

Me: "I'm good, I should go and prepare breakfast quickly" I say stepping back and he pulled me making me land on his chest.

Nhla: "Wait sweetheart, I just want to hold you" He held me tight in his arms. I wrapped my arms around him inhaling his scents. He is always smelling so perfect!

Me: "It's always so great to be in your strong arms baby" I sighed "But I really need to prepare breakfast before they come down, Your Uncle is here"

Nhla: "He's here?" I nod, still in his arms.

Me: "You were asleep, he arrived very late"

Nhla: "Mmmh, Ohk then" He freed me out of his hold and I smiled so

wide.

Me: "I love you" I immediately walked out of the bedroom. There getting ready and they should find breakfast ready.

It took me an hour and some few minutes then I fixed the table. Mrs Mhlongo walked downstairs and smiled at me.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Morning my daughter, this is unnecessary" She calmly said.

Me: "It's fine Ma, You need to eat before my Father roast you guys"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I'm not going to the Dube household, Only Aunt Jess and Uncle Sam"

Me: "Cool, you should feast yourself here" She chuckled with a smile. She's such a lovely woman.

Everyone came downstairs and started with breakfast while complementing my food.

Uncle Sam: "UNhlakanipho kufanele akushade nganeyam" [Has to marry you, my daughter] I smiled without saying anything.

Nhla: "Ngizomshada malume" [I'll marry her Uncle] He said so proud.

Uncle Sam: "Yebo Mshana" [Yes My Nephew] They got done and they started fixing themselves.

Me: "Nihambe Kahle" [Go well]

Aunt Jess: "Sizohamba Kahle

Makoti "[we'll go well] they walked away. Mrs Mhlongo smiled and looked at us

Mrs Mhlongo: "Hope everything will go well, Mlungisi is so angry right now" She said Making her way upstairs. Sizwe is not here, I don't know where he is-Really.

Nhla: "Everything will go well" He turned to me. I nod

Me: "Hopefully"

Nhla: "Let's go and have sex" He whispered and I laughed.

Me: "No! Your Mom is here

Nhlakanipho no!" I laughed

walking upstairs, he was following me.

Nhla: "Kodwa sweetheart. "[But]

Me: "Cha!" [No]

Nhla: "We should go and view an apartment, I want us to get out of here immediately"

Me: "When is immediately?"

Nhla: "Tomorrow" I Shook my head.

THANDO

Me: "You're In love with her Sizwe, why are you stringing me along!?"

Sizwe: "I love you Baby! I love you"

Me: "No you don't! No!"

Sizwe: "Damned Thando why can't you see that? why can't you see

how much I love you" I Huffed so frustrated.

Me: "You called her name while we were making love, You're denying everything"

Sizwe: "It means Nothing!"

Me: "Get out" Softly I said.

Sizwe: "What!?"

Me: "Get out Sizwe Get Out!!!" I screamed my lungs out pushing him to the door.

Sizwe: "Baby---"

Me: "Don't come back here!! You're Inlove with her and there's nothing I can do"

Sizwe: "I love you"

Me: "No" I said defeated "Please

get out Sizwe and don't ever come back" He frustratedly ran his hands on his face before he looked at me.

Sizwe: "I'm sorry" He walked out of the house. I leaned against the door as soon as I closed it. Tears just streamed down on my cheeks as I slide down to the floor.

NHLAKANIPHO

We were at the Mall. We just came back from viewing few Apartments and there's one which caught my baby's eyes.

Nosi: "We're going to stay there, I

can't wait!" She was so excited.

Me: "Better believe it baby"

Nosi: "I hope everything goes well, I need my life to be good" She deeply sighed.

Me: "Everything will be fine, we just need to go on a holiday"

Nosi: "A Holiday?"

Me: "Yes, just me and you" She grinned looking up to me

Nosi: "I'd love that"

Me: "Great" We were walking around having some ice-cream.

Nosi: "Let's go" My phone immediately rang

Me: "Should I?" I asked Nosi who nods "Hello" I say immediately

when I accepted the call.

"We're having a problem boss" I held Nosi's waist as we stopped.

Me: "What do you mean?"

"That girl escaped"

Me: "Zama?"

"Yes, we don't know where she is"

I dropped the call and looked at Nosi.

Nosi: "You're tense what's wrong?"

Me: "Let's go home, I need to take care of something"

NONTSIKELELO

I walked downstairs finding

Phindi on top of the couch.

Me: "Good Afternoon"

Phindi: "You're awake? I was worried about you" I sighed walking straight to the kitchen. I made some coffee.

Me: "I wanted to be alone"

Phindi: "You took your pills right?" I rolled my eyes at her

Me: "I don't need those"

Phindi: "Ntsiki stop being so stubborn, Mom called" I Huffed trying to ignore her "She Said you must do as told, You Should listen"

Me: "Mom is talking nonsense! I'm not listening to such things"

Phindi: "Wow, Drink your pills" She walked out of the kitchen.

Me: "Nhlakanipho will be mine" I scoffed sipping my coffee.

NHLAKANIPHO

Me: "What happened!?"

Mandla: "I don't know how she got out of here, The security is tight"

Me: "Where's Cowen?"

Mandla: "He disappeared after what happened"

Me: "He has something to do with this"

Mandla: "So what's going to happen?"

Me: "I'll deal with this, Just close down the Bothel then I'll take care of the rest"

Mandla: "Ohk boss" I sighed walking away, I needed Mlungisi in this.

I walked out driving off home, The Family was settled around the table having breakfast.

Me: "Good Evening" the greeted back.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Everything went well" She was smiling

Me: "Great" I head upstairs. I stripped naked then head to the bathroom. I felt hands being wrapped around my waist.

Nosi: "Baby"

Me: "Mmmh?"

Nosi: "What's wrong?"

Me: "Nothing, we're moving tomorrow"

Nosi: "What's wrong Nhlakanipho? You're restless and I hate it"

Me: "Just hold me, I'll be fine" She rested her head on my back while the water kept on pouring on us.

A WEEK LATER....

.....

CHAPTER 60

A WEEK LATER....

I walked out of the car without saying. Nhlakanipho is being so distant and I hate it. Living in my own space is great, actually but I miss him so much.

Me: "Hey"

Lethabo: "You're not Ohk" I smiled

Me: "I'll be fine, How's you?"

Lethabo: "Great, we'll be writing our Exams so I'm trying to study" I nod

Me: "Yeah Same here"

Lethabo: "You good? You sound exhausted" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "I'm good, there's nothing to worry about" She nods not believing my statement but she'll brush it off, that's how she is. I smiled faintly as we walked to the class

Lethabo: "we'll be starting with

the sessions, the sessions with the pastor?"

Me: "I don't think I'll make it"

Lethabo: "What? Why?"

Me: "Lethabo I have lot of things in my plate and I don't have time"

Lethabo: "Oh, It's cool I understand" She smiled and I nod

Me: "I can't wait for the year to end, It's been dragging"

Lethabo: "I know right?"

Me: "Yeah" I sighed and we settled on the chairs. The lessons started and soon it was afternoon, We made our way out of the classroom heading to our spot.

"Hey" I turned to find Mapula, she fiddled with her fingers then looked at me.

Me: "Hey Mapula, how are you?"

Mapula: "I'm fine, Hy

Lethabo" Lethabo rolled her eyes

Lethabo: "Hy" She said with an attitude. I shook my head turning to Mapula.

Me: "Is there anything I could help you with?"

Mapula: "I just wanted to apologize, about everything"

Me: "Mapula what you did hurts, You were treating me like...like... I don't know"

Mapula: "I know, I'm trying to fix

my life"

Me: "Fix your life?"

Mapula: "I'm attending Therapy"

Me: "That's great, Can we be Civil to each other. I don't think I can have that tight bond with you anytime soon"

Mapula: "I know, I'm glad we're good" She looked at Lethabo "I'm sorry too, For everything" She walked away.

Lethabo: "Shem I feel sorry for her already, Let's just call her"

Me: "I'm having some trust issues with her, I can't jump into our friendship already" She nods

Lethabo: "Understood! I understand Madam" I chuckled.

NHLAKANI PHO

Cynthia made her way inside holding a package.

Cynthia: "Afternoon Mr Sexy" I chuckled standing up.

Me: "Afternoon Cynthia, what is that?"

She hands it to me.

Cynthia: "It belongs to you, I will leave you to it" I nod and she walked out. I opened the papers and read through it. It's actually a proof about my ring; The Gun smuggling. I Huffed taking my

phone dialing Mlungisi's number.

Mlu: "Mmmh" That was so cold.

Me: "Mlungisi, I need your help"

Mlu: "What is it? I don't deal with anything illegal Nhlakanipho"

Me: "This is serious Mlungisi, I really need your help with this"

Mlu: "What's wrong?"

Me: "Can we meet instead? I can't discuss this over the call"

Mlu: "Cool, send me the details" He immediately disconnected the call.

NOSIBUSISO

I walked out heading home. I should start with dinner before I could study. Hopefully Nhlakanipho

will be here tonight. I sighed at the thought; I miss him. I walked inside the house and went to change, I felt a strange liquid between my thighs. What could it be!? I walked over to the bathroom to look at it, I could be on my periods. Indeed I was! A message came through while I was at it

-I won't be home early, I love you
I sighed walking back to the kitchen after cleaning myself up. I made dinner while it was still early. I was interrupted by a knock, I dragged myself to attend it.

Me: "H...Hi" It was a lady whom
was with Nhlakanipho at the
restaurant when we got back
together.

Her: "You must be Nosibusiso" I
frowned so confused.

Me: "How can I help you?" I don't
know why she's doing here or how
she found this place.

Her: "Can I?" I swallowed hard
before letting her in

Me: "How can I help you?"

Her: "I just came to look at your
eye, and wonder what you
have that drives Nhlakanipho so
crazy" I chuckled

Me: "Don't come here and tell me

shit" She took some steps to me.

Her: "Oh Really?"

Me: "Are you crazy or what?"

Her: "I could be crazy if you

want" I looked at her and suddenly

I felt a hot thingy at my cheek.

Me: "The hell is wrong with

you? You can't come in my house

and do this" a hot slap followed on

me cheek "Oh Hell No" I dragged

her by her weave and slapped her.

She tried to slap me again and I

jumped on top of her punching her

face, I know my fists ain't that

bad. I continued punching her

until I felt someone pulling me.

Nhla: "Sweetheart what is this?"

Me: "Nhlakanipho just keep your hoes on their leash" I clicked my tongue walking upstairs to take a bath.

NHLAKANIPHO

What just happened? I scoffed turning to Ntsiki

Me: "Nontsikelelo what are you doing here?" I helped her up. My baby did a number on her

Ntsiki: "Can't you see I love you Nhlakanipho?"

Me: "What's wrong with you? Why do I always attract some crazy hoes? Look, you'll get out of here and leave my wife alone" I hissed

and she held me tight.

Ntsiki: "But--"

Me: "I'm sorry I led you on, though I told you that I'm in love with Nosibusiso and you kept on entertaining me"

Ntsiki: "You kept on persuading me Nhlakanipho I thought +---"

Me: "You thought wrong, I can never love you Ntsiki"

.....

CHAPTER 61

NOSIBUSISO

He wrapped his hands around me and I pushed him. I don't want anything to do with him at the

moment, he should not try me. I thought he won't be back early, what happened to that?

Nhla: "Sweetheart"

Me: "Do you still love me

Nhlakanipho?" He went quiet for a while then sigh.

Nhla: "What makes you to think of that Sweetheart? Are you doubting me?"

Me: "Do I have a reason to?"

Nhlakanipho you have been so distant lately"

Nhla: "There's something I need to take care of"

Me: "What is it Nhlakanipho?" I turned to look at him "It is

something which i don't have to know as your partner?Huh?"

Nhla:"My Life is a mess,A total mess and I'm scared to lose you!"I shook my head looking straight to him beautiful sexy eyes,he has the most beautiful eyes which always makes my knees feel so weak.

Me:"We all have skeletons Nhlakanipho but we've been together for years,what makes you think I would leave you because of your mess?"

Nhla:"It's way more than that"

Me:"I won't push you to tell me about this Nhlakanipho but

someday you'll have to. You need to trust me" I moved away from him. He held my hand and scoffed Nhlala: "I love you" I nods walking away. I don't know what it is that is going but I feel like Nhlakanipho is treating me like a little girl. I took my phone dialling Nommsa's number.

Nommsa: "Baby sis" She said as soon as she accepted the call.

Me: "Hey sis, How's you?"

Nommsa: "Good, You don't sound fine what's wrong?" I sighed.

Me: "It's nothing I can't fix" I know shes frowning.

Nommsa: "Don't tell me that, Look

tomorrow after school I'm taking you out for a late lunch"

Me:"so don't know..."

Nomsa:"It's on me, I'm not taking No for an answer"

Me:"Ohk then, Thank you sis"

Nomsa:"That's what sisters are for"

Me:"I love you"

Nomsa:"I love you" I disconnected the call with a sigh. I looked up to be met by Nhlakanipho's eyes.

I held the glare without saying anything. I miss him so bad! I

miss Nhlakanipho who used to love me wholeheartedly. Maybe

moving here was a total mistake,

maybe that's why he changed.

Nhla: "I still love you, I love you
and I will always love you

Nosibusiso Dube "I broke the
glare looking away with tears
threatening to drop from my eyes.

Me: "Why are you treating me like
this Nhlakanipho? I feel like an
outsider, like I don't matter to
you"

Nhla: "You know I love you, You
mean everything to me

Sweetheart "I nod

Me: "I... I'll be asleep, Resting" I
say walking upstairs but stopped
and looked at him "I love you

Nhlakanipho, So much" I continued making my way to our bedroom

NHLAKANIPHO

I looked at her as she had her eyes closed, she looked so breathtaking. She's always breathtaking, I pecked her lips walking out of the bedroom. I will be meeting up with Mlungisi, hopefully he's going to help me. In few minutes I was outside of a quiet location as I met a figure, Mlungisi.

Me: "Hy"

Mlu: "Sho, what's up?"

Me: "Mlungisi I need your help,

Hopefully we can put out differences aside and help me with this"

Mlu:"Sho, what is it?"

Me:"I received some file,it had all the evidence. Pictures and whatsoever"

Mlu:"Of your Dealings?"I nod

Me:"Yeah,The Picture of the people I killed and shit!"I Huffed

Mlu:"This is going to be hard, Harder than I thought"

Me:"The Police will be on my tail soon"

Mlu:"I'll sort something out,Now you need to keep my daughter safe Nhlakanipho"

Me: "I'll do that"

Mlu: "I know how much you love my daughter and she loves you too. I may have never gave you my blessings but you need to take care of her, she's in your watch"

Me: "I know, I'll keep her safe"

Mlu: "I'll make some few calls, There are two women in my house and they're frustrating the shit out of me" I chuckled

Me: "Bontle and Nomsa?"

Mlu: "Her Mother, Nomsa's mother"

Me: "That's bad"

Mlu: "She's loud and your typical Auntie kind of a lady. She could

make a perfect Aunt"

Me: "She's Nosi's Aunt"

Mlu: "Yeah, And there's Bontle" He sighed "She's not the same Bontle I fell in love with"

Me: "I'm just glad my woman understands me" It went silence, awkward! I cleared my throat and looked at him "Hope one day you'll give us your blessings, Again I'm sorry for betraying you but I have fallen so Deep for your daughter" I pat his shoulder before I walked away.

NONTSIKELELO

Me: "How dare she?"

Phindi: "You went to their house and attacked her, what did you think would happen?"

Me: "I wanted to fix her, She took my man from me and you're expecting me keep quiet and let things be?"

Phindi: "She didn't take your man from you, You're just obsessed and crazy for my liking"

Me: "I should have killed her"

Phindi: "You're crazy Nontsikelelo! You're so crazy"

Me: "What?"

Phindi: "You--" "I slapped her, she held her cheek and looked at me

"Nontsikelelo what's wrong with you?" I hissed

Me: "I'm sick and tired of your shit! You should find yourself a boyfriend and leave me alone"

Phindi: "W... What?"

Me: "Yes, Just get out of my house"

Phindi: "You're kicking me out?"

Me: "Maybe it'll be better for you to find your own space, get out of my house"

Phindi: "It's 21:00, I can't just up and leave"

Me: "Yes you can, Pack your shit and leave"

Phindi: "One day you'll remember

me Nontsikelelo" She said walking upstairs.

MLUNGISI

I was driving from the Location and I saw a figure of a person. I debated whether to stop or what but it won't hurt. I stopped the car and got out, it was a woman.

Me: "Hy, Hello" She looked at me

Her: "What do you want from me? Please don't hurt me?"

Me: "I won't hurt you, what are you doing on the streets at this time? It's close to 10pm"

Her: "I...I....I have nowhere to go"

Me: "Ow, we can... Uhm I can drop you off at a certain B&B, you can't be here at this time" she shook her head

Her: "No thank you"

Me: "I won't do anything, It's not safe here. Ohk look, You can send my number plate to someone you trust. I mean no harm" She nods and I led her to my car. We climbed in and I pressed the accelerator

Me: "I'm Mlungisi Dube by the way"

Her: "Phindile, Phindile Nkosi" I nods

Me: "You're beautiful" She shifted

uncomfortable" I'm sorry, I didn't mean to make you

uncomfortable" She nods

Phindi: "I don't want to cause trouble with your wife" Her eyes were on my left hand which was on the steering wheel.

Me: "I tell my wife everything, she won't have a problem" I grinned so amused

Phindi: "Oh"

Me: "Yes, I'll book a hotel instead because the B&B's might be far"

Phindi: "They're expensive, I won't afford to pay for a Hotel"

Me: "I'll pay"

Phindi: "I--- "

Me: "I insist"

Phindi: "Ohk" we finally made our way to a certain hotel then I booked for her.

Me: "If you need anything" I hand her my business card "Call me"

Phindi: "Thank you Sir"

Me: "Mlungisi, I'm Mlungisi" she nods, she's so beautiful. Wow!

Phindi: "Thank you Mlungisi, if I need anything" I nod before I made my way back to my car. I sighed driving off. I'm now going back to a hellhole called a home.

.....

CHAPTER 62

NOSIBUSISO

I woke up with Nhlakanipho by my side. I kissed him before I got off the bed heading to the bathroom. I took a quick shower then fixed myself.

Nhla: "Sweetheart, Good Morning"

Me: "Good Morning, I'm leaving"

Nhla: "What? What time is it?"

Me: "I'm attending an early class

Nhlakanipho" He got off the bed and walked over to me.

Nhla: "Is this about me? I know there's no early class" Yes, this is all about you Nhlakanipho.

Me: "No, I have a morning Class to attend and sorry I couldn't prepare any breakfast"

Nhla: "Sweethea---"

Me: "I love you" I immediately walked out heading out of the house. I called for a cab which came in few minutes then it dropped me off at school. I went to Class and did some work until learners started to fill in the Classroom.

Lethabo: "Hey Friend!"

Me: "Hey Lethabo, how's you?"

Lethabo: "I'm good, You?"

Me: "Great, I'm just trying to Study nothing more" I shrugged my shoulders and she nods

Lethabo: "Cool"

Me: "Yeah, You studying too?" She

rolled her eyes with a smile

Lethabo: "Obviously babe, though it feels so frustrating to study alone" I chuckled

Me: "I know right?"

Lethabo: "Yeah! Let's study" She sat next to me taking out her Notes.

"Nosi" I sighed looking at him, how could I forget his annoying voice.

Me: "What do you want from me Qhawe?"

Qhawe: "I miss you"

Me: "Piss off Qhawe, and leave me alone while at it"

Qhawe: "But I miss you, I'm sorry about all the shit I've done"

Me: "You're forgiven, now piss off"

Qhawe: "But I ---"

Me: "Musa ukungicasula

wemfana" [Don't piss me off you boy]

Qhawe: "I wasn't a boy when you wanted to suck my dick" what the hell? I can never do that!

Me: "You're lying! Stop spreading lies about me Qhawe"

Qhawe: "Lies? Not so long ago you were moaning my name.

Remember that?" I stood up looking at him.

Me: "I'm warning you"

Qhawe: "Oh baby come on! You love my Dick"

Me: "I wouldn't go for that tiny stick of a mantches" everyone gasped "You forgot to tell them? How your dick is a piece of shit? You made me moan right? With what exactly?"

Lethabo: "Calm down Nosi"

Me: "No! Qhawe is such a boy who's failing to grow the fuck up"

Lethabo: "N---"

Me: "Lethabo I said No, Someone needs to say this. You're a boy, You need to grow up because boy... I would never go for you even if I wanted to" I clicked my tongue walking out of the classroom for some air.

SIZWE

Me: "Hey"

Portia: "Hey, Come in Simphiwe is still eating" I nod walking inside.

Me: "Baby" She screamed standing

Simphiwe: "Dada Dada" I smiled picking her up

Me: "How's my baby doing"

Simphiwe: "Khumiye" [I miss you"

Me: "Nchoow Ngikukhumbulile nami baby" [I miss you too]

Portia: "She won't eat, I'll just place this at the kitchen"

Me: "Cool" She walked away.

Simphiwe: "Habha Dada" [Let's go]

Me: "We're leaving soon"

baby"Portia came back with her bag.

Portia:"Here, I'll miss you My baby"

Simpfiwe:"Dada"

Portia:"You always turn on me when your Daddy's here"I chuckled taking the bag.

Me:"She's Daddy's little girl"

Portia:"Yeah ey"

Me:"Let us go, I'll see you

Ohk?"She nods

Portia:"Travel safe"

MLUNGISI

Bontle:"You came back home late last night"

Me: "I had something to fix"

Bontle: "Oh"

Me: "Is my baby healthy?"

Bontle: "Huh?"

Me: "The baby Bontle, Is he healthy?"

Bontle: "O... of course"

Me: "Great, because we got a Doctor's appointment later today" I stood up

Bontle: "An appointment? I didn't know anything about any appointment and besides I don't need a Doctor"

Me: "That's why I'm telling you, you don't need a Doctor but my baby does"

Martha: "Should I prepare something for Lunch Baba?" I frowned and looked at her

Me: "I won't be able to come back"

Martha: "I can bring the Lunch to you, no problem"

Nomsa: "Ma" Firmly, she said.

Martha: "Awngyeke Nomsa, A Zulu man needs to eat" [Leave me alone]

Bontle: "A Zulu man needs to be fed by his wife and you're not Mlungisi's wife"

Martha: "Angikakbuzanga" [I didn't ask you] I walked over to kiss Nomsa's Cheek

Me: "I love you, have a few day"

Nomsa: "I love you too Dad" I walked out leaving these two argue. I will go and check out on Phindile, the beautiful lady.

I drove to the Hotel and head to the receptionist.

Me: "Good Morning ma'am"

Receptionist: "Morning Sir, How can I help you?"

Me: "I'm looking for Phindile Nkosi, she checked in last night"

Receptionist: "Oh, let me see" She tapped the computer "Oh Yeah, Should I call in so she could come down here?"

Me: "Yes, You can" I waited a bit for her

Receptionist: "She's coming" I thanked her "You can take a sit there Sir, while waiting for her" Me: "Thank you again" I went to sit down. She came back looking so beautiful as ever.

Me: "Awww Nkosazana, You look beautiful" She smiled

Phindi: "Thank you, You don't look bad yourself"

Me: "I look good, Can I take you out for some breakfast"

Phindi: "Look how I've dressed, Tracksuits"

Me: "We're going for some breakfast Nkosazana"

Phindi: "Ohk then, we can" I smiled and led her.

NOSIBUSISO

I didn't feel Fine so I sent a text to Nomsa saying I won't make it to the late lunch. I head straight home afterschool, I need a nap. I was welcomed by an aroma which smelled so delicious, I head to the kitchen finding Nhlakanipho in his short and an Apron-Only. He was barefoot and didn't have a T-shirt on.

Me: "Good Afternoon"

Nhla: "Hey sweetheart" He walked over to me and pecked my lips "Go

and change, we're having a special chef in the house" I giggled.

Me: "Oh my Goodness

Nhlakanipho! I... I love this, I should capture this moment"

Nhla: "Do that sweetheart, do that and watch your sexy chef making some magic" I giggled walking upstairs to change. After that I went back downstairs and took some pictures while talking and laughing, we were even gossiping. I miss him and I'm enjoying this.

Me: "I love you baby"

Nhla: "I know you do" He said with a girly voice causing me to laugh.

We were interrupted by a knock coming through

Me: "Are you expecting someone? I hope it's not one of your hoes again"

Nhla: "Come on sweetheart, go and attend the door"

Me: "Mmmh" I made my way to the door "Good Afternoon" It was the police.

Police officer: "Afternoon, I'm here for Nhlakanipho Mhlongo is he Here?"

Me: "What do you want from him?"

Nhla: "Sweetheart who's there?" He shouts coming down here

Police officer: "Very well, Nhlakanipho Mhlongo we're having a warrant to search this place"

Nhla: "Oh"

Me: "What the hell? Baby what's going on? Please tell me"

Nhla: "Relax Sweetheart, you're welcome to search the place. We'll be in the kitchen having some lunch" he says letting them in

Me: "Nhlakanipho what's wrong?"

Nhla: "Don't mind them

Sweetheart, Lunch is ready" I sighed deeply. What's happening?

.....

CHAPTER 63

NOSIBUSISO

They came down while we were still eating. The Police officer in which I'm sure he hates Nhlakanipho stood next to us. You could tell that he hates Nhlakanipho; the look he was giving him.

Nhla: "Are you done? Satisfied with everything Captain?" So he's the Captain

Captain: "I'm watching you Mhlongo" Nhlakanipho sighed and looked straight up to him

Nhla: "Mmmh, Close the door on your way out" They turned walking away and I looked at him.

Me: "Tell me everything"

Nhla: "Tell you what?"

Me: "I want to know everything
Nhlakanipho! I can't be here with
you if you don't trust me" I say
standing up and he stood up too.

Nhla: "Sweetheart you're not
ready for this" I Huffed looking at
him. What the Hell is happening
with Nhlakanipho, where's the
trust?

Me: "I'm with you ain't I?"

Meaning whatever it is, I'm
ready for it now tell me
everything Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "Sweetheart No" I shook my
head walking upstairs with him

behind me "Where are you going?"

Me: "To hell with you Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "You can't tell me that" I turned and looked at him

Me: "I'm Mad Nhlakanipho, So Mad and I can tell you anything that's on my mind" I continued making my way to the bedroom. I stepped in heading straight to take a Suitcase.

Nhla: "What are you doing?"

Me: "I'm moving out! That's what I'm doing"

Nhla: "You can't just up and leave Sweetheart, For what? Because I can't tell you shit?"

Me: "I was about to have a Late

Lunch with my man when police officers walked in demanding to search the place" I shout dragging the suitcase to the bed as I started taking all my clothes from the Closet. I don't have many clothes so that helped, I wasn't planning on leaving him but I knew if I do this he'll tell me the truth.

Nhla: "When we're having problems you're going to up and leave?"

Me: "We're not having problems, You're the one having problems on trusting me"

Nhla: "That's what I hate about this relationship! You can't handle

me "I felt it sink, I can't handle him! Wow!

Me: "That's a low blow Nhlakanipho, I'm glad that I know how you actually feel about this---" I pointed between us "whatever this is"

Nhla: "That's not what I meant"

Me: "That's what you meant, you meant every single word of it Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "Sweetheart let's talk"

Me: "No" I say frustrated walking out of the bedroom without my suitcase "I need some air"

Nhla: "Let's talk!" I walked out of the house, tears were

threatening to fall but I wasn't about to cry. I walked around until I found myself at home, The Dube household. It's not too far from where I live so it took me halve an hour to get there. I rang the bell and it was easy to go in. I knocked twice until the door was pulled opened, It was my father.

Me: "Daddy" I finally let out a cry. He held me to his arms brushing my back while I let everything out, I needed this. I cried till I couldn't anymore.

Mlu: "Come" we made our way to the Cinema room, he played some

Disney Movies "Tell me what's wrong?"

Me: "It's nothing"

Mlu: "That wasn't Nothing, I'm still your father Nosibusiso. You might have disappointed me or something but I love you" I smiled and he took me in his arms again.

Me: "I had an argument with Nhlakanipho"

Mlu: "Oh" I sighed

Me: "Police came to search the place, He's been so distant lately and I think the Police has something to do with that. I asked for him to tell me what's happening but he didn't want

to, I started packing my shit" He chuckled "Sorry about the language uhmm... Well he started telling me how I can't handle him and that's what he hates in our relationship"

Mlu: "You're still young for this baby, That's what I was afraid of when I found out about your relationship with Nhlakanipho"

Me: "Oh"

Mlu: "Nhlakanipho is a grown ass man" obviously! I can't say that though "He has some hidden skeletons which he's afraid to tell you about, because he thinks he'll lose you" I nod with understanding.

Me: "I feel like he doesn't trust me"

Mlu: "He trust you so much baby, Just be patient with him and support him. I don't approve of your relationship still but he loves you and maybe... Just maybe one day I'll approve, after all his shit"

Me: "Language Dad" He laughed and I joined him.

Mlu: "Sorry"

Me: "You're forgiven"

Mlu: "When are you coming back home? You can't stay with Nhlakanipho forever you know" I sighed.

Me: "Dad let's wait a little bit, I...
I'll come back but not now"

Mlu: "Well Ohk but it better be
soon" I chuckled

Me: "It will be"

Mlu: "And don't make a baby, I'm
too Handsome to be a

Grandfather" I laughed at that.

Me: "Oh Daddy let's not talk about
that"

Mlu: "Well Phindile finds me cute a--
"He cleared his throat

Me: "Phindile? Oh Daddy you got a
new woman in your life" I grinned
looking at him

Mlu: "No I... There's no woman"

Me: "You can tell me you know"

Mlu: "Let's not talk about that mababy, how's school?"

MAPULA

I'm glad I have found help, though it seems like I'm drifting from the Dube family. I've been meaning to talk to Dad about finding my family, I have long placed the issue on my head though I was scared. I walked downstairs and the ladies were here.

Me: "Good Evening"

Bontle: "Good Evening" I nod and walked over to the kitchen, Nomsa made her way in.

Nomsa: "Hy"

Me: "Hey"

Nomsa: "You good?" I nod gulping down some water.

Me: "Yeah you?" I say after playing the water bottle on top of the table.

Nomsa: "I'm good" It went silence for a while "Look Mapula, I don't hate you" I turned and looked at her

Me: "What?"

Nomsa: "I don't hate you, I know you think we hate you or something but you're part of the family and we love you"

Me: "Yeah" I sighed

Nomsa: "Nosibusiso will definitely come around, she... she doesn't trust you at the moment so I'd suggest you give her some time"

Me: "Thank you for the talk and I'm glad you guys are not hating on me"

Nomsa: "Great, because I was us to prepare some dinner"

Me: "With me?"

Nomsa: "Yes come on, this will be fun" I giggled

Me: "Ohk I guess, Let's prepare some dinner then"

SIZWE

I was playing with Simphiwe when Mom made her way inside, she looked at me and smiled.
Mom: "You're such a great Dad"
Me: "Well, It comes naturally"
Mom: "True that" I sighed and placed Simphiwe down before I turn to Mom.

Me: "Mom there's something I need to tell you"

Mom: "Oh"

Me: "Yes, well I... I'm leaving South Africa"

Mom: "What?" I sighed again, looking down.

Me: "There's so much going on so I'm leaving South Africa, I want

to be alone so I will be able to think Straight"

Me: "What about your daughter Sizwe?" I looked at her.

Me: "I'll come back Mom, It's just for some few months"

Mom: "Are you sure about this?"

Me: "So sure, I need this more than anything"

Mom: "Fine"

Me: "Fine?"

Mom: "You need this baby, You've been so restless and exhausted so I know you need this more than anything"

Me: "Please look after them, Simphiwe and her Mom"

Mom: "I'll do that" I smiled as she pulled me for a hug "I love you my baby"

Me: "I love you too Mom"

NOSIBUSISO

I sent a message to Nhlakanipho telling him I'm safe and I'll be spending the night here. We've been locked out in the Cinema room watching Disney Movies. Dad thinks I'm a baby and I need these. I really appreciate him being by my side.

Mlu: "Let's go down for dinner"

Me: "I'm not looking forward for this"

Mlu" "Let's go" I nod as we walked out heading downstairs.

Me: "Good Evening" Nomisa smiled looking at me.

Nomisa: "Oh Baby sis! I didn't know you're here" I chuckled.

Me: "I came here so unexpected"

Nomisa: "Great! Let me get a plate for you" I nod and she walked away. I've never been in a same room as Aunt Martha after the Village thing.

Martha: "Yoo h usukhulile mntwana kaNomasonto" [You have grown Nomasonto's child] I nod without saying anything. Nomisa came back and placed a plate for me. We

settled around the table.

Me: "Mapula hey"

Mapula: "Hey Nosi"

Me: "How are you doing?"

Mapula: "Good, I'm taking it step by step. You?" I smiled

Me: "Good too" she nods.

Bontle: "I.. I'm going to sleep"

Mlu: "What's wrong?"

Bontle: "I'm not feeling good, I'll be Resting"

Mlu: "Cool" She looked at Dad before she stood up heading upstairs.

Nomsa: "Dad when are you going to see a Doctor for the Pregnancy?"

Mlu: "Tomorrow, why are you asking?" She shrugged her shoulders

Nomsa: "I just can't wait to see a scan"

Mlu: "Same here my princess"

Nomsa: "Well Family, Tomorrow I'm leaving. My husband needs me"

Mlu: "I don't understand why you're still married to that idiot! Your father is here now so you don't need him"

Me: "Dad!"

Mlu: "What? My baby is still young for marriage" God! My Dad!

NHLAKANI PHO

Me: "Is she really safe?"

Mandla: "Yes boss, she's at her home" I nod

Me: "Sho Mandla, keep your eyes at her throughout" She's going to kill me when she finds out I'm having her watched.

Mandla: "Sho boss" I disconnected the call and looked at the plan on my hands. I need to do this, before I find myself in Jail.

Though I'm not afraid of going there, but that would be a nightmare to my baby.

.....

CHAPTER 64

NOSIBUSISO

The atmosphere was refreshing, knowing that my Dad has my side was one of the highlights in my life at the moment. I made my way inside the school premises, I wore the school uniform which belonged to me when I was still staying at home. Lethabo was tapping her phone and looked up to me as soon as I approached her.

Lethabo: "Look who just arrived" I grinned pulling her in for a hug.

We pulled out

Me: "You're happy" I stated.

Lethabo: "Well my babe is loving and caring, so I don't have a reason to be mad" I nod with a smile, I was happy for her. She deserves the best

Me: "I'm happy for you Friend! That player is really keeping you on your toes" She playfully slapped my shoulder causing me to laugh. She joined in, laughing.

Lethabo: "Did you do Mathematics homework?" I gasped and quickly rushed to the classroom leaving her running behind me "You didn't do it?"

Me: "Yesterday was a very hectic

day so I didn't get a chance to write it"

Lethabo: "What's wrong?"

Me: "Nhlakanipho w---" I stopped and looked at her before I shook my head "Never mind"

Lethabo: "Oh" She nods taking out her Maths book and hand it over to me "You can copy from here, that will save you some time" I sighed taking it from her

Me: "Thank you babes, Let me get to it" I say settling on the chair. Time passed and it was Lunch Time. We both packed our books and we made our way out.

Me: "I'm just glad Daddy got my

side"

Lethabo: "I'm happy for you dear friend, you really needed that I can tell"

Me: "I needed that"

Lethabo: "I'm glad, there's Mapula" I followed where she was pointing and there she was, she was alone having lunch. I missed our crazy moments, our friendship! I miss all those memories. I sighed looking back at Lethabo.

Me: "Let's go and have lunch"

Lethabo: "Go and talk to her" I knew who she was talking about.

Me: "No..."

Lethabo: "I'll be in our spot" I nod walking to where Mapula was. She looked up to me and faintly smiled.

Me: "Hey"

Mapula: "Hi" We didn't talk in the morning, we didn't use the same transport to school. I cleared my throat

Me: "Can we talk" She nods and I sat on the bench "Look Mapula I miss you" She looked at me narrowing her eyes at me.

Mapula: "Really?" I nod

Me: "I miss our friendship, we've come a long way and I don't think there should be anything

separating us" She looked behind me.

Mapula: "You have a great friend there"

Me: "You're a great friend

Mapula, we might have had our differences but you're a great friend" she nods as a smile slowly formed across her face. She looked at me

Mapula: "I missed you too" I smiled and I looked back, Lethabo was focused on her food. I looked back at Mapula.

Me: "You can join us"

Mapula: "No..." She shook her head "I don't want to... to g--" I

interrupted her before she could continue.

Me: "Come let's go" I dragged her to our spot.

NHLAKANIPTHO

My phone rang as I was focused on my laptop. I sighed accepting the call.

Me: "Mandla"

Mandla: "Boss, we found them"

Me: "Zama and Cowen?"

Mandla: "Yes, they were about to board a plane to Argentina" I smiled widely.

Me: "Good Job Mandla, I'll call you back soon"

Mandla: "Sho Boss" I disconnected the call as I stood up gathering my things then I walked out of my office.

Me: "Cynthia cancel all my meetings"

Cynthia: "You have an important meeting Mr sir" I chuckled

Me: "Cancel them Cynthia! I got an important thing to sort out" I walked out heading to the parking lot. I climbed in the car and pressed the accelerator dialing Mlungisi's phone number.

Mlu: "Yeah"

Me: "You should try, 'Hey son-in-law'" I mock him.

Mlu: "You're pushing it, I hope you're not fucking my baby girl"

Me: "You should hear her screaming my name 'Oohh baby... Nhlakanipho'" I imitate Nosibusiso's voice in terms of mocking.

Mlu: "Hey watch it!"

Me: "Yeah whatever!" I laughed and he joined in. He suddenly kept quiet and I knew there was something coming.

Mlu: "I don't like it when you make Nosi sad, what happened yesterday?" I kept quiet, Silence took over before he can say something again "Nhlakanipho"

I'm talking" I Huffed shifting uncomfortable from my sit. I looked ahead of the road.

Me:"We had a misunderstanding, it's non of your business though"

Mlu:"She's my baby gi---"

Me:"She's my woman" It went quiet. I sighed "I don't appreciate it when we're having these kinds of talks, I feel... I don't know"

Mlu:"I'm sorry, I'm just being a concerned Father"

Me:"I understand, I'm sorry too" he cleared his throat.

Mlu:"Yeah so, what's up?"

Me:"My guy got Zama and Cowen"

Mlu: "Mandla is the best! I'm just happy that everything will go back to normal"

Me: "Hopefully, The Police are still on my tail"

Mlu: "Hope everything will be fine"

Me: "Yeah, So what's up on your side? I can sense the different air" I say to him and he chuckled.

Mlu: "Well there's nothing..."

Me: "Ooow Really?"

Mlu: "Ohk fine there's this lady s--
-" I interrupted him

Me: "So there's a lady in it, this is interesting and it needs to be laid off with a glass of whiskey"

Mlu: " Macallan 1926 Valerio

Adami Peter Blake;Your favorite"
Me:" The world's Most Expensive
Whisky

Bottle Sold for \$1.1 Million, you
know"

Mlu:"Just send the details I'll be
there"

Me:"Cool"I disconnected and in in
few minutes I packed on the
driveway. I was going to organise
a dinner date with my baby,the
first dinner date.

NOMSA

I ran up to the bathroom and
vomited everything as I felt like
my intestines are coming out of

my mouth. I felt Mvelo's hand on my back.

Mvelo: "Are you Fine?" I nod standing up to rinse my mouth

Me: "Yeah, maybe it's something I ate"

Mvelo: "Or maybe we should go and see a Doctor" I shook my head looking at him.

Me: "It's nothing, I'm fine Mvelo stop worrying about me" He nods but he wasn't believing it. I could tell by how he looked at me.

Mvelo: "Let me prepare something for you, to eat" I shook my head

Me: "I should go and rest" He narrowed his eyes at me and

slowly nod "What is it?"

Mvelo: "No" He shook his head "Nothing" I nod for the hundredth times for the day.

Me: "Let me go and rest"

Mvelo: "Let me help you to our bedroom"

Me: "Aaay Mvelo just because I was vomiting it doesn't mean I'm sick or something eh"

Mvelo: "I'm just helping my wife to our bedroom, there's nothing wrong with that"

Me: "There's something wrong when you look at me like that"

Mvelo: "Mmmh, let's go to our bedroom" I shrugged my

shoulders as we walked over to our bedroom

NOSIBUSISO

I walked inside the house and I went straight to the bedroom, I need a long cold bath. I stripped naked as I walked to the bathroom and prepared a bath. After that I stepped inside closing my eyes. It was really good, I sighed enjoying it. I got done in few hours, 2-3 hours then stepped out of the bath. I wonder where's Nhlakanipho, or he's still at work. It's 6pm. I found a letter with a single Red

Rose on top of the bed.

- You're a rare flower, I'm glad you're mine.

I smiled taking the Rose then I placed it back as I made my way to the Closet. There was another Red Rose on the floor with a note, I picked it up.

- You're worth a Million, Loving you is so simple because it comes naturally.

I picked it up and opened the Closet, there was another Red Rose in there with a note.

- There's a Dress simply made for you, From your sexy handsome man. It's on top of the cabinet.

I laughed walking straight to the cabinet and there was a Black beautiful dress. On top of the dress there was another Red Rose

- I can be such an idiot but you love this idiot right? I'm sorry about yesterday.

Nhlakanipho can be so Romantic, I totally forgot about what happened yesterday. I smiled and got dressed in that Dress. When did he prepare everything because I didn't hear him when he does this? I fixed myself and I was so gorgeous. I smiled walking downstairs, there was another

Red Rose and a note at the end of the staircase.

- I'll be waiting for you, Zack is your driver.

I walked out and there was a driver waiting for me.

Me: "You must be Zack"

Him: "Yes ma'am, Please" He opened the door and I climbed in. He did too before he drove off.

The drive was so silence, we finally packed out of a restaurant- it looked expensive. Zack opened the door for me and I climbed out.

Me: "Thank you Zack"

Zack: "You're welcome Ma'am, Sir is

waiting for you" I nod and I walked inside the restaurant. That beautiful sound of saxophone was playing. It brought so much peace and a comfortable silence

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I looked up meeting his gaze, his sexy eyes were sparkling a little bit brighter today.

Me: "Nhlakanipho" I didn't think my voice was going to come out but I'm glad it didn't betray me.

Nhla: "I'm glad you listened to my Red Roses to you" I smiled widely

Me: "I'm sorry about yesterday"

Nhla: "Don't, today it's about us."

Without fights or arguments, just us" My heart melt to his words as he led me inside.

.....

CHAPTER 65

NOSIBUSISO

We settled at the far corner of the restaurant, the atmosphere is very welcoming and I found myself smiling a lot. I didn't know Nhlakanipho can be so romantic but here we are.

Me: "This is.." I looked up to him and smiled, widely "Beautiful, I love it"

Nhla: "I'm glad you do

sweetheart"

Me: "Can we now order?" He chuckled with a nod.

Nhla: "Yeah, we can" He raised his hand calling for a waiter/ waitress which came to our table in a speed of light.

Waiter: "Good Evening, Can I take your order?" Nhlakanipho placed the order, knowing my favourite dish I didn't mind. The waiter made his way out of our sight and I looked at Nhlakanipho.

Me: "What are we really celebrating?"

Nhla: "Do I need a reason to spoil my woman?" I shrugged my

shoulders "I know things weren't pretty good between us sweetheart but everything is working out"

Me: "What is everything Nhlakanipho?"

Nhla: "I'll tell you all about it next time, you're just not ready for it at the moment" I sighed and the waiter walked over to our table with out Dish.

Waiter: "Here's your Dish" I smiled

Me: "Thank you" He smiled, faintly walking away from our sight.

Nhla: "You don't have to smile to every guy you know" Pissed, he said. I popped my eyes at him.

Me: "Don't you dare control me" I Huffed And he sighed deeply.

Nhla: "I'm not controlling, it was just an innocent statement now let's eat"

Me: "Wait..., You're Jealous?" He looked away avoiding my eyes "You're literally jealous because of an innocent smile?" I suddenly laughed at that. Is he really Jealous?

Nhla: "Stop it" I couldn't stop, I continued laughing.

Me; "Oh my Goodness" He shook his head looking down at his food "Baby"

Nhla: "Aaay Maan Nosi" I kept

quiet and a smile, a wide smile flashed across my face.

Me: "Wow, Unbelievable" I snorts looking at my plate.

Nhla: "I wasn't Jealous though, they look like they want you. Smiling like that is..." He shook his head "I don't like it"

Me: "Mmmh" the waiter came to take our plates after we were done then we ordered some wine.

Nhlakanipho shifted his chair closer to mine. We kept on chatting and having wine, I was enjoying each and every every second of this.

Nhla: "I'm horny" I gasped and

looked around the restaurant, everyone was focused on their own thing

Me: "Nhlakanipho" I whispered to him, softly.

Nhla: "I miss bending you while taking you from the back" He whispered and I almost choke on my wine, what is he trying to do?

Me: "Nhlakanipho p... please" I gag and flushed looking down. He slowly took my hand and placed it on his pants making me feel his dick. I immediately crossed my legs under the table, my thighs were boiling with fluid. I exhaled as I started massaging his

dick, he cuss under his breath and his hand went under my dress. I don't know how he was able to do that, his hand slid between my thighs after patting for me to open up my legs. He slid my panties to the side and went straight to play with my honeypot

Me: "Nhl.... Oh God" He was doing everything so perfect. I closed my eyes enjoying the moment, a moan escaped and I quickly flipped my eyes open and looked around the restaurant again; everyone was focusing on what they were doing. A gasp escaped from my lips as

soon as his finger slid inside me. I looked up to him and his eyes were red.

Nhla: "Damn Sweetheart" He cussed and continued fingering me, my mind was just all over the place and the pleasure I was getting wasn't doing any justice. I kept on brushing his dick which was now hard and ready for action. I couldn't hold it anymore, The juices just gushed from my honeypot and I felt some electric flowing all over my body. We went silence for a while until someone broke the silence
Waiter: "Are you fine? Can I get

you anything?" Nhlakanipho pushed the fork as it fell down followed by a glass "Oh my God I'm sorry I --- "

Nhla: "It's my fault, let me pick them up"

Waiter: "I can do it"

Nhla: "No" He went under the table as I suddenly felt my panties being pulled off me, I then knew that the fork thing wasn't an accident. He came out under the table and I looked at him and he placed my panties in his pocket and placed the fork back on the table. He had a smirk across his face.

Waiter: "I'm Terribly s---"

Nhla: "No need, It was my fault" The waiter nods "Can we get the Bill?" His eyes were screaming 'Horney!'

Waiter: "I'll get it" He walked away and I looked at Nhlakanipho.

Me: "Are you going to be fine? With.." I pointed his bulge. He hesitate but nod anyway.

Nhla: "I'm... I'll be fine" The waiter came back and Nhlakanipho paid the Bill not forgetting to tip the waiter some few bucks. He was jealous of him not so long ago, I shook my head.

We walked out of the restaurant in silence until we made our way to a certain car, maybe he came with it. He helped me climb inside and he did too before pressing the accelerator.

He kept on cussing under his breath as I kept on asking what's wrong? He would shake his head until he pulled out on the side of the road. He climbed out bagging the door and I did too.

Me: "Nhlakanipho what's wrong?"

Nhla: "I'm Good"

Me: "No you're not, what's up Nhlakanipho?" He turned to look at me with his sexy Red eyes

Nhla: "Fine" He cussed, it looked like he's cussing a lot tonight "I'm horny baby, my eyes hurts a little"

Me: "It is possible for such?"

Nhla: "I don't know, yeah maybe it's possible because .. look how I am" he looked really out of it.

Me: "Let me h--"

Nhla: "I'll be fine" I stepped closer to him and I placed my hand on his bulge which was so huge; it seems like it's growing in seconds

"Sweetheart let's leave it" He

walked back to the car and I

followed. We climbed in and settled in a comfortable silence.

Me: "I don't understand the so so

horny Nhlakanipho" He chuckled
Nhla: "Njomane is betraying me
and I want to be inside of you so
bad" I smiled and my hands went
to unzip his pants "What are you
doing?"

Me: "Just drive" I say and took out
Njomane as I kneel on the seat
leaning to look at this big
monster. He was swollen and veins
were popping "Did it have to be
this big?"

Nhla: "It's a Family thing
sweetheart" I chuckled and licked
the tip. I followed my
accomodating all of him inside my
mouth and he groaned. This is

going to be such a long damn night.

BONTLE

The night was slowly ending and soon it'll be morning. I knew that my life is over-totally over! I kept on tossing and turning on the Queen size bed which felt so cold without Mlungisi. He suggested that he will use a guest room and I don't know the reason behind all of that. Finally the clock clicked 7am. I had to get out of the covers. I did my hygiene process and head downstairs
Me: "Good Morning"

Martha: "Morning MaDube"

Me: "Right! What do you really want? Shouldn't you be at the village scrubbing floors?"

Martha: "Ungangilingi" [Don't test me] I rolled my eyes.

Me: "Yeah whatever! You don't belong here and you know it"

Martha: "Nguba oktjele

loyomsangano? Ungunondindwa nje kphela kungenzeka ukuthi

naleyongane oyithwele aksiyona

kamlungisi" [Who told you that

nonsense? You're only a slut and it could happen that the child you're carrying is not Mlungisi's child]

Me: "Don't you dare shit on me"

Martha: "Ngiyazi idiniso liyahlababa" [I know thruth hurts] I clicked my tongue as Mlungisi made his way downstairs.

Mlu: "Morning"

Martha: "Sawbona

Baba" [Greeting] I rolled my eyes walking over to kiss Mlungisi's cheek.

Me: "Morning my Love"

Mlu: "Are you ready?" I looked at him confused

Me: "Ready?"

Mlu: "I scheduled the Doctor's appointment for this morning" My heart beat out of my chest and I nod

Me: "Let me go and get ready"
I walked upstairs to get ready then I went downstairs. We walked out heading to the car, the drive to the hospital was rather silent. We finally parked and there was nothing I could do. My Lotus finally over!

Mlu: "Come" I followed behind him and we head to the receptionist
"Good Morning, I'm here for Dr Nhlapho"

Receptionist: "Mlungisi Dube?"

Mlu: "Yes"

Receptionist: "He's expecting you" Mlu nods and we head to what I believe it's an office.

There was a man who looked so young to be a Doctor. They exchanged greetings and everything but my mind was far. Dr Nhlapho: "Mrs Dube can you please lay down here" I nod and did as told. He applied something which was so cold then he placed something moving it around my stomach.

Dr Nhlapho: "The heartbeat" My heart beat as I heard that sound, the sound of a heartbeat "Can you hear the heartbeat?" Mlungisi looked at the screen and a tear escaped, he smiled and looked at me.

Mlu: "Thank you" I nod as the Doctor wiped off the gel and help me climb off the bed.

Dr Nhlapho: "Here are the scans" He hand them over and I took two while Mlungisi took Three.

Mlu: "Thank you"

Dr Nhlapho: "Mrs Dube you must keep things easy, stress is not good for the baby and I hope you'll have a healthy lifestyle. Make sure you live in a healthy environment" I nod with understanding

NONTSIKELELO

I paced up and down the living room thinking of ways to get closer to Nhlakanipho, I didn't have any plan. My phone suddenly rang and I answered.

Me: "Good Day"

Mom: "Hy Nontsikelelo" I sighed

Me: "Ma"

Mom: "Please leave the Mhlongo's alone"

Me: "Mom why can't we just talk without involving them?"

Mom: "We can't ignore the fact that you're obsessed with this boy"

Me: "I love him, those are two different things"

Mom: "My daughter please take your Meds, or Come home before you end up in a lonely bin"

Me: "Goodbye Mom" I disconnected the call throwing it on the table.

PHINDILE

There was a knock on the door when I just finished showering. I opened and was surprised when I saw Mlungisi. Thi man was just so perfect but he was not for me; he's not for me. I've been broken in my past and I don't see myself getting involved with him in any romantic way.

Me: "Hi"

Mlu: "Hey" He cleared his throat "Can I?" I nod allowing him in as I closed the door behind. I turned to be met by some wet lips on mine. I wanted so much to pull away but I couldn't, I wanted this so much. He was holding me with so much care, he was handling me so perfect. We finally pulled away and I looked away avoiding his eyes.

Mlu: "I've been meaning to do that for a while but I didn't want it to look like I'm taking advantage of you" I sighed walking over to settle on the bed.
Me: "I'm not ready for any

relationship Mlungisi"

Mlu: "I'm not going anywhere if that's what you think I'll do. I want you"

Me: "You're Married"

Mlu: "That doesn't stop me from falling for you"

Me: "I'm not a homewrecker"

Mlu: "My relationship with my wife is not good, they were not good before I met you"

Me: "So if things ain't good in a relationship you're leaving? It's what you do?"

Mlu: "No" He scoffed "I have fallen out of love with her, Phindile I want you"

Me: "Mlungisi I..." I sighed.

Mlu: "I was aiming to cut ties with her but now things are complicated, she's pregnant and I...it seems like she'll always be part of my life" That's another thing.

Me: "Well maybe that's a good reason for you to work things out"

Mlu: "I will divorce her and we'll co-parent.. I want you Phindile so please don't shut me out" I feel something for him but I'm broken to be with him, I also have my issues.

.....

CHAPTER 66

NHLAKANIPHO

The day went by too quickly and I was meeting up with Mlungisi. I head back to the apartment and Nosi was watching television.

Me: "Good Evening Sweetheart"

Nosi: "Baby, Evening" I pecked her lips and settled on the couch with her.

Me: "When did you last have your periods?" I asked and she narrowed her eyes at me.

Nosi: "Days back when we were... well fighting" She shrugged her shoulders "But it was just two days and my menstruation goes for Four days"

Me: "Mmmh" I nod

Nosi: "Why are you asking?"

Me: "It's.. It's nothing"

Nosi: "I hope you ain't planning on making me pregnant Nhlakanipho, and we've...oh my God we didn't use any protection" I sighed and looked at her.

Me: "Sweetheart I ---"

Nosi: "I'm just glad I had my periods, so I can't be pregnant"

Me: "Yeah"

Nosi: "Yeah, You came back home a little bit early today"

Me: "I'm meeting up with Mlungisi, that's why"

Nosi: "Oh, should I dish out for

you?" I nod pecking her lips again
Me: "I'll be taking a shower then
I'll eat" She smiled and stood up.
I head upstairs to take a quick
shower. Just then my phone rang
as Sizwe's name flashed on my
phone screen.

Sizwe: "My dear brother"

Me: "Eey bro, how's you? How are
you holding up?"

Sizwe: "Things are good, I'm
finding myself but damn... I miss
you guys"

Me: "Who wouldn't miss me?" He
chuckled

Sizwe: "You're such an ass, where's
my sister-in-law?" I chuckled

Me: "She's downstairs preparing food"

Sizwe: "You should wife her"

Me: "I'm having a ring"

Sizwe: "Oh really? Why ain't you popping the question and when did you get it?"

Me: "I was just walking by to attend a meeting and this big diamond ring caught my eye so I couldn't leave it behind and she's not ready for marriage"

Sizwe: "Oh you say? Well Fine but if you want to pop the question you can do so and get married after she's done with it school"

Me: "Well.. "I cleared my throat

"I'll see"

Sizwe: "Cool, I'll call you then"

Me: "Sho" I disconnected the call before I got done with my hygiene process then I then head back downstairs.

Nosi: "You're back, let me go and get your plate"

Me: "I'm wifing you soon sweetheart" She giggled walking to the kitchen and head back with a plate.

Nosi: "Here"

Me: "Thank you sweetheart"

Nosi: "You're welcome baby, I'll be starting with my Exams soon"

Me: "I know you'll ace them, I'll

help you out with studying" She smiled widely

Nosi: "Great" I pulled her closer and ate while she started gossiping about school scandals.

PHINDILE

We were settled on top of the bed having some yoghurt. I know what I'm doing with him is wrong but I can't help it. The way he's handling me it's just perfect!

Mlu: "I'm meeting up with my friend"

Me: "Oh, you have a friend" it was a statement.

Mlu: "I'm a human My Love,

Nhlakanipho is a great guy s---

"Which Nhlakanipho?"

Me: "Which Nhlakanipho?" I hope it's not the Nhlakanipho my sister is obsessed with.

Mlu: "Nhlakanipho Mhlongo, do you perhaps know him?"

Me: "I have never met him but I know about him" I sighed "My sister is obsessed with him and I... That's one of the reasons why I was kicked out of her apartment"

Mlu: "I don't know anything about Nhlakanipho and your sister" I sighed

Me: "Oh, I thought you knew

about that" I cleared my throat and he held me a little bit closer.

Mlu: "No, so your sister..."

Me: "My sister has bipolar disorder and she doesn't want to take her Meds. She's obsessed with

Nhlakanipho but he doesn't want her, she says he's in love with

someone else" I honestly say and he nods with understanding

Mlu: "Nhlakanipho is dating my daughter"

I looked up to him, I really don't understand him.

Me: "I thought Nhlakanipho is old and he's your best friend, I don't understand"

Mlu: "Well I my daughter is 18, Nhlakanipho is 33 and there was nothing I could do to break them apart because I almost lost my daughter"

Me: "I understand, Love is love ey"

Mlu: "Clearly, thinking about them fucking is..." I laughed and he chuckled softly

Me: "I feel you"

Mlu: "Don't laugh, that shit is disgusting"

Me: "Well don't imagine it then"

Mlu: "I'll try to" It went quiet for a while and I looked up to him. He was smiling

Me: "Why are you smiling?"

Mlu: "I love this, spending time with you" I shifted uncomfortable and looked away. He softly held my chin making me to look at him "You're beautiful Phindile"

Me: "I..I..."

Mlu: "Don't say anything, Just know that you're beautiful" I smiled as he leaned over to kiss me. As always, his kiss is passionate and he'll leave you craving for more. We pulled out and he smiled.

Mlu: "I should go"

Me: "Mmmh" I found myself licking my lips and he chuckled.

Mlu: "I love you" I nod and he

slowly stood up, I love spending time with him.

BONTLE

I can't believe I'm pregnant, Yes I faked my pregnancy and I didn't think I would be pregnant by now. I took a shower and made my way downstairs humming a beautiful song. Martha was settled on the couch having tea. Me: "You should be parking your bags heading to the village!"

Martha: "Musa

ukungcasula, angiyindawo

wema" [Don't annoy me, I'm not going anywhere]

Me: "I'm not going to entertain your dirty attitude" I snorts walking up to the kitchen to prepare a smoothie.

Martha: "Are you even carrying his child?" I looked up to her, she followed me

Me: "You can figure it out yourself"

Martha: "Mnx, I don't know why Mlungisi can't divorce you. You're useless"

Me: "I'm here to stay! Not going anywhere"

Martha: "He'll see your true colours"

Me: "Whatever!" I walked away as I made my way to the living

room. Mapula walked downstairs while I was still at it.

Mapula: "Evening"

Me: "Evening"

Mapula: "There's no food? Ain't you hungry?" I sighed.

Me: "Leave me alone"

Mapula: "Oh" She was about to go but I called her out "What?"

Me: "I'm sure you didn't say a word about what I Once asked from you"

Mapula: "You mean killing Nosibusiso?"

Me: "Shush! Yeah that, I hope you didn't say anything because I don't want problems"

Mapula: "Mnx! I'm just looking for a way to say this to them" she walked upstairs

NHLAKANI PHO

I walked inside the club, it was quite. It's a weekday so that was much understandable. I spot Mlungisi at the bar and I head where he was settled.

Me: "Man-Luh"

Mlu: "Son-in-law" I laughed throwing my head back. He joined in.

Me: "How's you?"

Mlu: "Good, You?"

Me: "I'm very well, Your daughter

is Freeing me so I won't complain"

Mlu:"I don't want to hold that topic,I can't discuss my daughter"I chuckled settling on the chair.

Me:"How's you?"

Barman:"Good Evening, what can I get you?"

Me:"Macallan 1926 Valerio Adami Peter" the barman cleared his throat

Barman:"Sir that's expensive"I looked at him like he's losing his mind.

Me:"You sound like you're saying Futsek"

Barman: "I'm sorry sir, I'll get it"
Mlungisi looked at me and
chuckled.

Mlu: "He's literally saying Fuck you
man!"

We laughed and the barman
bought the whiskey.

Me: "Well I'm good, How's you?"

Mlu: "Great"

Me: "So tell me about the
beautiful lady behind that
smile" He grinned gulping his
whiskey from the glass.

Mlu: "Phindile Nkosi"

Me: "Another Nkosi?"

Mlu: "Apparently her sister is
obsessed with you, I wasn't told"

Me: "I was going to tell you"

Mlu: "Yeah right!"

Me: "Whatever, Ntsiki is off topic. Tell me about your woman"

Mlu: "Well she's so beautiful and sexy, humble and down to earth" he was literally smiling non stop

Me: "You're inlove"

Mlu: "It's still early to say that so i can't really say but I must admit that I love her"

Me: "Cheers to that man!" We laughed.

THREE MONTHS LATER

.....

CHAPTER 67

NOSIBUSISO

I woke up early in the morning and got ready for school. I'm writing my Final exams and Nhlakanipho has been a darling about that. He always made sure that I study, eat enough and get some sleep. I took my pack back and head downstairs, he was settled on the couch having breakfast. It's no Fancy! That we can sit around the table and have breakfast.

Me: "Babe"

Nhla: "Hey sweetheart, How's you?" I grinned settling on the couch as I placed my back pack on

top of the coffee table.

Me: "I'm good, I'm left with only two papers"

Nhla: "Great! I have a surprise for you" I smiled.

Me: "I can't wait!"

Nhla: "Have some breakfast so I could drive you to school" I shook my head

Me: "I'm not hungry"

Nhla: "I'm not having that, eat so you could have strength" I sighed and stood up

Me: "Fine" I raised my hands surrendering as I made my way to the kitchen. Breakfast was already made by Nhlakanipho so I

just dished out and head back to the living room, I started eating. Nhla: "What do you think about Marriage?" I frowned, then shrugged my shoulders.

Me: "Well, I don't think I would like to get married while I'm still schooling" I honestly say, why would he ask me about marriage? I hope he's not thinking of proposing anytime soon

Nhla: "Mmmh" I nod and looked at him, narrowing my eyes at him.

Me: "I hope you're not thinking of proposing right? I'm not ready for marriage Nhlakanipho I'm still young"

Nhla: "No" He looked at me for a moment and quickly shook his head "I wasn't thinking about anything don't worry" I nod, slowly chewing my food.

Me: "I'm done" I got up to place the dish on the sink at the kitchen then head back to the living room.

Nhla: "Good, let's go" He took my backpack walking out with me behind him. I was looking at him as he kept on walking, my man is perfect! The walk, the body...

Everything! My eyes travelled to his firm arse.

Me: "I love your arse baby" I

murmur, so loud for him to stop on his tracks and looked at me.

Nhla: "What did you just say?"

Me: "What?" He raised his left eyebrow at me "I didn't say anything"

Nhla: "You said something about my arse Nosibusiso" He scoffed causing me to laugh. He's just so cute!

Me: "Fine, I love your arse" He chuckled "It's so firm and mmmh damn" I licked my lips as my eyes ran back to his firm arse.

Nhla: "You're being creepy sweetheart" I rolled my eyes and looked up to his eyes

Me: "Come on, I wouldn't mind having you for breakfast, lunch and dinner" He raised his left eyebrow "Let's walk along" He shook his head and turned to walk. He started walking and I looked at his arse

Me: "Damn!" He stopped and turned to me

Nhla: "That's it, I'll walk behind you"

Me: "What? Why?"

Nhla: "You're being weird

Sweetheart" The walk to the garage is not so long but it seems long since Nhlakanipho is walking so slow. I sighed and walked

infront of him.

Nhla: "Now I love the view" I clicked my tongue and walked faster as I can until I finally made it to the garage and climbed in the car. He climbed too and laughed throwing his head back looking like a King he is. I smiled feeling proud, he's all mine! Mine!

Me: "I'm so gonna be late Just because of you" I sighed leaning towards the sit as he pressed the accelerator

Nhla: "I'm a fast driver! Don't worry"

Me: "Cool, I'm writing my Finals so

I can't be late"

Nhla:"Yes Mrs Mhlongo I get you"I giggled

Me:"Did I tell you on how much I'm in love with you?" I suddenly utter feeling so in love,the butterflies are just too much.

Nhla:"You have,but I wouldn't mind you saying it again"I grinned and looked at him,he looked back at me.

Me:"I love you so much,so much that I feel so scared about it" He looked back at the road and looked at me, again.

Nhla:"I love you so damn much sweetheart"I smiled so satisfied

BONTLE

I made my way downstairs, Martha was humming a song while sweeping the floor. I just shook my head and walked in further, I'm Five Months pregnant and my belly is visible. I'm happy but it seems like Mlungisi is slowly drifting away from me, worse than ever.

Me: "Hello" she stopped and looked at me

Martha: "Sawbona

Bontle" [Greetings]

Me: "What are you doing?"

Martha: "I'm cleaning, well since

you can't do anything I thought why not" She shrugged her shoulders. This woman is getting on my nerves.

Me: "I'm not keen on listening to your nonsense"

Martha: "You're the one who asked me about what I'm doing so I answered truthfully" I sighed and walked to the kitchen leaving him there. I don't know why she's still here! I made some cereal and took out my phone numbers dialing Mlungisi's number. It rang unanswered then I hunged up. I dialed it again and he accepted the call.

Me: "Mlungisi"

Mlu: "Hey Bontle, is the baby Ok? Why are you calling?" I know I'm not in love with him but I do love him and I care. This hurts to the core.

Me: "I.. I... I was worried about you since you didn't spend the night home"

Mlu: "I was busy and I ended up sleeping at the office, but I'm fine"

"Baby breakfast is ready" Someone said at the background, I felt my heart shutting down into pieces.

Me: "Mlungisi who's th---" He interrupted me before I could

finish my sentence

Mlu: "Look I'm still busy, I'll come by later" He immediately disconnected the call and I gasped leaning against the cabinet.

There's a woman, he's cheating. I couldn't let it sink as I sighed looking at our wedding picture across of the room.

I was so in love with this man, or so I thought before met Nhlakanipho. Why does it hurt?

NOSIBUSISO

Lethabo: "I'm going to my boyfriend"

Me: "I thought we'll be having

lunch together" She sighed and looked at me

Lethabo: "I know but Mapula is here, I promised to spend the lunch break with him" I nod with understanding

Me: "I understand, you may leave"

Lethabo: "Yeah whatever but I wasn't asking for a permission though" We both laughed

Me: "I know, Hamba" [Go] She kissed my cheek and walked away. I made my way to our spot and found Mapula.

Me: "Hey"

Mapula: "How's you?" We hugged and I kissed her cheek before we

pulled out

Me: "I'm perfectly fine, You?"

Mapula: "Fine! I'm just hungry" I giggled and took out my lunchbox. She did too and we settled in a comfortable silence.

Me: "So, what's happening in your life babe?" She shrugged her shoulders

Mapula: "I miss Sizwe" I frowned.

Me: "Oh Friend!"

Mapula: "I wish he could come back so we could sort out our relationship, I miss him so much"

Me: "You love him?" That was more like a statement. She smiled widely.

Mapula: "I'll always love him, I'm broken Nosi and I did terrible things hoping to recover from my battling issues but Sizwe is someone I really didn't want to lose as a life partner" She deeply sighed "But I know that I'm not good for him hence the damage, I'm damage" This was not the place but I'm glad she was opening up to me.

Me: "Why don't you book a Therapist?"

Mapula: "No"

Me: "I'll attend with you, I'll be there for you Mapula just accept that you need help"

Mapula: "I don't want to talk about my problems with a total stranger Nosi, I don't need a shrink"

Me: "Peace comes with knowing and accepting all pieces of you, accept that you're broken and you need help. You won't find peace if you're failing to accept this, if you don't want to let in people whom wants to be with you" She nods

Mapula: "Ohk"

Me: "Ohk?"

Mapula: "I'll see a a Therapist"

Me: "Great! That's wonderful"

SIZWE

I dragged my suitcase walking inside the house, I miss this.

Home that is. I knocked and the door was pulled and Mom appeared right in front of me.

Mom: "Sizwe" It came as a whisper

Me: "Ma" she immediately pulled me in for a hug and I smiled melting in her warm motherly arms.

Mom: "Oh Mfanwam I miss you" [My boy]

Me: "I miss you too Mom" I mumbled and pulled out of the hug. We made our way inside.

Mom: "I'm sure you're hungry, I prepared dumping and brown beans" I miss her cooking so I can't say no to that.

Me: "I miss your cooking so I wouldn't say no to that"

Mom: "Great, Let me dish you out" I smiled and she walked to the kitchen while I made my way to my bedroom. I sighed heading back downstairs.

Mom: "You disappeared" I chuckled settling on the couch

Me: "No, I didn't Mom"

Mom: "Mmmh, Does Nhlakanipho know that you're in South Africa?"

Me: "Yes, I told only him"

Mom: "And he didn't say anything to me, Mmh" I chuckled, again.

Me: "It was supposed to be a surprise Mom, so we didn't want to ruin it"

Mom: "I'm glad you're back, How are you really?" I smiled

Me: "I'm fine, Free and Ready to be true to my feelings. I know where my heart lies and I'm glad"

Mom: "Tell that girl then, I don't care who that girl is as long as she makes you happy" I widen my smile.

Me: "Thank you Mom"

Mom: "You're welcome baby,

Simpfiwe is going to be happy"

Me: "I miss my little sister"

Mom: "She misses you too" She grinned and I smiled enjoying my meal in between.

NOSIBUSISO

I was having Lunch at home while Nhlakanipho was massaging my feet. I was enjoying every bits of it, it was relaxing.

Me: "Mmmh"

Nhla: "Sweetheart don't do that" I looked at him and giggled.

Me: "Fine, I should go and study"

Nhla: "You're writing Mathematics right?"

Me: "That's correct"

Nhla: "I'll help you"

Me: "You don't have to"

Nhla: "I want to" I rolled my eyes getting off the couch. Just then my phone rang, it was Dad.

Me: "Daddy"

Mlu: "Nosibusiso" His voice sounds raspy, like he was crying.

Me: "Daddy what's wrong? What's wrong Dad?" I was now worried.

Mlu: "C.. Come home Nosibusiso"

Me: "Daddy what's wrong?"

Mlu: "Buya ekhaya Nono" [Come Home] He then disconnected the call. I looked at the phone screen

then turned to Nhlakanipho.

Me: "I need to get home"

.....

CHAPTER 68

NOSIBUSISO

The drive seemed long, I kept on scratching my brain trying to figure out what could be wrong. I hope everything is Ohk with everyone though, I hope Bontle is fine too both with the baby. I know I'm not a fan of Bontle but I don't hate her enough to wish death upon her.

Nhla: "Sweetheart calm down" I wish it was easy to keep calm. I

nodded looking out of the window trying to be calm. Soon enough we were outside of my home, I immediately climbed out rushing outside. There were two cars on the driveway so I made my way in, I just walked in without knocking and I was welcomed by cries. I scanned the room and there was no sight of my Dad and Mapula.

Me: "Where's my Dad?" I walked in further and I couldn't see none of them "Where's Mapula?" A cry came from a certain woman whom I had no idea who she was Martha: "Nosi Sisi" I turn and

looked at her

Me: "Where's Mapula? Where is my Dad?" She dropped her head then looked at me again, sadness was written across her face.

Martha: "I'm sorry Sisi, UMapula usishiyile" [Left us] I looked at her confused. I shook my head thinking I didn't hear her correctly.

Me: "Uthini? U... Usho ukuthi ukuthi usishiyile?" [What? W...

What do you mean when you say she has left us] she deeply sighed and placed her hand on my shoulder, I wanted to shrug it off and give her a piece of my mind

since she's taking it slow.

Martha: "UMapula has passed away, your Father is g ---"

Me: "No" I shook my head looking at her "No Mapula is alive, she's alive don't play games with my mind" I Huffed and a tear escaped.

Martha: "Ngyacolisa Sisi" [I'm sorry] I immediately ran upstairs to Mapula's room, she has to be there. These people want to confuse my mind about such evilness. How can one lie about such thing.

Me: "Mapula" I walked inside her bedroom and it looked so clean,

everything looked so perfect
"Mapula!!" I shout again but
there was no response.

Mlu: "Nosi" I turn to look at him, he
was walking inside the room.

Me: "Baba where's
Mapula?" [Father]

Mlu: "Her and Mike were involved
in a car accident on their way
from school and apparently they
couldn't make it" I shook my head
again.

Me: "No" A sob escaped down my
throat "No Mapula can't leave me"

Mlu: "I'm sorry baby but she's
gone" I shook my head as I slid
on the floor

Me: "Mapula can't leave me! We were supposed to fix her life, she was given a second chance Dad no!!" He pulled me on his embrace and I let it all out.

Mlu: "Let it all out" How can life be so cruel? She wanted to be a Doctor, despite of everything which was happening in her life she knew what she wanted. She had dreams.

Me: "I can't take it

Dad!! Kubuhlungu" [It's painful]

Mlu: "Ncese" [Sorry] You wouldn't

miss the sadness in his voice. He was too in pain because of

this, but Mapula can't be dead! No

she can't.

Me: "It hurts, It's hurts here" I say pointing to my chest, it really hurts. I continued sobbing on my Dad's chest until I started feeling drowsy.

MLUNGISI

I laid her on top of Mapula's bed and made my way downstairs. The woman who came for Mapula was settled on the couch still with tears, I don't even know who she is.

Me: "Sawbona" [Greetings] I greet her, for the third time since she walked in that door. She looked up

to me

Her: "Greetings, we need to talk" I nod and she stood up following me until we were outside of the house; to the garden.

Me: "What is she to you and how did you find her?" She dropped her eyes for a while before looking back at me.

Her: "I'm Mapula's Aunt, and my brother helped me in finding her"

Me: "You failed to look for her all these years, what do you want?"

Her: "We wanted our daughter home, that's why I started looking for her"

I scoffed narrowing my eyes at

her

Me: "You caused her too much pain, Mapula is nomore so I guess there's nothing left for you here"

Her: "I know but I'm not leaving without my Niece" I looked at her confused

Me: "What?"

Her: "I'm not leaving without Mapula! She needs to be buried back home with all her family" I chuckled

Me: "Well she's now a Dube and she'll be laid to rest as a Dube, I'm not looking for trouble

hopefully you're not bringing one"

Her: "I'm not looking for trouble

too" I started walking away "You killed my niece what more do you want huh?" I stopped on my tracks and turned to look at her
Me: "What did you say?"

Her: "You've heard me, You killed my niece" I shook my head looking at her

Me: "Mapula was broken all because of you! She ran away from home all because of you, she suffered and guess what? I was the one parenting her, I love Mapula as my own and I would kill for her! I wouldn't want that on you" I left her there walking back the the house. I bumped into

Nhlakanipho while on my way.

Nhla: "I'm sorry" I nod "You don't have to bottle up your feelings" I walked over to the guest room with him following me.

Me: "I failed her Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "No you didn't"

Me: "She said she doesn't want to go to school because she's not writing but I forced it to her" I scoffed thinking about that.

Nhla: "You were being a father, don't blame yourself" I shook my head and they dropped. I wiped them off "Cry Mlungisi there's no use of being strong for everyone" I shook my head and

they dropped following one another. I promised myself not to cry, I wanted to be strong for everyone but honestly this hurts. Mapula was a broken soul and she needed our love; we gave her all the love she needed yes but there were a lot of things waiting for her.

Me: "I failed her"

Nhla: "Cry Mlungisi" I cried out all the pain with Nhlakanipho by my side.

NOSIBUSISO

I woke up with a heavy head then it sank, she's gone. My

heart felt heavy and I didn't want to believe it still. I feel like all of this is a dream which I terribly want to wake up from, I got off the bed and head to a box we shared. I had the same box, I slowly opened it and sat down on a mere floor. Pictures, Notes and letters. I remember when I first met Mapula, I was so scared to befriend the kids the streets. It was the first day since I arrived in Johannesburg; I hitchhiked from Kwazulu Natal. As scared as I was I knew I had to get to the City because life there would be at least Better than at the

Village. I bumped into a girl who was more vulnerable, scared and jumpy. She was scared more than I was-she couldn't look my way and that's when I called her out. I asked her name, she told me her story and I told her mine and we immediately clicked, we learnt how to survive of the streets and everything else. Mapula ease a great person and we both together at all times, once I committed a certain crime like stealing from the other street kids... Mapula would have my back and so did I. We share different things and memories together.

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I wiped off tears, placed the box on the side and looked up to him.

Me: "Mmmh"

Nhla: "Come here" He settled on the floor and I snuggled up to his big arms. He held me tight as tears started to form.

Me: "I miss her, I know it's too soon but I want to look at her and tell her that I love her. She would tell me all will be well" I sniffed and he held me, not letting me go.

Nhla: "Everything will be well" I shook my head.

Me: "Everything is not good fine,

Nothing will ever be well"

Nhla: "I'm sure Mapula would want you to be happy" I wiped off my tears but that seemed to be useless.

Me: "I still needed her in my life, we had so much to share" I honestly utter "She didn't have to die! Can I wake up from this dream already" The world seemed so small, It's like I'm in a very dark hole and there's no one to hold me.

Nhla: "Let it out and everything will go well, Come we need to get downstairs" I nod and he slowly helped me up. My legs feel so

wobbly like I can't feel them but we made it out of Mapula's bedroom.

Me: "I don't think I'll make it downstairs" My raspy voice escaped, I didn't think it would come out a little bit better.

Nhla: "You'll need to get rid of the jeans"

Me: "Yeah" I nod and cleared my throat as we walked straight to my bedroom. I changed to a dress and put on a headwrapper. We walked downstairs.

Me: "Evening" they greeted back but the atmosphere was too thick. I looked at Mapula's chair

and it stinged "I... I'm not really hungry"

Mlu: "You need to eat baby" I shook my head

Me: "I'm not hungry Daddy" He nods

Mlu: "Go and get some sleep, I know you were asleep but you need this" I nod

MLUNGISI

Bontle: "Mlungisi what's wrong?" I looked at her confused. We just had dinner and I don't want any drama. I had enough already.

Me: "What's wrong with what?"

Bontle: "You've been distant"

Me: "This is not the time Bontle, I'll be sleeping at the guest room" I took my phone sending a good night text to Phindi.

Bontle: "Are you having an affair Mlungisi?" I shook my head

Me: "I don't have time for this" I left her there walking out. I was about to pass by Mapula's room until I heard some sobs from there. I made my way and slowly opened the door. The room was dark but I knew right there that it was Nosi.

Me: "Nosi.." Faintly, I said. She kept sobbing and I walked in further
"Nosi"

Nosi: "She has to come back Daddy I can't"

Me: "Nosi..."

Nosi: "I'm not ready to say goodbye, Don't make me say goodbye to my best friend and sister Daddy please" It pained me seeing her like this, hearing her saying this. I'm also not ready to say goodbye but we have let her go.

Me: "We have to"

Nosi: "No" She gag on her tears, she kept on Rocking herself back and forth and I couldn't reach to hold her still because sh kept on continuing with that routine

Me: "Let her go, Let it all out and set her free"

Nosi: "Ha.a Daddy please don't make me say goodbye to her, I still need her please" I have never felt so defeated like this

.....

CHAPTER 69

NOSIBUSISO

'The death of a friend can feel like losing a limb. Although we'll always keep them close to our hearts and time will do its best to dull the pain, a piece is missing. While losing a friend is devastating, cherish the good

times and memories you shared together to help navigate the grief' this make it sound so easy, I can't stand to remember our memories. When the heart sinks while thinking about the fact that I won't see her ever again. Four days has passed, it's been days of sadness. I have never thought that I would see such a day, Mapula will be laid to rest on Saturday. I'm currently cuddled up in her bedroom trying to connect with her; that's what I've been doing lately. The door was suddenly pushed opened and his scents filled the whole room.

He's been so supportive and I'm grateful for that. I wouldn't ask for a man Better than this one here.

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I didn't move, my tears were falling and I didn't want to move.

Me: "Baby" I sniffed them away and he came closer.

Nhla: "Don't do this to yourself" I slowly got up to look at him. I was supposed to write the last paper and I haven't been able to do that so we reported to the school Principal.

Me: "I'm fine, don't worry about me"

Nhla: "I think you will have to see a Therapist after all this" I shook my head

Me: "I don't need to see a Therapist Baby, I'm fine and things will be better soon" He sighed deeply as he pulled me to his big arms.

Nhla: "I love you, I don't know how you feel, but I am here to help in any way I can. I'm here and cry if you want to. Don't bottle up" I nod accepting the arm embrace. I feel like my troubles are gone when I'm settled on his arms.

Me: "I'm scared" I say about my

fears, that's not a lie. I'm literally scared!

Nhla: "Scared?" I nod, still in his arms "What are you scared about?"

Me: "I'm scared that I will forget about her and move on with my life without thinking about her" I sighed and wiped off the tears. He sighed either; Deeply.

Nhla: "That's what I felt when I lost Linda and my baby" I tensed up. We haven't talked about Linda in a while now and that's the topic I don't want to touch.

Me: "Yeah" I cleared my throat

Nhla: "I know Linda is someone you

don't want us or me to talk about but I'm trying to make you see something about death" I know how it feels, like my Mom I'm scared that I would forget about her. I nod as I got off his arms. Me: "L... Let me go and take a quick shower, I'm a mess looking so ugly" He chuckled and placed his hand on my cheek.

Nhla: "I'm here for you sweetheart, and you'll always look gorgeous" I smiled walking straight to the bathroom so I could take a shower. As much as I was to cuddle myself on top Mapula's bed and cry my pain

off; I have to be neat. I took a shower then got dressed before I head to the living room, it's just so sad. How can one be sad in a ceremony though? I shook my head and focus on what Mapula would want, to rejoice the moment we've spent together. Nomsa walked up to me as pregnant as she was.

Nomsa: "Baby sis" I smiled, faintly.

Me: "Hey Sis"

Nomsa: "I won't ask how you are, it's so sad. Mapula had her problems but I was sure that she would heal from all of that"

Me: "She had a second chance of

life but that life was snatched away from her by a certain drunk driver whom wasn't able to control his gear" I chuckled, it's just unbelievable. One minute you'll not believe that she's gone then the next minute it sinks that she won't be coming back. I shook my head.

Nomsa: "Maybe it was time"

Me: "I still don't believe she's gone, I don't know how to fathom all of this"

Nomsa: "She was a great girl even though she had her Demons. She was our sister and it's normal to feel that way. I almost had a

miscarriage after receiving the news and you can imagine how it felt like to receive such News "It's painful! I sighed as Dad approached us.

Mlu: "Hey"

Me: "Dad"

Mlu: "We're going to the Morgue to see Mapula, since she's not supposed to get inside the yard" Traditional! She's not supposed to get inside the yard since she died of a car accident; who doesn't know that? Though I'm not ready for that, but I know I'll feel bad for not seeing her for the last time.

Me: "What time are you going?"

Mlu: "1200hrs, we need to get ready for the memorial service which will take place at 1500hrs organised by the school" I sighed, this is just too much and hard. I nod without saying anything further.

SIZWE

I gulped down the last glass of whiskey before I stood up stumbling to the bar so I could have another bottle of whiskey.
Mrs Mhlongo: "Sizwe" I took few steps back and looked at her.

Me: "M..Ma"

Mrs Mhlongo: "This is not right, Alcohol won't bring Mapula back"

Me: "I know but maybe if i.. I" I chuckled not continuing with what I wanted to say, it feels dragging and it took a lot of power.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Sizwe!!!" I stopped on my tracks and turned to look at her

Me: "What? Mom I lost my love! The love of my life and you all want me to be Ohk? It hurts so bad Mom because I was looking forward on settling with her, I was looking forward on being with her and I feel like a fool because I've failed her and walked away

from her to another country...

Now I won't see her ever again" she stepped closer and pulled me in for a hug, maybe that's one of the things I needed-a warm hug but it doesn't help in any way since this won't bring her back.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Be strong, cry and do whatever but don't do alcohol Sizwe" I couldn't bring myself to let go of her arms, I cried until I had no tears. Oh my love why did you have to leave me!? I finally gathered myself and pulled out of his embrace as I made my way to my bedroom. Seems like the cries too away all the drunkenness. My

phone rang while at it.

Me: "Mmmh"

Mlu: "It's Mlungisi, we're going to see Mapula and I think it would do you good to see her before we lay her to rest"

Me: "No"

Mlu: "Huh?"

Me: "I'm not ready to see her, I'm... I... I can't" I stutter through my teeth

Mlu: "This is the only chance Sizwe, Nhlakanipho thinks you need this more than everyone" I sighed, it's true!

Me: "Fine I'll come" He disconnected the call as I settled on the bed

and a tear fell when I think of her "why did you leave me!? Oh Mapula why?" I cried the pain away, it was still there and I don't think it would pass. I have never loved someone before her, this hurts.

PHINDILE

Mlungisi sounded broken over the phone and I wished I could do something but I was helpless; I can't show up at his home since he's still married and I'm not that kind of a person. I walked to the Mall and number into someone unexpectedly.

Me: "I'm... I'm so sorry"

Her: "It's Ok I... I'm sorry" I looked up, she was a sister and she looked so beautiful and Young.

Me: "It's was my fault I was deep in my personal though and didn't look where I was going"

Her: "It's fine" She looked at me because she walked away. I walked in our of the shops and when I came out I spotted her on a far corner. I smiled walking to where she was.

Me: "Hy again" I softly say

Her: "Hy" She looked down to what seemed like a Bible. I settled on a chair next to her, I don't know

how to react to a Sister but they're amazing and I liked them. I'd love to be one of possible.

Me: "Uhm... I'm Phindile Nkosi" she looked up to me and nod before she looked back at her Bible. This is hard "Who are

you?" She looked up and smiled

Her: "Sister Leticia, can I have some peace? You're uhm" She looked down at her Bible "You're

disturbing my peace" Wow this feels like an insult! Another sister walked over

Her: "Greetings" She said to me and looked at Leticia "Sister Leticia"

Leticia: "Sister Betty, I was waiting for you"

Betty: "I got what I've been looking for so we may leave" she nodded and placed her Bible in her bag then stood up.

Leticia: "I will see you"

Me: "Wait! Can I... Can I talk to you?" Leticia looked at Betty and she nodded

Betty: "Don't take too long, we have to get ready for the Prayer" she said that walking away.

Leticia looked at me.

Me: "I... I like your Church and can I visit sometime?" She looked at me for a while

Leticia: "You're Great person, I will talk to Father Mark about it" I nod

Me: "Thank you"

Leticia: "We ain't supposed to talk this much, you could be a great sister" She smiled walking away. I shook my head taking my bag as I walked away from the Location. I then received a text from Mlu - I need you Baby, I love you I smiled placing the phone on my bag as I made my way to the taxi rank. I will call Mlungisi a little bit later.

NOSIBUSISO

The drive to the Morgue wasn't that long and my feet were cold. I sighed as I finally got out of the car, a car suddenly drove in and Sizwe climbed out of it. I haven't spoke to him in a while.

Sizwe: "Good Afternoon" they greeted back, the poor guy had bags on his eyes looking like a total Zombie.

Me: "Daddy you can all go in, I want to have a word with Sizwe" they nod and walked away from us. I looked at Sizwe "I know how you're feeling, it's..." I sighed "Painful"

Sizwe: "I can't seem to believe

this, I wish she could rock up and tell this was a Terrible dream"

Me: "I know, I miss her already and it really hurts" I shed a tear and looked at him

Sizwe: "I feel like a failure! I've failed her"

Me: "She loved you so much"

Sizwe: "I doubt so" I faintly smiled

Me: "She told me how much she loves you, the last time we talked" I breath in and he smiled too

Sizwe: "I love her too, I wish I could tell her that but now I... I can't"

Me: "I hope everything will be well in time, I don't know how though"

Sizwe: "Let's go in" I nod as we walked inside. One of the man led us to the room; this place is freezing! We finally walked in and my heart beat so hard! They showed me a beautiful Cascade which was on the top of something which I had no idea of. Sizwe walked over there and stood still for a while before he walked out with tears threatening to fall.

Me: "Daddy" I called out for him, Nhlakanipho was there but right now I needed my father.

Mlu: "You need to see her" I shook my head

Me: "I'm... Daddy I can't"

Mlu: "You have to say goodbye My baby" I nod as I stepped closer to the Cascade. I looked down at the Cascade and my eyes couldn't believe what was in front of me. Her eyes were shut as her lips were so cracky, her skin looked so pail showing no life in her. She looked so beautiful and beautiful, I shook my head as the reality hit! She's really gone!

Me: "No" that escaped "No Mapula No" I slid down as painful snobs uncomfortably escaped "Wake up

please!! Mapula wake up, don't leave me please" This image is definitely going to haunt me forever!

Mlu: "My baby I---"

Me: "Wake her up Daddy!! Tell her to wake up, Please Mapula" I sinked down while holding on to the Cascade; I'm surprised it didn't fall "wake her up" The sobs didn't want to stop.

.....

CHAPTER 70 NOSIBUSISO

It's Saturday and the day we will be laying Mapula to rest. I just

finished dressing up when Nomusa and Lethabo bugged inside my bedroom. I turned and looked at them.

Me: "What happened to knocking?" Lethabo rolled her eyes as they walked in further.

Nomsa: "It's not like Nhlakanipho was here smooching your arse" I chuckled

Me: "Mmmh"

Lethabo: "So there's a sexy pastor" Trust Lethabo to lift up your mood.

Me: "You're busy drooling over a pastor?" she sighed

Lethabo: "It's not just a pastor, a

very sexy one who looked exactly like Nhlakanipho and I didn't know that Nhlakanipho has an older brother who's a Reverend" I looked at her confused.

Me: "Nhlakanipho has Sizwe as a brother, he doesn't have an older brother"

Lethabo: "Oh" She shrugged her shoulders "Maybe it's my eyes"

Nomsa: "Let's forget about the sexy pastors and go to the Church" I sighed with a nod as we walked out of the bedroom. The Service will be held in a certain church which I have no idea of.

Me: "Dad" I say as I approached

him.

Mlu: "My baby, we have to go" I nod

Me: "I'll travel with you and
Nhlakanipho"

Mlu: "That will be so awkward my
baby"

Me: "Come on there's nothing to
worry about, it's an innocent drive
to Church"

Mlu: "Fine" I turned to hugged
Lethabo and Nomsa

Me: "I'll see you two at Church"

Lethabo: "Cool baby, Say hi to my
brother-in-law" I rolled my eyes
pulling out of the hug as we
walked up today the car.

Nhlakanipho was the drive on the

driver's seat while Daddy climbed on the passengers seat while I took the backseat. It was silence until Daddy broke the silence.

Mlu: "Now tell me, I want to know if you two are fucking?" I gasped and immediately looked out of the window.

Nhlakanipho chuckled like it's an amusing statement.

Nhla: "You can't ask such thing Mlungisi come on"

Mlu: "I'm asking, It's not like you don't know these things" I sighed and looked back at them "Now answer me, are you two fucking?"

Me: "Daaadd!!!"

Mlu: "Fine let's not talk about this, just make sure you're on contraceptions. I'm too handsome and Hella sexy to become a grandpa" I chuckled, if it was any other day I would have laughed.

Mlu: "You're such a bore" we finally got to Church and we climbed out heading inside. We were shown our seat which were in front. People started to walk in and the whole family made our way to where we were. Someone whom I assume it's a Reverend made his way to the front. I gasped as my eyes landed on him, he's a replication of Nhlakanipho. I shifted my

attention to look at Nhlakanipho, he also looked so confused

Reverend: "Good Morning, I'm Reverend Xulu. This is such a sad day for all of us but I'm sure Mapula's soul will be laid to rest with love and peace" He muttered and continued with his service. Mrs Mhlongo suddenly walked in and stopped on her tracks when her eyes landed on Reverend Xulu. Mrs Mhlongo; "No! Oh My God No" She dropped down and Nhlakanipho quickly went to attend to her as she was escorted out of the Church.

Reverend Xulu continued with the service as they kept on singing and doing everything.

SIZWE

My mind was nowhere near this place, all I wanted was to follow the love of my life. Tears streamed down as I looked at her Cascade, it's so beautiful and my eyes went to her picture.

Mlu: "Are you fine?" I looked up and find Mlungisi's eyes on me. I nod as the service continued, I couldn't hear what is being said or what's happening

I looked up and Nosi was on the

front crying.

Nosi: "S...She was a great friend and a sister, she made sure that I'm happy. Yes she wasn't a happy Soul but she was loved by many. She was a crazy person at times and she gave me straight advices. Mapula w...." She sob as her sister held her.

Nomsa: "Mapula was a great person who was loved by many, she had her Demons but she wanted to change her life. She was looking forward on changing and be a great person" She looked down and wiped off her tears "She will be missed and

remembered, she will always be in our hear and our memories won't be forgotten" She Stepped back as she held Nosi and made their way to where we were settled.

Mlu: "It's your time" I shook my head

Me: "I don't think I will be able to do this"

Mlu: "Please" I nod and walked in front, I looked at the Reverend and I was certain that I'm going crazy. Nhlakanipho is definitely not a Reverend, maybe I'm going crazy or drunk. I made my speech which I didn't finish and walked out heading outside. I couldn't do

all that. She left me, she's not coming back.

I let them fall as sobs escaped, Oh God!

NHLAKANIPHO

I have never felt so helpless like this, seeing Nosibusiso crying like that hurts me more than anything. The service ended and we got ready to go to the Cemetery. Nosi was in my eyes as she couldn't walk properly while she was crying.

Nosi: "No! Nhlakanipho please wake me up from this please!!"

Me: "Everything will be Ohk"

sweetheart hang in there" We walked over to the car as I helped her climb in. The drive wasn't that long as we made it to the cemetery while she was crying in my arms.

Me: "Let's go Sweetheart" I climbed out helping her too. We settled down as the Reverend started a short service. I had no doubt that this Reverend is a relative and Mom has to explain everything. It was time to lay Mapula down.

'Lay down my dear friend
Lay down and take your rest, we
gonna lay your head across this

precious place we love you but
Jesus loves you best, my friend
Good bye goodbye Rest in piece! Oh
My friend Good bye, Good-bye
Rest In Piece'-That were school
learners as they picked Mapula's
Cascade.

Nosibusiso got out of my embrace
as she charged to the grave as
Mapula's Cascade was being
lowered down

Nosi: "Mapula Come back!!!

Mapula!! She dropped on her knees
and I made my way to where she
was "Come back Mapula!!"

Me: "Nosi come" I held her arm and
she pushed me, I thought she

had no power

Nosi: "Oh Please Mapula don't leave me" Sizwe walked out of the crowd heading to wherever. I couldn't attend to Him at the moment "Mapula Vuka I promise to be a better friend" [Wake up] I picked her up as we walked over to the car. We climbed at the backseat with her head on my chest as she kept on sobbing Me: "I'm here"

Nosi: "Why Did she have to leave me Nhlakanipho why!!!?" I held her tighter brushing her back as she continued with her sobs.

PHINDILE

I was settled at the backseat as the funeral continued until we went to the Dube household. The place was so beautiful, the touch of the expensive design made it look even more beautiful than ever. A lady walked up to me who looked pregnant.

Her: "Hey" I warmly smiled at her

Me: "Hy"

Her: "First time here?" I raised my eyebrow "I mean... Here in this household?" I nod

Me: "Yes, I'm Phindile Nkosi" She hand out her hand for a

handshake

Her: "Nomisa Dube, I'm the daughter of the family" I nod, then how come she ask me such a question

Nomisa: "I'm not staying here, that's why I asked you that question" like she read my mind

Me: "Sorry for your loss" She sighed

Nomisa: "Thank you, Come let's go there" I followed where she was pointing

Me: "I don't think that's a great idea"

Nomisa: "Come on, you can't stand here all alone" I nod and followed behind her

Nomsa; "Hey Fam" They greeted each other and I caught Mlungisi's eyes on me

One lady: "I'm Bontle Dube, the wife" I smiled

Me: "Phindile Nkosi"

Another lady: "Mina ngingu Martha wakwa Ngwane" Oh! I should repeat my name for how many times?

Me: "Nice to know you Ma"

Nomsa: "Phindile is my friend" I looked at her, we just met and I'm now a friend? wonders shall never end "Where's Nosibusiso?"

Mlu: "She went to sleep, She's tired"

Nomsa: "Oh So Daddy who's that Reverend?" Mlungisi has such a daughter? I'm sure she is my agemate

Mlu: "I don't know anything about the Reverend but the Mhlongo family are on their way home to figure that out"

Nomsa: "Mmmh He's more hotter than Nhlakanipho"

Martha: "Mvelo uzokubulala" [will kill you]

Nomsa: "I'm just complementing the sexy Reverend nothing at all"

Mlu: "In front of your father?"

Nomsa: "Oh Daddy!"

Mlu: "Besides they're exactly the

same so how come the Reverend is more 'sexy' than

Nhlakanipho?" Nomsa sighed

Nomsa: "You won't understand"

Me: "Can I be excused?"

Nomsa: "You're leaving?"

Me: "I think so, I need to take care of some things"

Nomsa: "Oh, Goodbye then" She walked over to hug me and I turned over my heel walking away.

Mlu: "Phindile!"

Me: "Leave me alone Mlungisi!"

Mlu: "Let's talk please"

Me: "Go and play happy families with your wife, Leave me alone" I walked away without looking back

and called for an uber to the hotel.

.....

CHAPTER 71

NHLAKANIPHO

The drive home seemed so long as I was slowly losing my patience. I sighed as we packed on the drive way and I climbed out of the car, I made my way inside with everyone following behind me. Me: "Mom what's going on?" I hissed as soon as we settled on the couch. I'm glad she woke up from her fainting because right now I'm demanding answers.

Mom: "Nhlakanipho I...I don't know how to explain this" I shook my head turning to look at this replicate of mine.

Me: "There's someone who looks exactly like me, this is shit!"

Reverend: "Iskhathi siyangshiya, can you guys say whatever you want to say so I could be on my way" [I'm running out of time] I chuckled, this dude is an arrogant arse!

Me: "Stop being arrogant dude! It doesn't suit you"

Reverend: "It's such a shame that you look like me, but that doesn't mean you have a right to

disrespect me" I shook my head as I turned my attention to my now crying Mom.

Me: "Mom" I firmly said.

Mom: "Nkosi.. Nkosinathi

Mhlongo" The arrogant Reverend chuckled

Reverend: "Nkosinathi Xulu" Mom looked down and cleared her throat

Mom: "I... I named you Nkosinathi Mhlongo because God was with us, I was so young when I fell pregnant with you. Your Father was still a farm worker by then since he was still gathering money to go further his studies. My

family kicked me out of home because I fell pregnant at a young age, we had no money so I... I gave you up to the Xulu family"

Me: "What do you mean Ma?"

Mom: "U... UNKosinathi is your older brother, He's 40 years if I'm not mistaken"

Nkosinathi: "Apparently I got the love i deserved from the Xulu family, I'm fine as I am"

Mom: "Mfanawam please don't leave, I have never thought I would ever see you again" she was crying

Me: "Mom why didn't you tell us about him? why hide him from

us?"

Mom: "My heart was still hurt, I have never thought I would see him" Nkosinathi huffed standing up.

Nkosinathi: "That doesn't mean I'm your child! People look the same anyway"

Mom: "Oh Nkosinathi please don't go"

Nkosinathi: "I'm sorry to be rude Mrs...Mrs Mhlongo but I gotta go, I have a family waiting for me at home" He says walking out. My Mom just cried and I didn't know what to do, I heard the car driving out meaning the arrogant

arse is gone!

Mom: "I'm sorry Nhlakanipho, I'm...
I'm a bad Mother! Oh God!"

Me: "You're not a bad Mother
Mom, you didn't give us any reason
for us to label you as a bad
Mother but I get where
Nkosinathi is coming from"

Mom: "Bekungeyona inhloso Yami, I
didn't have money by then" [It
wasn't my intentions] I sighed

Me: "Well Mother, you need to wait.
Nkosinathi will come around" I say
standing up "Right now I have to
find Sizwe, he must be broken
where he is"

Mom: "I will go and rest" I sighed

walking out, the Drama never ends!

PHINDILE

I made my way to the coffee shop, I would do with a slice of a cake. Thankfully Mlungisi gave me some money to use when I need something. I settled down before calling out for a waiter.

Me: "I'd love a Milkshake and a slice of a Chocolate cake"

Waiter: "Ohk Ma'am" He walked away and I sighed tapping my phone. I felt like someone was looking at me and I looked up as my eyes landed on Sister Leticia. I

smiled at her and she walked over to me Leticia: "Greetings"

Me: "Sister Leticia, Greetings"

Leticia: "It's lovely to see you"

Me: "Same here" The waiter bought my order "Would you like something" She shook her head

Leticia: "I don't eat these things" I slowly nod

Me: "Oh" I blinked and narrowed my eyes at her "How is it like to me a sister? A Nun?" She shrugged her shoulders

Leticia: "Great, there are lot of things you will have to learn regarding being a sister. Father Mark would like to see you, I told

him about you"

Me: "You Did?"

Leticia: "Yes I did, I'm attending a Catholic Church and I will get in touch with you"

Me: "Oh, here are my numbers" I handed out a card "I'll be looking forward to hear from you"

Leticia: "There are a lot of things you would have to sacrifice if you'd love to be a Catholic Sister, Choose wisely" she stood up walking away from me after taking my number. I sighed as I continued with my cake then I settled the Bill walking away.

NKOSINATHI

Me: "Hey Baby" I kissed her cheek and she flushed with smiling. She turned to look at me and frowned

Katlego: "You look sour, what's wrong?" I sighed and settled on the high chair

Me: "I met up with the Mhlongo family, I.. I wasn't expecting to see them you know"

She took the dish cloth and wiped off her hands as she walked over to me and leaned over the cabinet

Katlego: "So what's going to happen? I mean you just found your real family? What will happen

with the Xulus?"

Me: "I'm so confused, I need to talk to my father about this"

Katlego: "Yeah, That would be wise and please don't hesitate to talk to the Mhlongo family because staying angry at them won't help in any way" she's right! But where would I start? I'm so confused about this, when my father explained to me about where I come from I didn't think I would ever meet up with them. I come a long way with the Xulu family, they were there when I discovered my Gift, when I started my businesses across the

globe, when I got into troubles, they were there from day 1 and I have never felt left out or felt unloved from that family.

Me: "I don't know"

Katlego: "I'll be here supporting you babe, I'll always be there" I smiled and held her hands

Me: "Thank you for being here"

Katlego: "I love you Mr Reverend Xulu, The Sexy Mhlongo to be"

Me: "Where did you get the Mhlongo to be thing?" She giggled, how I love this soul

Katlego: "On the internet, you know how people love gossips"

Me: "They're already gossiping about me and my beautiful wife is helping them?" I raised my eyebrow

Katlego: "Well... You're a sexy Reverend, my sexy Reverend" I walked around as I placed my hands on her hips

Me: "Tomorrow it's Sunday, I need to prepare for the service"

Katlego: "Oh Really?" She pushed her arse back and brushes herself "You can go and prepare, leave all of this" She knows I can't resist her

NOSIBUSISO

I walked downstairs finding the whole family on the couch watching television. Mapula's family went away so there were only Dube family, I greeted and settled next to them.

Mlu: "You good?"

Me: "I'm good" It went quite with only Television making noise. Some seemed like they're on their own world then they come back after a while

Nomsa: "I miss Mapula" she broke the comfortable silence

Me: "I miss her too, she had her days eyes" I mumbled and set my eyes on the television.

Mlu: "She was a great daughter, not much of a talker and as you said my baby she had her days" Martha cleared her throat

Martha: "Ngizoyopakisha ksasa ngyahamba" [I'll go and pack, tomorrow I'm leaving]

Nomsa: "Aww Ma Sowuyahamba?" [You're already leaving]

Martha: "Lomfundisi loya ushumayeke wezwakwala, I can't be wasting my time laEGoli" [That Reverend preached and we've heard]

Bontle: "At Last!! Huuuh I was

tired of you"

Martha: "Angenzeli wena, Kodwa

bazobona ubukhohlakali

bakho" [I'm not doing this for you,

but they will see your

evilness] She stood up walking

upstairs

Bontle: "Mnxxxahh we need wine!"

Me: "You pregnant!" I murmur

Bontle: "I know, who said anything
about drinking it?" She's annoying.

It went silence for a while

Nomsa: "Ohk Family! Ngamakoro

Ngamakoro" I chuckled because

she wants us to go to our rooms.

Me: "I'll be watching a Movie"

Mlu: "Are you sure my baby? I can

spend the night with you" I shook my head

Me: "I'll be fine" he nods walking away with everyone. My phone rang, it was Nhlakanipho.

Nhla: "Sweetheart, how are you feeling?"

Me: "Down" Honestly, I'm do honest with this to him

Nhla: "Oh Baby, should I come and get you?"

Me: "N...No, I'll be fine. How is Sizwe?" He deeply sighed

Nhla: "He's Asleep, I found him in a pub drinking some shit"

Me: "It's was such a tragic death leaving us do heartbroken baby"

Nhla: "Indeed it was"

Me: "How did it go with the Reverend? The Sexy Reverend?"

Nhla: "He looks like me, how can he be sexier than me?" I chuckled

Me: "Oh Baby don't mind the Gossips, you're the God" He's smiling I can tell

Nhla: "It went... well he wants nothing to do with us"

Me: "That's bad, he's really your brother?"

Nhla: "Older brother sweetheart, Mom confirmed it"

Me: "Great"

Nhla: "Yeah, Let me sleep baby I'm tired"

Me: "Oh"

Nhla: "What's wrong?" I wanted to cry all over again

Me: "N..." I cleared my throat trying to let my voice out without being raspy "Nothing"

Nhla: "Let's try again, what's wrong sweetheart?" A tear escaped

Me: "I can't Sleep, I'm scared to sleep"

Nhla: "I can help you sleep then"

Me: "How? And ain't you sleeping?"

Nhla: "My sleep can wait! Go to your bedroom and rest, I'll talk to you until you fall asleep"

Me: "Will that work?"

Nhla: "Definitely sweetheart, now go" I switched the television off before walking upstairs to my bedroom.

.....

CHAPTER 72

NOSIBUSISO

I flipped my eyes open and they landed on the big clock hanging on the wall; 6am. I groaned turning to the other side just then my phone vibrated indicating an incoming call since I changed my setting. I smiled widely when I set my eyes on the phone screen. I must admit, I missed

Nhlakanipho and I think I'll go home earlier than I have experienced.

Me: "Mmmh"

Nhla: "Is that how you greet your man from now sweetheart" I giggled as his voice echoed through the phone.

Me: "I just woke up from my sleep, you know how grumpy I can become" He softly chuckled.

Nhla: "I know sweetheart, can we talk?" I got up sitting down with my butt

Me: "Huh?" I asked, feeling so confused already. We're talking!

Nhla: "I just need to talk to you"

Me: "Mmmh"

Nhla: "When are you coming home?"

I almost laughed at that. I thought he was going to say something which makes so much sense. Well it makes sense but I thought it's something so serious!

Me: "Oh" I cleared my throat and a smile appeared across my face
"I don't know"

Nhla: "So who will know?"

Me: "Nhlakanipho I miss you either baby, I know what your statement means" I tilt my head as I stood up making my way to the mirror.

Nhla: "I miss you yeah!" I smiled

Me: "I know, I'll let you know when I'm coming back home"

Nhla: "I love you"

Me: "I love you" I disconnected the call throwing it on top of the bed as I made my way to the bedroom to do my hygiene process.

I then made my way downstairs

Me: "Good Morning" I smiled

Nomsa: "You look beautiful, excited a little" I giggled walking in further

Me: "You look heavily pregnant" I threw that to her as I made my way to the kitchen

Nomsa: "Are you mocking me?" I rolled my eyes

Me: "No, How can I mock my big sister"

Nomsa: "Yeah Right!"

Me: "I can't believe I'm going to be an Aunt" I suddenly say

Nomsa: "Better believe it, I hope you and Nhlakanipho are using

Condoms Nosi" I looked at her

then my eyes ran around the room

"Nosi"

Me: "We always have sex

unexpectedly so, I mean I haven't had time to think about those"

Nomsa: "Nosi! Do you want to be pregnant?"

Me: "Nhlakanipho always pulls out" she dramatically laughed and

looked at me

Nomsa: "Do you trust a Pull out game? Baby sis you're going to have a Pull out niece so tell me if you still trust that shit!" I stopped for a while, she may be right! But this would be Nhlakanipho's fault though I'm glad I'm not pregnant

Me: "I'm not pregnant though" I say to her defending myself

Nomsa: "Mmmh" I narrowed my eyes at her

Me: "What?"

Nomsa: "No nothing, I think I'll go back to my house earlier than I have experienced Yazi" [You know]

Me: "Why?" She looked around
Nomasa: "I'm hungry and I don't trust your Step-mom" She whispered then walked over to take the boiling water pouring it on her mugg

Me: "What do you mean?"

Nomasa: "I don't trust this grocery, well everything" I nod with a chuckle and she shrugged her shoulders "So I'll be heading back soon"

Me: "Same here! I'll be heading back to my house" she laughed so hard

Nomasa: "I'll be going back to my house" She imitates my voice and

we both laugh, Mapula would say 'You go girl' I lowered down my laughter as I looked at what I was doing "What's wrong?" I sighed feeling emotional
Me: "I just miss Mapula, I miss her so much"

Nomsa: "She'll always be in our hearts and memories" I smiled as I nod

Me: "You're right, please pour a cup of tea for me"

Nomsa: "Oh Yes Ma'am" I chuckled taking my bowl of cornflakes.

NHLAKANI PHO

I walked up to the Packing lot and I almost fainted when my eyes landed on my car which was there. It was written in paint 'I love you Nhlakanipho, Please love me too' My mind immediately ran to Nontsikelelo. I chuckled at the thought, I last saw her in weeks back and I didn't think she would do something like this. I took my phone dialling her number

Ntsiki: "Baby did you get the message?" I chuckled, this sounds funny

Me: "Nontsikelelo what exactly do you want from me? Huh?"

Ntsiki: "I want you Nhlakanipho,

can't you see that?"

Me: "Please back off before I get the medical doctors to lock you up in a lonely bin"

Ntsiki: "But I love you"

Me: "Oh really? Then why don't you leave me alone? I don't want to do something I'll later regret"

Ntsiki: "You would never do anything to hurt me, You love me but you're failing to admit it"

Me: "Don't Make a fool of yourself, I won't love you

Nontsikelelo Nkosi. If you don't stop whatever you're doing, I'll take you to where shit like you belong" I disconnected the call as

I climbed inside driving off to the Mhlongo household. I packed outside and walked in.

Me: "Good Morning Ma"

Mom: "Morning baby, you went out?"

Me: "Yes, I had things to take care of"

Mom: "Oh, Ohk"

Me: "Where's Sizwe?"

Mom: "He's asleep but I think he'll be awake soon"

Me: "Mmmh" There was a bell ring
"Who the fuck would that be!" I cussed

Mom: "Language Nhlakanipho!"

Me: "Sorry Mom" I walked over to

attend the door "Look what the wind has blew in, The Mighty Reverend"

Nkosi: "Don't shit on me"

Me: "You can cuss? Wow I didn't expect such from the Reverend"

Nkosi: "I'm not your friend, watch how that little mouth of yours functions around me"

Me: "Same goes to you Mr Big guy" Mom cleared my throat behind me

Mom: "Nkosinathi, welcome and Nhlakanipho" I raised my eyebrow at her "Behave"

Me: "So I'm the bad guy? Mom"

Mom: "Behave Nhlakanipho

Mhlongo, Go and do something

useful if you're going to fail to behave"

Me: "I'll try to behave" I walked over to settle down on the couch. They followed settling on the couch

Mom: "Nkosinathi, How are you my boy?" He frowned, I almost laughed but he fixed his face soon

Nkosi: "I'm fine Ma, You?"

Mom: "Ngikahle, I'm glad you're here" [I'm good]

Nkosi: "Mmmh, I'm glad you were able to give birth to me. I'm glad you were able to do what's best, I would have appreciated it though if you searched for me"

Mom: "I know b---"

Nkosi: "Ma, I forgive you"

Mom: "Uthini Nkosinathi? Are you sure?" [What are you saying]

Nkosi: "I spoke to my father" He cleared his throat "He wants to meet up with you"

Mom: "Oh, I would love that"

Nkosi: "Cool" He looked at me "You can be nice you know, the arrogant shit is not for you"

Me: "Says someone who'll be preaching about sins next Sunday, cut the Bull Mr Big guy" he smiled

Nkosi: "Though I'm glad you took after me, Your big bro"

Me: "The biggest sin ever!" We both chuckled

Mom: "I made Lunch" I smiled warmly at my mom

PHINDILE

We walked over until we met up with an older looking man. I looked at Leticia then back at the man.

Man: "Welcome my daughter, I'm Father Mark"

Me: "Nice to meet you father Mark, I'm Phindile"

Father Mark "You look so pure, You could make a great sister" I

looked at Leticia and she smiled

"You may excuse us Sister

Leticia "She nods walking away
Father Mark: "Being a Nun comes
with many sacrifices" He says to
me

Me: "Is it that bad?"

Father Mark "I have been a
Father for years so it's not that
bad to me"

Me: "Oh"

Father Mark: "What do you
want?"

Me: "What?"

Father Mark: "I don't want to
force you into something you don't
want, you'll have to make a choice
meaning you'll have to let go of
the outside life"

Me: "I'm...I'm...I don't know, I want to be a Nun because I've always wanted to be one though I'm not sure if it's something I'll be able to do. I have a family, a man and I have dreams"

Father Mark: "Very well my daughter, when you have decided on what you really want you'll come back here. I'll be waiting" I nod

Me: "Thank you Father Mark"

Father Mark: "You're welcome my daughter, I'll call Sister Leticia to show you out" I nod and Leticia walked over

Leticia: "We may leave" I smiled following her

NKOSINATHI

I walked inside the house and found my wife drinking her wine. So much for being the Reverend's wife.

Me: "Baby" I kissed her cheek

Katlego: "How did it go?"

Me: "Great! I'm happy, I don't know why but I feel so relaxed and happy" she smiled

Katlego: "I'm happy for you, I'm happy"

Me: "Yeah, Finally I have found my biological Family and it feels

great"

Katlego: "I love you"

Me: "I love you"

2 YEARS LATER

.....

CHAPTER 73

2 YEARS LATER

NOSIBUSISO

I take a last look at myself on the mirror, I looked so beautiful I must say. I smiled nervously as I took a Deep breath.

Me: "Be yourself Nosibusiso, Be yourself" I sighed as my eyes were still set on the mirror.

Nhla: "Nosibusiso you'll be

late" Nhlakanipho shouted from downstairs. I snapped out of my own paradise steeping away from the mirror

Me: "I'm coming!" I snatched my backpack then ran downstairs

Nhla: "You'll hurt yourself Nosibusiso, You can't keep running down the stairs" I rolled my eyes and planted a kiss on his lip.

Me: "Let's get going babe" He sighed taking my backpack from me then head out of the house.

We climbed in his car and he immediately pressed the accelerator. It's my first day at university and I'm nervous as

fuck! I don't know what to expect and that get to me.

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I felt his hand on mine. I smiled looking up to his eyes "Calm down, you'll be fine" I nod looking ahead of the road. In few minutes we were outside of this tallest building, Wits University. Nhlakanipho helped me out of the car.

Nhla: "Should I accompany you inside?" I shook my head and looked back at him

Me: "I'll be fine" He stepped closer and planted a kiss on my forehead.

Nhla: "I love you, Be yourself" I nod

Me: "I love you" I stepped back

and he climbed inside his car. He drove off and I walked over to the gate, there were lot of students at the gate going in and out. I walked in and bumped to someone.

Me: "I'm sorry"

: "Watch where you going"

Me: "Don't fuck with me please, we were both at fault so rather apologize than give me a dirty attitude" I blubber and the person looked up to me, it's a beautiful white girl.

Her: "I'm sorry, I... I'm just..." She sighed "I'm Candice by the way" She handed me her hand for

a handshake. I accepted

Me: "Nosibusiso"

Candice: "Are you a first year?" I nod

Me: "Yes, You?"

Candice: "I'm starting a second year, stop being nervous let's go"

Me: "We're going to class?"

Candice: "It's orientation" I nod

"Come, let's go" I smiled taking my phone and sent a message to Lethabo

-My day is not so bad as I thought

She immediately replied

-Love&Kisses

I sighed slipping it away and

looked up to Candice

Me: "We may go" She grinned taking my hand.

PHINDILE

"Phindile!" I took my plastic running away from the crowd. I felt his hand on my arm and I yanked it away turning to look at him

Me: "Mlungisi"

Mlu: "We need to talk Phindile, what's going on? What's wrong?" I looked at her

Me: "I told you what's wrong Mlungisi! I'm a Nun and I'm happy this way"

Mlu: "You told me all of this in a letter, I thought you love me" I looked around for Sister Leticia then looked at Mlungisi

Me: "Yes I loved you, but Mlungisi love alone is not enough"

Mlu: "I don't understand"

Me: "I couldn't ignore the fact that you have a family, I thought I could be fine with all of that but reality hit me hard and I thought about what I wanted"

Mlu: "You wanted to be a Nun?"

Me: "I've always wanted to be a Nun, It's a life far from the Real World and I think I'm happy with it"

Wlu: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too, So much but I don't want to be a home wrecker and my family is so complicated"

Wlu: "If you come to your senses one of the days, I'll be waiting at my house" I dropped my eyes. I felt his hand on my waist, I immediately looked up to him

Me: "What are you doing?"

He smashed his lips on mine, it took me a little while before I could reply. After some time we pulled out

Wlu: "I love you" He turned over his heel walking away. I ran to take a Taxi to Church. I made a sin! I

dropped on my knees as soon as I stepped at the altar.

Me: "Oh My God please forgive me"

NOMSA

Mvelo: "Baby" I smiled looking up to him

Me: "You're back" I state standing on my feet

Mvelo: "My trip was cut short" I nod and Lungelo stumbled his way to me. Mvelo picked him up and he made so much noise

Me: "He missed you"

Mvelo: "I miss him too"

Me: "You are never home Mvelo,

What's going on?"

Mvelo: "I told you my love, It's business"

Me: "It's been business since..." I sighed "I don't know"

Mvelo: "Everything will work out My love, I just need this"

Me: "I want to look for a Job, I've been job hunting"

Mvelo: "We talked about this Nomsa"

Me: "You talked and I listened, I'm looking for a job and there's literally nothing you could do"

Mvelo: "Fine, Do as you please"

Me: "Mmmh, I'll prepare Lunch"

Mvelo: "I will be upstairs with Lungelo"

NOSIBUSISO

I walked over to the Taxi rank to take a Taxi to town and made my way to the restaurant where Katlego was. I smiled widely when my eyes landed on her.

Me: "Hey"

Katlego: "Hey love" We shared a hug then settled down.

Me: "You're so beautiful, as always" She giggled.

Katlego: "Nkosinathi treats me like a Queen that I am. You look gorgeous, I see that my brother-

in-law is taking a good care of your arse"

Me: "Mamfundisi No!" I

laughed "Anyway, Nhlakanipho is really taking care of me" I smiled

Katlego: "How old are you

again?" She laughed and I joined in

Me: "Obviously, turning 21 soon"

Katlego: "You sound 21 already"

Me: "The same shit!" I giggled

Katlego: "Mhlongo men know their

way around the pussy! Talking

from experience, Nkosinathi is

damn hot in bed" She whispered

and I laughed, she's a happy soul

and I must say I always enjoy

her company.

Me: "I know right? Nhlakanipho
sex me good baby" We high fived
as a waiter made his way to us

Waiter: "Good Afternoon ladies,
What can I get you?"

Me: "I would like some fries,
Chicken and Salad with orange
juice"

Katlego: "Same here but add Beef
instead of Chicken"

Waiter: "Coming right up" He
walked away and I turned my
attention back to Katlego.

NHLAKANIPHO

Nkosi: "Don't tell me you're
scared, Oh look at you" I clicked my

tongue taking the box From my shelf. I always have it with me
Me: "What if she rejects me? I'm scared, I must say"

Nkosi: "That girl loves you, Do your think and she'll say Yes Baby" I laughed at that, I couldn't discuss this with Mlungisi and Nkosinathi was a great help even though this arrogant busted has his moods!

Me: "I'll pop the question, soon"

Nkosi: "Yeah Yeah do that, Pop the shit out little bro"

Me: "I'll do that Mr Reverend, When last did you talk to Sizwe?"
He deeply sighed

Nkosi: "Yesterday, he's still mourning Mapula's death and he's not taking it easy"

Me: "It's been 2 years"

Nkosi: "That ain't shit! But I'm here for him"

Me: "Same here bro, same here"

Nkosi: "Yeah Little man" Looking at his wristwatch "I need to leave, I have patient to save"

Me: "Saving lives it's in your blood bro, go save them" He chuckled and we bro Shaked before he walked out of my office

.....

CHAPTER 74

NOSIBUSISO

I took the drinks as I walked back to the living and handed one to Lethabo.

Me: "Here" I settled down

Lethabo: "So you got a friend? A white friend?"

Me: "Don't be jealous" I giggled and looked directly to her "I can't be a loner you know" I shrugged my shoulders and she nods

Lethabo: "I get you but don't be so attached to her then, you know what I mean" I laughed sipping my drink

Me: "I won't, I promise" I swore and she nods

Lethabo: "There's something I

want to talk to you about" I turned my full attention to her, she was serious. Her face said it all

Me: "It sounds serious" She chuckled and looked down then she looked up to me

Lethabo: "I met someone" I raised my eyebrow looking at her
Me: "What about Mr Bae" She sighed deeply

Lethabo: "We're having problems, I know it sounds wrong but I... I'm in love with her brother

Nosibusiso "I gasped standing up
Me: "What do you mean?"

Lethabo: "It Just happened, I

met Mpho's brother then the next thing we hooked up and we kissed" She sighed" Then I...I slept with him"

Me: "You did what!?" I exclaimed

Lethabo: "I cannot control myself when I'm with him Ohk? I...I just confirmed that I love him, I feel safe and happy when I'm with him" I frowned and walked towards her then settled down, next to her

Me: "I.. This is so wrong but baby I won't judge you, I know how love makes a person crazy so I get you"

Lethabo: "You don't feel disguised?"

I'm a bad person"

Me: "I've been friends with you for about 3 years Lethabo and you're a good person" I smiled holding her hands "You ain't perfect, you're also a human and you're bound to make mistakes" she smiled then she suddenly frowned

Lethabo: "How will I face Mpho? I feel like a bad person" She scoffed

Me: "Mpho the player will be fine, I hope he'll understand"

Lethabo: "I'm a bit nervous, heck I'm nervous but I need to face him eventually" I nod and chuckled

Me: "Crazy things happen ey, This

is so crazy!"

Lethabo: "I know right? I feel like I'm in a movie or something"

Me: "Jesus" I laughed and she joined in

PHINDILE

My phone rang and I took it, it was an unknown number. I answered the call

Me: "Hy"

Mlu: "Phindile hey" My heart skipped, I sighed without saying

anything "I know you said I should stay away but I.. I can't"

Me: "I'll be in trouble Mlungisi, what exactly do you want from

me?"

Mlu: "You! I want you!" I snorts
looking around to see if there's no
someone around to hear this
conversation

Me: "You cannot have me and you
know it!" I hissed

Mlu: "I don't care if I cannot have
you or anything, I want you and I
will get you"

Me: "Where's your wife Mlungisi
Dube?" I said so calm

Mlu: "We're in a process of
divorce" It went silent! Something
in me felt nothing but guilt. I feel
like I'm the cause of their divorce

Me: "Oh" I suddenly say sounding

down

Mlu: "Don't feel guilty about it"

Me: "What?" I asked confused and he chuckled

Mlu: "I know what is going on in that brain of yours" I kept quiet "But I couldn't figure it out when you wanted to be a Nun, Sadly" It stung

Me: "Please, Don't ever call me Mlungisi"

Mlu: "If you didn't want to talk to me you would have long hanged up" That's true but it is so wrong

Me: "I'm a Sister and I cannot have this with you"

Mlu: "Being a sister is wrong to

you Phindile, It's keeping you away from the people you love"

Me: "That's not true!" I defend my religion

Mlu: "It's true and you know it, when last did you talk to your Mom? Did you know that your sister is being locked up in a Mental Center?" My heart broke, It's been Months since I last got into contact with any of my family members

Me: "Ntsiki is in a Lonely bin? B... But how?" I sat down on my single bed with had only two blanket and a pillow. As much as Ntsiki and I had our differences,

she is still my sister

Mlu: "See what I mean?"

Me: "What happened? Is she
Ok?"

Mlu: "Meet up with me, I'll tell you
everything"

Me: "You know I can't"

Mlu: "You're placing your Church
before your loved ones, again" I
sighed closing my eyes.

Me: "I'll try and sneak out around
2200hrs, send me the details" I
immediately disconnected the call
and flipped my eyes open. The door
was pulled open and Sister Betty
walked in

Sister Betty: "Good Afternoon

Sister Phindile "I smiled

Me: "Good Afternoon Sister Betty"

Sister: "We're having a prayer session, Father Mark said I should call you"

Me: "Thank you" She walked over to the door but stopped at her tracks as she turned to look at me

Sister Betty: "It's early for you to walk away, You don't know the secrets behind this walls" She said signaling with her hand across the room "Run while you still can" She smiled and walked out.

NKOSINATHI

Katlego: "Baby have you seen this?" She handed over a news paper

Me: "Reverend Mhlongo is a fake Reverend after all, he is fake" It was written in bold letters. I chuckled as I read the whole story, people have to understand that I'm a Husband and a brother. My Brothers are the swearing type and it rubbed off to me, though that's not the case.

Katlego: "What's wrong with these journalists?" I smiled looking at her

Me: "Baby don't worry yourself"

Katlego: "Why are you so Calm?"

Me: "Media Company will always want something to dig into, soon this will blow up and everyone will forget about it"

Katlego: "I guess you're right, you should decrease your cussing ways" I raised my eyebrow "I mean it baby, You've been saying a lot of 'shit' lately"

Me: "It's Nhlakanipho's fault but I'll try and decrease my cussing ways" She planted a kiss on my cheek

Katlego: "That's better, I'll prepare something to eat"

Me: "It's still early for that, don't

you think?"

Katlego: "Early to cook?"

NARRATED

Nosibusiso walked to their bathroom and took a quick shower. Nhlakanipho was not back, she got done with her hygiene process then fixed herself before she head downstairs. A smile widen to the sight of Nhlakanipho.

Nosi: "Baby" Her heart was doing wonders, like always.

Nhla: "Sweetheart, Look whai got for you" She looked at him with love, excitedly she snatch the

paperwork which looked so beautiful and opened it up.

Nosi: "Oww Baby, I've always wanted to have this book" She dropped a tear of joy and looked up to him "Thank you" It was the Harvard wife's book. The Author, Busisekile just released it some few months back but Nosi didn't have time to get a copy.

Nhla: "Anything for my baby" She placed it on the kitchen counter then took few steps to him

Nosi: "You are amazing!" She was honest about that, Nhlakanipho is amazing

Nhla: "And you... You're sexy and I

want to Mmmh" He licked his lip scanning Nosi and immediately smashed his lips on hers, without saying anything Nosi responded. Nhlakanipho is a beast when it comes to sex, a gentleman behind it all

Me: "Here?" She mumbled on his lips

Nhla: "Yes" Breathless, he answered. His hands travelled to her waist [REMOVED PART]

.....

CHAPTER 75

PHINDILE

I changed to a dress and a Flat shoe before I sneaked out heading outside to the car which was few minutes away. I texted Mlu to confirm the car and he said it's him. I climbed in and he immediately drove off without saying anything

Me: "What are you doing?"

Mlu: "I don't like your Church" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "It's your choice"

Mlu: "I love you" My heart skipped a beat, how I love this man but things are complicated

Me: "Can you please tell me about Ntsiki, what happened to her?"

Mlu: "I told you"

Me: "I know you did, I'm asking you again"

Mlu: "She was just too crazy for my best friend and she attacked my daughter"

Me: "She what?"

Mlu: "You heard, So we placed her in the Mental Center" I sighed and nod

Me: "I'm a bad sister right?" He finally parked in an unknown location which was dark. It was a little bit scary outside

Mlu: "You're not a bad sister, Your Church is the wrong thing in your life"

Me: "I'm... I vowed to be a Nun, to have this life"

Mlu: "You can still stop this, stop all of this" I shook my head looking down

Me: "It's not easy, Many ended up dead because of wanting out"

Mlu: "Dead?"

Me: "Yes"

Mlu: "That's bad" I know there's something which is going on in his mind when he said that simple sentence

Me: "Yes" I gasped when I felt his hands picking me up placing me on his lap. In seconds my tongue was down his throat as we were

exchanging spits. As much as I wanted to pull out, I couldn't. I miss this, his lips!

NOSIBUSISO

I was in his arms as he was sleeping so peacefully. After all our sessions we took a shower, a very naughty shower then we came to bed. He immediately slept, I looked at his face, he's so beautiful. Handsome is an understatement, this man is beautiful. I got off the bed and walk over to take my Book-The Harvard wife. I started reading through because I had no sleep.

Nhla: "Baby" His sexy deep voice which always leave me breathless. I smiled closing the book as I placed it back on the table then I walked over to the bed

Me: "Hey"

Nhla: "What's wrong? Why ain't you sleeping?" I shrugged my shoulders with a deep sigh

Me: "I don't have sleep, well I can't sleep" I say to him.

Nhla: "Come here" I crawled to his big arms "I love you" I smiled

Me: "I know" he chuckled

Nhla: "I love you so much Sweetheart, and I would do

anything to be with you"

Me: "Are you dying" He laughed, softly

Nhla: "Haw Sweetheart"

Me: "You're talking as if you're dying" I say and snuggled closer to him

Nhla: "I'm declaring my love to you" I nod with so much understanding, I'm smiling to myself beneath of everything

Me: "I love you Nhlakanipho, so much"

Nhla: "Please Marry me" It went silence, I loosen myself from him ready to get up but he held me tighter

Me: "Nhlakanipho we talked about this, I'm still Young" I breath that out

Nhla: "I know sweetheart but I can't wait any longer, I want you to be my wife"

Me: "I...I..." He slowly pushed me from him then walked to his briefcase. He came back with something and sat on top of the bed opening the black and silver box he was holding. I gasped "Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "I bought this 2 years back, I know you said you want to get married when you're done with school but sweetheart you

can do both" A tear escaped, I sniffed it away and nod countless
Me: "Yes" Luckily that escaped down my throat without any difficulties. I didn't trust my voice

Nhla: "What?"

Me: "Yes" he narrowed his eyes at me

Nhla: "You can think about it you know, I'm not forcing you.

Mlungisi would literally kill me an--
- "I giggled

Me: "Nhlakanipho Yes! I will marry your firm arse" He stopped and looked at me, straight to my eyes.

Nhla: "Really?" I nod

Me: "Really" I whispered and he slid the simple yet elegant diamond ring in my marital finger. I giggled "You should have try to be Romantic you know, I can't be proposed around 2am"

Nhla: "Well Sweetheart I.. I'm not a Romantic try though I try to be"

Me: "Don't try" I smiled looking at his face "I love you the way you are, You ain't perfect but there's no one like you" he giggled, he hardly does that

Nhla: "Where did you get that, the Romantic line?" I shrugged my shoulders looking at my Ring

Me: "A song by Tatiana, it's great and I'm surprised you don't know it because you like English music"

Nhla: "I have my type of Music"

Me: "I've noticed, So when are we getting married? In like 10 months" he popped his eyes then adjust himself

Nhla: "10 Months? No

Sweetheart, In A Month time"

Me: "What? How am I going to plan the wedding while I have school?" Confused, I asked but it seems like he has all the answers

Nhla: "That's why there's what we call a Wedding Planner, You'll get a suitable one you'll like" I

breath out and nod. I'm quite nervous but I'm excited. I'm going to be Mrs Mhlongo the Third, it sounds so good.

NOMSA

Mvelo: "Come on baby" I packed up my clothes in a suitcase not saying a thing "My Love.." I stopped and breath

Me: "Leave me alone Mvelo, Please"

Mvelo: "I love you"

Me: "Your actions are saying otherwise"

Mvelo: "You can't up and leave, it's 5am and I won't allow you to walk away with my son" I

chuckled bitterly

Me: "You forgot that few weeks back, don't tell me you now have your memory back that you have a wife and a son?"

Mvelo: "I know I've been absent but I was busy" I ignored

him "Come on Nomsa, Baby" I zipped my suitcases dragging them downstairs, it was 2 of them. I walked back to take Lungelo then I walked back downstairs

Me: "I hope you'll be much happier without us"

Mvelo: "My love please don't leave" I shut the door and placed

Lungelo down while I put the Suitcases in the car. I helped him climb and I too then pressed the accelerator. Maybe it's better this way, I looked at my son who looked so happy. Marriage life!

NOSIBUSISO

I was happy, I was smiling throughout the morning and I didn't want anyone to kill my mood. Candice rushed to me as soon as our lesson ended.

Candice: "So?" I looked at her confused

Me: "So???" She rolled her eyes tapping her feet on the floor. For

a white girl, she has a Black
Drama

Candice: "You've been smiling, I saw you while you were still coming out of the Lecture Hall" I blinked and hold up my hand. The Diamond reflected and she screamed, She has Drama for days.

Me: "This"

Candice: "Oh My Goddess this is beautiful, Congratulations

boo" She pulled me for a hug then we pulled out

Me: "Thank you"

Candice: "We have to Celebrate, I'm paying!" She giggled and I

smiled

Me: "Of course you are" She
grapped my hand and we walked
away

.....

CHAPTER 76 SEASON FINALE NOSIBUSISO

I walked inside the house as I
was coming back from school. I
was nervous after seeing My
Father's car packed outside and I
know that he won't be much
happy about my engagement.

Me: "Dad" I walked over to him and
hugged him tight then we pulled

away

Mlu: "How are you my Baby?" I smiled

Me: "I'm good, You??"

Mlu: "I'm not good" There was no sight of Nhlakanipho, I wonder where he is "He's not around"

Me: "Ow" I guess he noticed my eyes which were roaming around the house

Mlu: "I received a letter from the Mhlongo's Asking for your hand in marriage" I blinked and looked down while I was playing with my hands.

Me: "Dad" I slowly looked up

Mlu: "You're still Young Nosibusiso,

What's with the rush?" I sighed
Me: "I'll handle it, It's not like
there'll be any difference between
my relationship with Nhlakanipho"
Mlu: "Being in a Relationship and
getting Married are two
different things Nosi"

Me: "I love him Daddy, I want to
take this big step with him" He
sighed, deeply

Mlu: "I need to talk to him, as a
father-in-law rather than a
friend"

Me: "Don't beat him up please"

Mlu: "I don't go around Beating up
people"

Me: "Yes but you always beat up u-

Nhlakanipho"he chuckled and narrowed his eyes at me

Mlu:"You're growing up, I'm even scared of that"I smiled, faintly

Me:"I'm growing and I'll make you proud,I love you Dad" He smiled too, walking up to me.

Mlu:"I love you too myBaby, tell Nhlakanipho that the negotiations can take place in Two weeks"

Me:"Really?"I grinned excitedly

Mlu:"Yes, Really"I threw myself at him and he held me so tight.

Me:"Thank you"I mumbled

Mlu:"For what?"

Me:"For being the best father"

Mlu: "I try my best" I sighed
feeling so free

PHINDILE

I hum a very beautiful song
folding some of my clothes. I was
startled by a knock and I
welcomed the person in.

Sister Betty: "Good Afternoon

Sister Phindile" I smiled turning to
get

Me: "Afternoon Sister Betty, How
have you been?"

Sister Betty: "Fine, Just fine" She
sighed closing the door and walked
in further

Me: "Can you please sit" She nods

settling down "Is there anything you would like to talk about?" She sighed, she's doing it a lot

Sister Betty: "Can you please leave the Church" I popped my eyes then adjust myself to look at her calmly

Me: "What do you mean?"

Sister Betty: "You could find any Catholic church out there, any Catholic Church but not this one"

Me: "I don't get you, I honestly don't get you" she looked down then up to me

Sister: "You've been here for a year and you're comfortable, they will soon start doing things to

you" I blinked, so confused.

Me: "I really don't get you, I'm trying to understand what you're saying but it's a little bit

hard" She smiled standing up

Sister Betty: "I should go, Please leave the Church before it's too

late for you" She walked over to

the door and opened it, I lay down

on the bed as soon as she shut

the door closed. My phone rings

and I immediately stepped out of

my thoughts

Me: "Hy" I accepted the call, not

looking at the caller ID

Ntsiki: "H-Hy"

Me: "Ntsiki, where did you get my

number"

Ntsiki: "Mlungisi, he came to see me and asked me to talk to you" I smiled, he's such a sweetheart. No matter what Nontsikelelo did to me, she's still my sister.

Me: "Oh"

Ntsiki: "He's a great Man and he loves you" I try not too hard to blush but I couldn't help it

Me: "He tries"

Ntsiki: "I'm sorry" She suddenly mumbled and it goes silence. I don't know what to say so I clear my throat "Being here has made me realize so many things"

Me: "I'm glad, Are you taking your

Meds?"

Ntsiki: "Always, I have a
Therapist so he made me realize
too many things"

Me: "That's good, I'm happy for
you"

Ntsiki: "And I met someone, he's
also admitted" I smiled

Me: "Really? Does he make you
happy?"

Ntsiki: "Without even trying, we're
not official as yet but we're
getting there"

Me: "I'm really happy for you sis"

Ntsiki: "Thank you, how about you?
I've heard you're now a Nun" I
cleared my throat

Me: "Yes, I'm doing what I've always wanted so I'm happy too"

Ntsiki: "Are you really happy? I mean you have a man who loves you and by the looks of things you love him too. Are you really happy" That's a trick question!

Me: "Y..Yes of course I'm happy"

Ntsiki: "Ohk then, Good for you but sis don't let a religion separate you from someone you love because you'll stay miserable"

Me: "I hear you"

Ntsiki: "Good"

NOMSA

Me: "Hey baby" I kissed his cheek
Picking him up then walked with
him downstairs, Bontle was there
feeding Mpilo; my little brother
who looked so handsome. He looks
so much like his father, a total
replication of Mlungisi Dube.

Me: "Hy"

Bontle: "Hy" I settled down
turning on the television "I made
enough porridge, I thought you
can also feed Lungelo" I shook my
head, I still don't trust her.

Me: "Lungelo has eaten so she's
fine"

Bontle: "Mmmh" Lungelo started
stumbling his way to his little

Uncle-Mpilo. They're so close, everytime I come here they'll be buddies. I took my ringing phone from my pocket accepting the call while making my way to the kitchen

Me: "Sawbona Ma" [Greetings Mom]

Ma: "Yini le engiyizwako Nomsa yokushiya umuzi wakho uye eGoli" [Ehais this that I hear of you leaning your house to Gauteng] I sighed, I knew Mvelo would run to my Mom like a coward he is. I even knew that My dear Mother won't listen to my side of the story

Me: "I'm done with Mvelo Ma, I'm done"

Ma: "Emshadweni kuyabekezelwa Nomsa" [There's a patience in Marriage]

Me: "I can't take it Ma, If you're so into them why don't you marry Mvelo yourself and leave me alone?"

Ma: "I'm your Mother Nomsa, you can't talk to me like that"

Me: "If you're My Mom act like it!!" I immediately disconnected the call and tried to calm down before I made my way back to the living Room.

Mpilo: "Nono Nono" He walked over

to me followed by Lungelo
Lungelo: "Manam" I chuckled
knowing how Jealous he is with
me

NOSIBUSISO

Nhla: "Evening Sweetheart" He
plant a kiss on my forehead
walking upstairs. He came back
some few minutes later

Me: "How's you?"

Nhla: "Good, we're having Dinner
with the family"

Me: "Huh?"

Nhla: "We're heading to the
Mhlongo Residence, we're invited
for dinner and I couldn't say no" I

dropped my fork

Me: "Nhlakanipho; I'm not feeling well about having dinner with a crowd"

Nhla: "Should I cancel? I can be your Doctor, stay in bed with you"
I sighed

Me: "We'll go"

Nhla: "Are you sure?" I nod

Me: "Yes I'm sure"

Nhla: "We'll get ready then, I Love you hear that?" I smiled

Me: "I do too" he frowned

Nhla: "Do what" I giggled pecking his lips

Me: "I love you"

Nhla: "That's better"

Me: "Ow, My Father said I must
you that the Lobola negotiations
can take place in Two weeks time"
Nhla: "Great, I'm marrying you" He
grinned and pulled me to him
Me: "Yes you are" I smiled so
beautiful, he makes me happy.

2 WEEKS LATER

.....

CHAPTER 77

SEASON FINALE

LINDA

Mom: "Are you sure about this?" I
hold my daughter with my hand
and looked at my Mom who were
standing next to me. I nod

Me: "I'm sure, Nhlakanipho has a right to know his daughter"

Mom: "If things ain't going well please come back home Linda"

Me: "I'll come back Mom, let me get going before it gets dark" We shared a hug before we walked out heading to the cab which drove off immediately. I gave the driver the co-ordinates to the Mhlongo Residence and in two hours we were outside of the biggest tall building which looked so much bigger than before.

Me: "Thank you" I handed him the money tipping him off before we climbed out Dragging my suitcase

while I had Nonhlakanipho In my hand.

Nonhla: "Mommy what are we doing here?" I smiled looking down at him, she looked so beautiful just like her father.

Me: "We're going to see your family baby" she smiled, an innocent cute smile and we walked in further until we were at the door. I rang the bell twice before it was pushed opened. She gasped as soon as her eyes landed on me Mrs Mhlongo: "Linda!" she narrowed her eyes at me then looked besides me

Me: "Ma"

Mrs Mhlongo: "How? I mean I... Y... You're dead" Nonhlakanipho held my hand tighter

Me: "I'll explain everything Ma, can we get in?" She looked down at Nonhlakanipho again and nod her head before she welcomed us in.

The place looked even more beautiful than years back. We settled in a couch and and someone whom I assumed is a helper walked to us

Her: "Good Afternoon, Can I get you anything?" I looked at Mrs Mhlongo who smiled warmly.

Mrs Mhlongo: "A tea will be fine Mavis" She smiled and walked

away.

Me: "I thought you don't like having helpers" As I have remembered how she hated having helpers.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Time has passed but I just hired Mavis because she was in need of the job" She suddenly brushed it off and fell in an uncomfortable silence and I cleared my throat.

Me: "Ma where is Nhlakanipho, if I may ask?"

Mrs Mhlongo: "He's at his apartment" She looked at Nonhlakanipho "Is she yours?"

Me: "Yes Ma"

Mrs Mhlongo: "How old is she?"

Me: "She's turning 8 years" She looked up to me. Mavis came back to give us the tea and made her way out.

Mrs Mhlongo: "She's Nhlakanipho's daughter right?" I nod looking down

Me: "Yes Ma" I goes quiet for a minute

Mrs Mhlongo: "What happened to you? What's going on?"

Me: "I didn't really die Ma"

Mrs Mhlongo: "But we saw you in that Coffin"

Me: "That was Lindiwe, My Twin sister" I looked at her "Someone

was trying to kill me, they went for Lindiwe thinking it's me and when they realise that it's not me they came for me"

Mrs Mhlongo: "I really don't understand"

Me: "They exchanged my body with Lindiwe's and you buried Lindiwe instead of me" she shook her head "I survived and gave birth to Nonhlakanipho" she smiled looking at Nonhlakanipho

Mrs Mhlongo: "Nonhlakanipho? You named her after

Nonhlakanipho?" I nod

Me: "Yes I named her after

Nonhlakanipho, she's so beautiful"

she smiled

Mrs Mhlongo: "Indeed she is, I need to call Nhlakanipho but we'll do that a little bit later"

Me: "Oh" I wanted to see Nhlakanipho right now, As much as I wanted to introduce Nonhlakanipho to him I really miss him.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Let me call someone, I'll be back" She stood up walking away.

Nonhla: "Mommy who was that?"

Me: "That's your grandmother"

Nonhla: "But we left Granny at home" Mrs walked back and went to pick up Nonhlakanipho.

Mrs Mhlongo: "She's just so beautiful" she settled down with her on the couch "Hello baby, I'm your grandmother" Nonhlakanipho smiled, she had grown to be a wonderful little girl.

NOSIBUSISO

I kept on pacing up and down the bedroom looking so worried. I want to get this over and done with and the waiting is killing me. Nomsa: "You're making me dizzy Marn Nosi calm down" I stopped and sighed
Me: "I'm just worried, they've been doing that for two hours or

so "I sat down and my phone rang.

Nhla: "Sweetheart"

Me: "What's going on

Nhlakanipho? Is everything Ohk?"

Nhla: "Don't stress yourself,

everything w--" He was disturbed by the opening of my bedroom door.

Auntie Nel: "Nosibusiso

Mhlongo, How is that?" I grinned looking at her

Me: "Is everything Ohk Auntie?"

Auntie Nel: "Everything went

well, Now get up to prepare some food for your in-laws" Lethabo and Nomsa scream, my heart was indeed happy.

Me: "My Husband, I have to prepare Lunch for my In-laws talk later" he chuckled

Nhla: "I love you Nkosikazi" [My wife] I disconnected the call and looked at Nomisa and Lethabo excitedly.

Me: "I'm officially Married"

Nomisa: "Welcome to the life of Stress, Shouting and Love

Baby" They clicked their glasses of wine

Auntie Nel: "Asambe Nosibusiso Mhlongo" I giggled following my Auntie. I made everything then walked to the Living room handing everyone while looking

down.

"You're so beautiful Makoti"

"Our son has chosen a wife"

I walked back to the Kitchen and sighed with a huge smile across my face. Auntie Nel walked back

with Traditional beer and I

immediately felt like my Stomach was coming out of my throat. I

ran upstairs but it was too late, I vomited everything on the floor at the passage.

Lethabo: "Oh babe are you fine?" I nod kneeling down. She brushed my back and made me stand.

Me: "Let me clean up here"

Nomsa: "You look tired, Go and take

some rest I'll clean up here" I nod while walking straight to my room. I suddenly felt tired but I knew I wasn't sick or anything.

PHINDILE

I was reading a Bible, getting ready to attend a Bible study when Sister Leticia made her way to me.

Sister Leticia: "Sister Phindile, How are you?"

Me: "I'm good, what about you?"

Sister Leticia: "I'm perfectly fine, Are you ready for the study group?"

Me: "I'm always ready" she walked

in further to me

Sister Leticia: "Things are going to change, I hope you're ready"

Me: "What do you mean?"

Sister Leticia: "Father thinks you're now ready, you look really so you'll find out soon" I nod simply and gathered my Bible

Me: "We should go and attend the Bible study" She nods and we made our way to the hall. The hall wasn't that full as there were few sisters. We settled were and how we always settled on the floor and started with our study.

NONTSIKELELO

Musa: "How are you doing?" I smiled at him, Musa is a friend whom I'm lucky to consider as a perfect man for me.

Me: "I'm getting there, You??"

Musa: "Hopefully I'll be out of here soon, I miss being outside" I chuckled

Me: "This is not bad" I walked over to wash my teeth while he settled on the couch

Musa: "Why are you brushing your teeth in the afternoon?"

Me: "I love doing this"

Musa: "I see, There's a lot of things I have to know about you"

Me: "Oh Yes?"

Musa: "Yeah, Let's go and get something to eat before they come and drag us out of here"

Me: "I'm not hungry though"

Musa: "Let's go N, Come" I rinsed my mouth then made my way following Musa

Musa: "That's more like it" I laughed heading to the hall

NHLAKANIPTHO

After I received a call from my mom asking me to rush home, I immediately drove off home. I knew there was something important because she sounded strained and worried. I packed on

the driveway then walked in.

Me: "Mom!" I shouted then she walked over to me

Mom: "Nhlakanipho, You came"

Me: "You sounded worried, what's going on Mom?" She shook her head

Mom: "Nhlakanipho" She looked at me then looked at somewhere and I followed her eyes

Me: "Linda!" I walked over to her and indeed it was her. She looked grown, but as beautiful as she looked 8 to 9 years ago

Linda: "Nhlaka, Baby" I chuckled not believing this.

Me: "Linda Y... You're dead" I

whispered as it came so bitter
Linda: "I'll explain everything, just
hear me out" My phone rang and I
looked at it-My wife flashed on
the phone screen. I couldn't wait
to change the contact name from
sweetheart to My wife. I declined
the call and looked back at her
Me: "Start talking"

.....

CHAPTER 78
SEASON FINALE
NHLAKANI PHO

Me: "Why didn't I know about you
having a twin? Why did they allow
me to attend that stupid

ceremony huh? You enjoyed torturing me that much?" I was burning with anger. Who the person I once claimed to be the love of my life?

Linda: "That was all for Lindi, My Mom advised me to keep things from you because the person who tried to kill me is closer to you" I breath, this is too much for me. I need to breath.

Me: "Your Mom was broken, I saw all of that"

Linda: "Lindi was my twin so of course she would be sad nor broken"

Me: "Fuck you Linda Fuck!!! Who

knew about this? Who?" I was already close to struggle the life out of her

Linda: "My Family, None of my friends knew"

Me: "What are you doing here all of the sudden?" I couldn't understand that, I hear what she's saying but why all of the sudden?

Linda: "I had t---"

"Mommy" I looked up the staircase to be met by a little girl, A replicate of myself in a girl vision. I noticed that she has Linda's features but everything it's me

Me: "Linda don't tell me she's my daughter" As much as I already know the truth, I felt so defeated. So much weak

Linda: "I didn't lose the baby, I don't know what happened but I didn't lose her"

Me: "Who's her name?" She looked so beautiful and innocent. As much as I didn't want anything to do with Linda, the little girl's had the innocent smile which you would instantly fall in love

Linda: "She's Nonhlakanipho" I smiled looking back at Linda who looked beautiful. She was still is, but Nosibusiso was still the

most beautiful girl I have ever laid my eyes on. I'm afraid that this might hurt her, it's just too much.

Me: "You named her after me?" My heart melted. Feeling a little bit excited, there was no doubt that she was my daughter.

Linda: "Yes, she's so beautiful and she took after you" I walked over to the staircase and picked her up as old as she was.

Me: "Hey" She smiled looking at Linda who nodded. She turned her attention to me

Nonhla: "Hy"

Me: "You good?" She nodded

Nonhla: "I'm good thank you, You?" I smiled, she had manners.

Me: "I'm Nhlakanipho, Who are you?" She giggled "What?"

Nonhla: "My name is almost like yours, I'm Nonhlakanipho"

Me: "Oh Is it?"

Nonhla: "Yes" I kissed her cheek and Linda walked to us.

Linda: "Baby" She took Nonhlakanipho from me and looked at me then back at

Nonhlakanipho "Remember I told you that one day we'll be going to see your father?" Nonhla nodded

Nonhla: "Yes"

Linda: "Now he's your father" Linda said pointing at me.

Nonhlakanipho looked at me

Nonhla: "Are you my father?" I found myself nodding

Nonhla: "Why did you leave me?"

That hurt, I looked at Linda

then walked out of the house. I

need to see Nosibusiso. I drove

straight to her house then sent

a text asking her to come out.

NOSIBUSISO

I wore my slippers then walked

out of the house. Nhlakanipho's

car was few houses from my

home. I dragged my feet and

climbed inside the car without saying anything.

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I didn't reply, I was still a little bit upset about earlier "I guess you're upset"

Me: "Why did you call me here Nhlakanipho?" I looked at him, he looked delicious. I felt a hot thingy between my thighs but I sighed looking away, I can't be betrayed by my honeypot.

Nhla: "Haw Sweetheart, You just became my wife just few hours and already you're upset with me?"

Me: "Few hours on being your wife and already my calls are

rejected" I blinked looking straight up to him

Nhla: "I...I...I had things to take care of"

Me: "Important things? What is so much important more than your wife Nhlakanipho?" He sighed and looked back at me

Nhla: "I'm sorry sweetheart, I'm sorry for rejecting your call" A tear fell, I blinked it away looking outside of the window. It was still a little bit early but the streets were quite

Me: "Are you regretting getting married to me Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "What!?" He snapped and I

looked at him

Me: "Yes you heard me"

Nhla: "I dare you to repeat that shit! Nosibusiso Mhlongo I dare you" I looked away trying too much not to smile but my cheeks betrayed me and the whole emotional me was replaced with a smile me.

Me: "You rejected my call so what was I supposed to think?" I was still looking away from him

Nhla: "I love you woman! So you can do anything I mean anything but don't ever question my love for you uyangizwa?" [Hear that] I nodded "Angizwa?" [I didn't hear

that]

Me: "Yebo Njomane I heard what you've said"

Nhla: "Now come and kiss your husband" I looked at him, he was grinning showing off his widest smile. I didn't hesitate to kiss him, after such a long day I was glad that he's with me.

Me: "Now tell me, what did you have to take care of which is so important" He tensed and cleared his throat

Nhla: "Nothing Important" I raised my eyebrow

Me: "Oh Really?"

Nhla: "Sweetheart if there's

anything wrong I'll tell you

Ohk?" I nodded

Me: "Ohk, I love you" He laid me on his chest and planted a kiss on my forehead

Nhla: "I love you"

PHINDILE

I reached for a candle which was blew by the wind and it immediately went off.

Me: "Hello! Is anybody here?" I reached for the handle. This is something I have never experienced, having to be woken up by a deepest rough voice calling your name. The lights couldn't

switch off, and the candle can't be lit.

"Phindile my daughter, It's time to get you married"

Me: "Wh.... Who are you?" I

mumbled and walked out of my bedroom. I was hearing some weird sounds, like there's a certain celebration. I walked over to the hall, there was a single red candle which was lit and I'm sure we switched everything off before we went to sleep.

"I'm your Church Mother, worry not everything will be Ohk" The door was banged closed, the candle shut off and I jumped placing my

hand on my chest looking at the door. The lights turned on and Sister Betty walked in.

Sister Betty: "Sister Phindile, what are you doing here?" I shook my head trying to get that terrible horror out of my mind

Me: "I...I...I heard a voice"

Sister Betty: "A voice?" I nod

Me: "It Said it's my Church Mother, that I'm about to get married" I looked at her "What's going on Sister Betty?" She looked scared, I'm scared too. I have never seen such

Sister Betty: "You need to leave"

Me: "What!?"

Sister Betty: "They're coming for you! They want to get you married to a Spirit"

Me: "Like a ghost?" She nodded

Sister Betty: "But trust me, you don't want to be a wife to a Spirit. It's not the same as the human marriage" I nodded, this is getting scary

Sister Betty: "I'll sneak you out of the Church, you need to run as fast as you can"

Me: "Won't you be in trouble?"

Sister Betty: "Don't worry about me, Phindile I want you to forget about the teachings from this Church and trust what your

heart wants you to trust"

Me: "You're speaking in Riddles"

Sister Betty: "Pray, Fast and be a worshiper. They'll be coming for you and what is coming is not good, it's evil" my heart skept a beat

Me: "Thank you"

Sister Betty: "You need to leave, leave everything you have because they're going to track you down using them" I nod and we heard straight to the door. The corridor seemed long but we finally made it to the door.

Me: "Come with me" she shook her head

Sister Betty: "They will find me within an hour, I'm married to one of the spirits of the underworld" I nodded

Me: "Thank you"

Sister Betty: "Don't forget what I told you, now run" I sighed then ran out. I was shit scared but I knew that I had to run, not after what happened.

LINDA

Me: "Nhlakanipho we need to talk" he stopped on his tracks and looked at me lazily

Nhla: "What?"

Me: "I still love you"

Nhla: "Well I don't love you anymore" My heart broke, but what did I think? That he'll immediately jump to me

Me: "I know I've hurt you but I love you, please Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "Please what?"

Me: "You know Nonhlakanipho needs a loving home, we could give her that" it went silence for a while

Nhla: "I'm married" That, I wasn't expecting

Me: "W... What?"

Nhla: "And I love my wife, get your shit and move back to where you come from"

Me: "Are you kicking me out?"

Nhla: "Oh Yes I am"

Me: "I'm taking my daughter with, once we leave here you won't see her ever again!"

Nhla: "You wouldn't dare"

Me: "Trust me I would" I slowly walked over to where he was standing and I looked up to him, he was still handsome "You're still handsome"

Nhla: "My wife is taking a very good care of me"

Me: "You Love me Nhlakanipho, why are you doing this?"

Nhla: "I love my wife! I don't love you anymore"

Me: "You love me Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "I don't!"

Me: "Yes you do, you love me and deep down you know you do" I got closer to him. We were breathing the same air and it felt so wonderful to be closer to him "You do" I immediately smashed my lips on his. At first he didn't respond but eventually he did and we changed positions while he was pinning my hands over my head. We kissed for a while before he pulled out stepping away from me
Nhla: "Fuck you Linda! Fuck you" He hissed walking away from my sight

.....

CHAPTER 79 SEASON FINALE NOSIBUSISO

I dragged my suitcases downstairs, I wanted to get out of this place since I miss my man. I finally placed everything down and head to the living room where they were having their breakfast.

Me: "Good Morning Fam" I Smiled settling around the table

Nomsa: "Aww MaNjomane, how are you doing?" I blushed looking down, I don't know why everything which has Nhlakanipho in between

tickles me

Me: "I'm good ma'am, you?"

Nomsa: "I'm good, You look so beautiful and you're glowing" I giggled

Me: "I'm happy, so I think I am bound to glow"

Nomsa: "Your glow is different, ain't you pregnant?" Dad coughed and I looked down so embarrassed. How could Nomsa do this to me, placing me in such a situation.

Me: "Bontle are you fine?" She nodded, she's a quiet person these days and as much as I didn't like her; I'm worried.

Bontle: "I'm good" I slowly nodded and looked down at my plate. I ate a bacon which stuck down my throat wanting to come out of.

Nomsa: "Are you Ok?" I closed my eyes trying so hard not to vomit. I nodded pushing the plate far from me.

Me: "I think I'm full" I flipped my eyes open and sighed. I was hungry but I wasn't about to eat this. Nomsa looked at me suspiciously and smile

Nomsa: "I'll prepare something for you"

Me: "You don't have to, I'm fine"

Nomsa: "I want you, let me go and

prepare something for you" I nodded and she walked over to the kitchen.

Mlu: "My baby are you Ok?" I nodded with a deep sigh. I don't know what's happening with me.

Me: "I'll be fine" he nodded. After some few minutes Nomsa came back with a bowl.

Nomsa: "Here" I looked at the bowl and frowned

Me: "What's this Nomsa? Ewww it looks so disgusting"

Nomsa: "Try it, It's nice- Avocado mixed with Amasi and apples"

Mlu: "You can't be feeding my daughter this shit Nomsa"

Nomsa: "Relax Daddy, Everything will be good I promise" I shrugged my shoulders taking the first tablespoon of this. My heart immediately skipped a beat and I instantly fell in love with this
Me: "It's so good, Mmmh"

Nomsa: "I told you"

Mlu: "You're so weird" I shrugged my shoulders finishing off my plate and in few minutes I was done.

Me: "This is good, now I have to leave"

Mlu: "You already leaving?"

Me: "I'm Married Daddy so yeah I'm leaving, Let me first go and

say goodbye to my little brother
and nephew"

LINDA

Me: "Ma, if I may ask how's
Nhlakanipho's wife?" She looked at
me

Mrs Mhlongo; "He didn't tell you?" I
shook my head

Me: "No he didn't"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Meaning he doesn't
want you to know. Look Linda I
don't hate you, you're the mother
of my granddaughter and I can't
really kick you out but I want you
to know that I love my
daughter-in-law" I looked down so

broken

Me: "Oh"

Mrs Mhlongo: "You're a good girl, you broke Nhlakanipho and Nosibusiso was there to pick up the broken pieces. They're madly in love and not even you, will break them apart"

Me: "Nhlakanipho loves me Ma, I know he does"

Mrs Mhlongo: "He did, He once loved you but not anymore. Don't break your heart because I don't think you will recover from this" I nodded and wiped my hands with a dish cloth before walking away. I found my phone ringing on top of

the bed

Me: "Morning Mom"

Mom: "Morning My daughter, you didn't call" I sighed

Me: "I had not of things going on Ma, I'm sorry"

Mom: "Did you tell Nhlakanipho the truth?"

Me: "Not all of it, I didn't tell anyone about Bontle as yet"

Mom: "You have to tell him Linda, maybe that will make him understand on why you did what you did" I chuckled

Me: "Ma Nhlakanipho hates me, he's married and he hates me so damn much"

Mom: "That can't be true"

Me: "The look on his face is something else Ma, yes last night we kissed but I---"

Mom: "You kissed?" I smiled, that's a highlight

Me: "Yes we did and I realized that I have never fallen out out of love with him"

Mom: "If things don't g---" I interrupted her before she could continue

Me: "I'll come home Ma, Nonhlakanipho needs his father and I... I don't know because that means I'll have to be in Nhlakanipho's life too. I can't

watch him love someone else"

Mom: "That's life for you my baby, welcome to the world of living but I want you to know that I love you and I'll always be there" I sighed, I'm great full for this woman

Me: "Thank you Mom"

PHINDILE

I closed the door behind me, I'm at my sister's apartment. Luckily I managed to get there since there was a spare key at the hidden place where we used to place the key. I breath settling down on the couch. I didn't have

anything with me, a part of me regrets going to that church but I didn't think it's bad or evil.

"You can't run away from me" I quickly got up and looked around the house

Me: "Who are you? What do you want from me?"

"I'm your Mother, Church Mother and you belong to me"

Me: "Don't claim me, I don't belong to anybody!!" I screamed and the door opened then it immediately banged close. The windows became dimmer like it's Night then a sound broke through from outside "What do you want from me?" I

was now starting to shake.

"I want you" I immediately ran up to the kitchen and took a knife which was the only thing on my mind. I looked around for the voice

Me: "Leave me! Leave!!" I screamed with the knife on my hands. The cabinet doors and shelves started to open and close which made me to freak out

"Please Leave me alone" Then a Big shadow appeared on the wall, it really looked so big. There was no one but you could only see the Shadow.

"You're My daughter, Mine:" The

knife dropped down and I ran to the stairs. I suddenly tripped and fell, something was holding my feet.

Me: "Leave me alone" I kept on kicking off that hand but it was big and tight. The hand picked me up and threw me across the room and I landed with my face on the floor. I tried to get up but I was losing strength, the person appeared clear. It was an old woman who had wrinkles, she did look like an ancestor with all the white face. She looked so big though.

"You can't run away from me" I

closed my eyes and silently prayed. I didn't know I was praying so hard until I heard a loud growl. "Stooooooooooooooooop" I didn't stop, I continued praying until everything stopped and when I looked up, it was fine. There was light indicating that it's not at Night. Me: "How did I get myself into this?" I mumbled walking to the door. I held the door handle trying to open the door but I couldn't open. I stepped back and I tripped and fell again. I immediately got up in fright. There were big bold words on the Door written MINE with Blood.

Me: "How will I get out of here?"
I was totally stressed out right
now

NHLAKANIPHO

I kissed her nose then Stepped
back to look at her. She looked
really tired and she's gaining some
kilos

Me: "I didn't know you were
coming"

Nosi: "This is my house

Nhlakanipho I don't have to
report to you"

Me: "Haw Sweetheart, why are you
so grumpy?" She looked at me
then head straight to the

kitchen. I followed behind her.

Nosi: "I'm hungry Nhlakanipho, there's this dish which Nomasa made for me before I left home"

Me: "Oh"

Nosi: "Yes can you prepare it for me? Just Add Avocado mixed with Amasi and apples" I frowned. Who on earth eat that?

Me: "Are you Ohk?"

Nosi: "No I'm hungry, while at it please order some ribs and an Ice-cream"

Me: "There's an Ice-cream on the fridge" she shook her head and settled on the highchair

Nosi: "I want a different Ice-

cream, not that one"

Me: "But you love that one"

Nosi: "For Once Nhlakanipho do what I tell you to do without questioning me! It frustrates me" I popped my eyes and nodded while doing what she said I must do.

Me: "What will you need again?"

Nosi: "Sex"

Me: "What? Nosibusiso are you fine?" She frowned and looked up to me

Nosi: "You don't love me anymore right?" I was getting tired of this

Me: "Nosibusiso what are you on

about?"

Nosi: "You keep on calling me
Nosibusiso"

Me: "Ain't you Nosibusiso?"

Nosi: "I'm sweetheart to you! You
don't love me anymore and I get
it"

Me: "Whatever Nosibusiso

Mhlongo" she smiled looking away.

I took the bowl to her "Here" She
smiled wide taking the bowl

Nosi: "Mmmh"

Me: "Baby you need to jog with me
from Tomorrow" I smiled planting
a kiss on her cheek

Nosi: "Are you saying I'm fat?"

Me: "Oh God! I'll be in our bedroom

Nosibusiso"

Nosi: "You're running away from me, Go! Run" I turned back to her. I turned her so she could face me and got between her legs.

Me: "I love you so much Sweetheart, Even with your nagging and crying I love you" I took the bowl from her and started feeding her. My phone suddenly beeped indicating a message. I took it opening the message

-Nonhlakanipho missed you I knew right then it's Linda, I growled a little placing the phone back to my pocket then I looked

at Nosi.

Nosi: "Who was it Baby?"

Me: "Nothing important sweetheart, don't worry yourself"

Nosi: "Ohk, I love you"

Me: "I love you" I smiled, I feel a little bit guilty for lying but I need some time.

.....

CHAPTER 80

SEASON FINALE

NHLAKANIPHO

I made my way inside the house, Nosibusiso was still asleep when I walked out of our apartment; I just got a call from Linda saying

Nonhlakanipho was sick. It's been Three Days since the whole issue and I was even more scared but I have decided to finally tell Nosibusiso. I was going to tell her this Afternoon.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Nhlakanipho what are you doing here? It's 3am"

Me: "Where's my daughter?"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Nhlakanipho what's wrong? You came all the way just for Nonhlakanipho?" I hissed walking upstairs with Mom following me. She's the one who welcomed me inside the house.

Me: "Linda called saying Nonhlakanipho is sick" Mom chuckle

like there's something amusing about this. I went to look for Nonhlakanipho at her bedroom but she was not there.

Mom: "She's with Linda, this girl is playing tricks on you" I walked to Lind's room and walked in. I was welcomed by the halve naked Linda on top of the bed.

Me: "Oh God!" I turned away from her

Mom: "I'm not up for this nonsense I'm going sleep and wena Nhlakanipho, your better tell Nosibusiso the truth" she walked away and in few minutes I felt hands on my waist. I turned

to find Linda and I pushed her
Me: "What's wrong with you?
Where's my daughter!!?" I half
shouted trying too hard not to
make so much noise

Linda: "Shush she's fast asleep"

Me: "You said she's sick" I mumbled
and she shrugged her shoulders

Linda: "She's fine now, I've been
calling you throughout the day"

Me: "I was busy"

Linda: "Busy with your wife?" She
placed her hand on my shoulder
and I pushed her away.

Me: "Don't talk about my wife,
she's a no go area"

Linda: "You used to love me" She

whispered

Me: "That was before"

Linda: "Before what?"

Me: "Before I fell in love with Nosibusiso, she picked me up as broken as I was and fixed me. I have fallen so deeply for her and there's literally nothing you can do about that. Stop using Nonhlakanipho to get to me, you and I will never be" I mumbled and made my way out of her bedroom.

Sizwe: "Hey Bro" He greeted as soon as I approached him, he was settled on the couch alone.

Me: "Hey, How are you?" He

shrugged his shoulders

Sizwe: "I'm taking it step by step, I have to move on right?" I nod

Me: "Right"

Sizwe: "Your issues are too much" I chuckled looking at him

Me: "You can say that again, Falling in love is a bumpy road bro"

Sizwe: "I know ey, I won't ever fall in love"

Me: "Never say never but I hope your Mapula won't come back from the death when you finally found someone else"

Sizwe: "Whatever!"

Me: "My shit sucks, Nosibusiso is

surely going to kill me I swear"

Sizwe: "For keeping this from her, yes she will"

Me: "I'll have to call my lawyer so I could draft another will"

Sizwe: "What!?"

Me; "What!?" I chuckled "I was kidding"

Sizwe: "Nhlakanipho don't rush to sloppy decisions, process all of this before you change your will"

Me: "I was joking, relax"

Sizwe: "On a serious note though, Please be careful" I nodded placing my hands in my hoddie pockets

Me: "Shit I lost my phone"

Sizwe: "Huh?"

Me: "I lost my cell phone"

NOSIBUSISO

I flipped my eyes open expecting to see Nhlakanipho next me but there was no sign of him. I got up walking to the bathroom and did my hygiene process. Once I was done I walked back so I could call Nhlakanipho, it rang twice and he answered.

Me: "Hey Babe where are you? I was expecting to see you when I woke up" it went silence "Babe?" I called out hopefully he'll answer. What's going on with

Nhlakanipho?

"Nhlakanipho is not here at the moment" A voice of a lady echoed through the sound waves. I thought I heard wrong, I must have heard wrong

Me: "Huh?"

Her: "Who are you? Nhlakanipho is not here at the moment" I disconnected the call immediately, it's not even a full week since we got engaged traditionally and he's already cheating on me! What was I thinking? I walked downstairs and had breakfast before I went off.

Me: "Hey Candy" She smiled hugging

Me. We pulled out

Candice: "You look thick"

Me: "Are you saying I'm fat?" I frowned because that's what everybody is saying

Candice: "No!" She defended herself "I mean you're more thick, You're becoming thick which those curves"

Me: "I hate curves" I mumbled

Candice: "I like them, I wish I was a black person you know" I chuckled

Me: "Trust me it's not good, especially dealing with black parents" I shook my head to that thought

Candice: "White Mother's are sometimes controlling, 'Candy do this or that' 'Harry is a good boy' whatever!" I chuckled

Me: "Harry is handsome for you though, if I was on white men I was going to date him" I grinned and she chuckled

Candice: "Yeah right" I nodded and we made our way in

Me: "I'm so hungry"

Candice: "Didn't you have breakfast?"

Me: "I did but now I'm so hungry, I need food"

Candice: "Oh"

PHINDILE

I kept on praying the whole time because I had no escape from this. I've been locked inside for three days and there's no escape. I was laying on the bed when a figure appeared, tall and had horns.

Me: "What do you want?" I whispered

"I'm your Husband" The figure replied

Me: "You're not"

"I am"

Me: "God is with me and He won't forsake me, you will die in hell"

"That is my second place, you're my wife and you know it"

Me: "I'm not, I'm a prayer warrior and you won't get my soul" I mumbled with so much braveness in me that the figure disappeared

NOSIBUSISO

Nhla: "Sweetheart you've been quite since you got back from school"

Me: "Leave me alone Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "Sweetheart talk to me"

Me: "Are you by any chance cheating on me Nhlakanipho?" I looked up to him as he gasped

Nhla: "What!?"

Me: "You have heard me

Nhlakanipho now answer me"

Nhla: "Come on Sweetheart I'm not Cheating on you"

Me: "Where were you this morning? You were not on bed when you wake up"

Nhla: "I was at Home"

Me: "Oh?"

Nhla: "Yes Sweetheart really, I'm telling you the truth"

Me: "I called you this morning before I heard off to school and you your phone was answered by a woman" I scoffed

Nhla: "Sweetheart..."

Me: "Nhlakanipho Mhlongo please

tell me the truth, nomatter how much it hurts me I'll be able to take it all in"

Nhla:"You sure?"

Me:"Yes,I just need to know the truth"

Nhla:"Linda is back"

Me:"Linda! which Linda" He narrowed his eyes at me and I popped my eyes "Your Dead girlfriend"

Nhla:"She wasn't really Dead, it's so complicated than you think"

Me:"I...I can...I didn't get this"I stutter

Nhla:"I'm sorry I didn't tell you sweetheart I was scared"

Me: "Wow" I matter not believing it

Nhla: "And I... She... S... She came back with a baby girl. She looked like me, she said she's mine" I gasped looking at him, I shook my head and tears dropped.

They dropped!

Tears dropped!

Me: "How long have you known about this?"

Nhla: "Sweethea--- "

Me: "How Long!!!?"

Nhla: "Five days"

Me: "And you didn't tell me? Nhla why didn't you tell me huh why!?" Tears streamed down my

cheeks and immediately placed my hand on my abdomen when I felt some pain

Nhla: "Sweetheart what's wrong?"

Me: "Aww, Ouch!" The pain came too strong and I called out. I felt some moisture in between of my legs

Nhla: "Sweetheart you're bleeding"

Me: "It hurts!" I screamed

Nhla: "You're bleeding, we should go to hospital" He was panicking and helped me out in

.....

CHAPTER 81

SEASON FINALE

NHLAKANIPHO

I kept on pacing up and down the corridor, it's been two hours since they had Nosibusiso but the Doctors are not updating us about her and it's really driving me crazy. I hope she's fine!

Mlu: "Nhlakanipho you're driving us crazy stop pacing up and down the corridor"

Me: "It's been Two fucken hours and they're not telling us shit!!" I hissed so frustrated. I blame myself for this, if I didn't keep things from her this would have never happened.

Sizwe: "Stop blaming your arse

Nhlakanipho!! Nosibusiso needs you and right now you're acting like a sissy" I looked at him then clicked my tongue. I really hope she's fine

"Nosibusiso Dube" I immediately approached the Doctor because she could make her way to us.

Me: "Nosibusiso Mhlongo"

Doctor: "Huh?"

Me: "She's Nosibusiso Mhlongo, what's wrong with her?"

Doctor: "And you are?"

Me: "Her husband"

Doctor: "Can we talk in my office then" I nodded following her as Mlungisi and Sizwe followed behind

Doctor: "She's fine, the baby is also fine thanks to you guys for bringing her earlier because she would have lost the baby"

Me: "The Baby?"

Doctor: "You didn't know she's pregnant?" She smiled at me widely "Well Congratulations sir, your wife is 7 weeks pregnant" I looked at her, I didn't suspect that. Nosibusiso is pregnant, we're pregnant!

Me: "I'm going to be a father?" I whispered so unbelievably.

Mlungisi looked at me murderously, I'm sure he wants to kill me so bad.

Sizwe: "Bro you're a father already but I'm happy for you bro" I nodded feeling proud

Mlu: "I'm gonna whip your arse for getting my Princess Pregnant"

Me: "Come on Man-Luh we're Married"

Mlu: "That doesn't give you a right to knock her off, you piece of shit!"

Me: "Calm down man, Ain't you happy that you're going to be a grandfather?" Someone cleared their throat and I looked up to the Doctor who I have forgotten about.

Doctor: "Well.. "

Me: "Sorry about that Doctor"

Doctor: "Cool, Miss Dub---"

Me: "Mrs Mhlongo"

Doctor: "Yeah, Mrs Mhlongo is fine with the baby and she might wake up any minute from now"

Mlu: "What caused her to...you know... Almost gotten a Miscarriage?"

Doctor: "Stress, it's one of the dangerous things when it comes to Pregnancy so she must stay healthy for her own and baby's sake."

Me: "She's going to be safe"

Doctor: "She's going to need a Diet plan, have exercise book where

she'll draft her activities and I think she must also try Yoga"

Me: "That will definitely be sorted, only the best for my family" I widely smiled but I know Nosibusiso is going to kill me.

Doctor: "I can give you the list of few Gynaecologist which are good and the best of course"

Me: "Great"

Mlu: "I'm still going to kill you"

Me: "Whatever" I rolled my eyes turning my attention back to the Doctor "So when can we see her?"

Doctor: "You can follow me" she walked out and I nervously followed behind her

We walked inside Nosibusiso's ward and there she was sleeping so peaceful as ever. I held on her soft hand and kissed it lightly
Me: "You need to wake up Sweetheart" I mumbled planting a kiss on her forehead then her cracky lips which were still perfect!

Mlu: "Don't do that Nhlakanipho" I looked at him shocked

Me: "What kind of a Father-in-law are you?" Sizwe chuckled

Sizwe: "Come on guys, we don't want to upset our little Princess here" We went quite while I had Nosibusiso's hand in mine.

NOMSA

I got off the phone and looked at Bontle who was settled on the couch.

Me: "Nosibusiso is admitted" I murmur to her and she popped her eyes at me

Bontle: "Is she Ok though?" I nodded.

Me: "She's fine" She nodded "I'll go and check up on the Kids" I was about to turn and there was a knock of the door.

Bontle: "I'll go attend the door" I nod continuing with my way to the Play room.

Lungelo: "Mama" He stumbled making his way to me. I picked her up and kissed his lips.

Me: "You look sad, what's wrong?",

Lungelo: "Dada" I frowned

Me: "You miss your Daddy" He nodded countlessly and I sighed "We will call him right"

Lungelo: "Nah Nah nah, See Dada Mommy" He started to cry

Me: "Lungelo behave!"

Lungelo: "Dadaaaa"

Mpilo: "Nono Luyeyo is clying" [Lungelo is crying] I sighed

Me: "He's being a cry baby, don't be like him hear that" Mpilo nodded

Lungelo: "Daddda"

Me: "Fine we'll go to him, We will go"
Bontle made her way in and looked at me

Bontle: "Mvelo is looking for you, He's downstairs" that took me by surprise

Me: "I don't want to see him"

Bontle: "He's refusing to go, he said he won't leave before he sees you" I sighed placing Lungelo Down

Me: "I'm coming back" I

frustratedly walked downstairs.

He was settled on one of the couches looking so handsome as always. After everything I'm still deeply in love with this man who obviously looked like a snack right

now.

Mvelo: "My Love" I sighed and settled in the opposite couch

Me: "What do you want

Mvelo? Daddy will whoop your firm arse when he finds you here" I mutter and he chuckled, I pout looking all sorts of angry

Mvelo: "I don't care about some whoopings, Nomsa I love you so much and the house feels so lonely without you guys" I chuckled

Me: "Oh Really? After what? Few weeks and now you're thinking us?"

Mvelo: "Look I admit I was wrong but Baby I need you, I'm not

giving up on you nor us" I looked away from him

Me: "Please leave" I wanted him, I wanted him so bad and I know that my heart might be the biggest betrayer

Mvelo: "I'll be in the nearest hotel, here" He placed a card on the coffee table "You'll find me here, I'll be waiting for you" He stood up and looked at me once more before he made his way out.

NKOSINATHI

Katlego: "Nosibusiso and Nhlakanipho are already pregnant, I'm so happy for them"

I eyed her

Me: "Don't be like that"

Katlego: "Like what?"

Me: "Do... What you're doing, we will have kids of our own"

Katlego: "When Nkosinathi? As much as we're believers we both know that the ancestors have spoken-The Mhlongo ancestors"

Me: "Sweet cheeks please don't go there, we'll overcome every obstacle coming our way"

Katlego: "There's no hiding from this, There's no escape

Nkosinathi and I'm scared" I walked over to her, it sadden me when she starts to be this

emotional.

Me: "Don't be scared"

Katlego: "I will lose you"

Me: "You won't" She chuckled through her tears and I understand her pain. I didn't believe it when the ancestors said I have another chosen wife whom will birth my first born. Katlego and I have been trying for kids with no luck; we're healthy and that's when I accepted that I can't really escape this.

Katlego: "Please promise me, promise not to hurt me

Nkosinathi Mhlongo. When you can't take it anymore with me, let

me go "I held her tighter. This hurts more than anything
Me: "I'm here Sweet cheeks, I'll hold you in my arms and I won't ever let you go" She nodded as her head was rested on my chest while I started brushing her hair trying to calm her down

LINDA

I dialed my Mom's phone number and she accepted the call after the third ring.

Mom: "Baby" I sniffed

Me: "Mom it's harder than I thought"

Mom: "What's wrong? Linda what's

going on?" I chuckled shaking my head as tears fell

Me: "He loves her Mom, He loves her so damn much and there's nothing I can do about that"

Mom: "Come home Linda" I quickly wiped off my tears looking at my reflection on the mirror

Me: "No"

Mom: "No? What do you mean No Linda? It's clear that Nhlakanipho has moved on so you need to move on too"

Me: "I love him, I'll do anything to win him back Mom I can't let this little girl win"

Mom: "You're scaring me Linda"

Me: "I'm sorry Mom, I can't let go of him. I love you" I disconnected the call and continued looking at my reflection

NOSIBUSISO

I opened my eyes slowly, I quickly closed them because of the sun and someone closed the curtains so I opened my eyes again.

Nhla: "Sweetheart" It came back, I looked at him

Me: "What are you doing here?"

Nhla: "Sweetheart I'm sorry"

Me: "What are you sorry about? That you're a terrible liar or the fact that you're still in love

with her"

Nhla: "What? I don't love her anymore, I love you Nosibusiso"

Me: "It doesn't seem like that"

Nhla: "I love you So much sweetheart"

Me: "I don't think I'll be able to do this anymore"

Nhla: "Do what?"

Me: "Getting Married to you" I mumbled

Nhla: "It's too late for that"

Me: "It's never too late, I don't want to get married to a liar

Nhlakanipho so I'm breaking things off with you" I slid off the engagement ring placing it next to

him

Nhla: "You don't mean that Sweetheart" I turned to face the other side "We're pregnant, We're going to have a Baby" I gasped snapping to his direction again

Me: "What? You lied at me then knock me off? You don't want me stay away from you that much?"

Nhla: "Sweetheart I ---"

Me: "I just turned off the engagement and suddenly you make me pregnant? God

Nhlakanipho I hate you for putting your fat dick in me!!!" I screamed at him

Nhla: "You're overeating

Sweetheart, You're 7 weeks pregnant not 3 minutes pregnant" I looked at home Me" Are you calling me Stupid?"

Nhla: "What?"

Me: "Know what? Leave and never look back. Leave with your good and delicious Dick and never come back"

Nhla: "Oh" He cleared his throat "Fine, But I love you" I nodded turning to the other side as tears dropped. He kissed the side of my head before he walked out. I can't deal with this, I can't!

.....

CHAPTER 82

SEASON FINALE

[Read with Understanding]

NOSIBUSISO

I have just been discharged from the hospital and I wouldn't say I loved being there. No one has ever loved a hospital including me, the smell of medicine makes it worse. Nhlakanipho leads the way to the car and we climbed in.

Nhla: "Sweetheart are you Ok?" I sighed, I hate how he treats me these days. Like I'm an egg which can break at any time

Me: "I'm fine, Drive Nhlakanipho please"

Nhla: "Ohk" He pressed the accelerator and I looked out of the window. The thought of carrying a person in my womb flashed across my mind. I'm still young for this and I think we're rushing at time though I am in love with Nhlakanipho. The most scary part on being a Mom is the childhood I had; Having to grow up on the street was hard and I'm scared. What if I die leaving my child all alone and finds him/herself on the streets?

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I was bought

to Earth by Nhlakanipho's deep voice. I looked up to him and smiled a little

Me: "What is it?"

Nhla: "Do you need anything?" I shook my head

Me: "No I'm fine"

Nhla: "Sweetheart what is wrong?" He asked, I sighed looking out of the window once again

"Sweetheart" Calmly he called out and I looked back at him

Me: "I... I'm scared Nhlakanipho, I know I'm not ready for the baby but rather than anything I'm scared"

Nhla: "Tell me your fears" that's

what he always says, so I could speak and it helps. It helps to open up with him and he always tried his best to understand me: "I'm scared of dying leaving my child all by her/himself" he frowned, lightly processing what I have just said. His facial expression is saying so
Nhla: "Sweetheart there's nothing you should worry yourself about" I needed that yes but I can't think of anything else
Me: "It's easy on you Nhlakanipho"
Nhla: "You'll make a great Mom, behind that face there's a loving and caring person. I know you will

make great Mom" I smiled feeling good. I looked out of the window again;lost in my own world.

Me:"So? Linda?" That's another topic we've been avoiding lately,he doesn't touch it at all.

Nhla:"Let's not talk about her" I turned to him again

Me:"She's going to be part of our lives so of course we should talk about her"

Nhla:"I love you Nosibusiso" I placed my hand on his brushing it with my thumb

Me:"I know,I... this really took me by surprise but Nhlakanipho let's be real"

Nhla: "Yeah"

Me: "You still love her right?" It went quite, that confirmed it.

He still love her

After all these years.

I sighed turning my attention from him. a Pring of hurt

immediately fill my heart

Nhla: "I love you" He whispered

Me: "And you still love her too?"

You're inlove with Linda"

Nhla: "I...Nosi please" I sighed,

he's in denial I know. He still loves her

Me: "Will there be a wedding?" I

asked, still looking out of the

window. It goes quiet for few

minutes

Nhla: "What do you mean?"

Me: "I don't know too, Remember how much you cried for her? How you would declare your love for her? How you would travel the world for her? Feelings cannot just disappear Nhlakanipho"

Nhla: "It's been 8 Years"

Me: "I know, You failed to answer me"

Nhla: "I...I don't know"

Me: "It's a simple yes or a No, Are you still in love with her or not?"

Nhla: "No I'm not, I still care yes but my heart belongs to you" he started driving slowly

Me: "Make up your Mind
Nhlakanipho, Leave me while it's
still early because I don't want to
be left at the altar"

Nhla: "Sweetheart---"

Me: "Drive Nhlakanipho!" I hate
how much my heart beats for
this man. I'm so inlove with him
that it hurts so bad. Our wedding
will be in Two weeks, that's only if
there will be a wedding

PHINDILE

I opened my eyes, it was dark.
Really dark!

The lights were turned on and
they immediately turned off

Me: "Hello" My voice repeated it's self twice, It was like I'm in a container or something "I'd anybody there" The light switched on. Father Mark appeared from the door, I took few steps back
Father Mark: "Look who we got here?" This is not the man I met years back, it's not him

Me: "What do you want from me?"

Father Mark: "You made a vow, Remember?"

Me: "That was before I knew how twisted you guys are, before everything!"

Father Mark: "That Little girl named Betty shouldn't have said

anything to you"

Me: "Where is she?" I whispered, I know it's at Midday but because of Devil! It made it seem like it's at Midnight

Father Mark: "Dead"

Me: "You're sick" I charged to him but I was suddenly thrown across of the room

Father Mark: "I'm not here for your games"

Me: "Leave me alone!" I was in pain, my face on the floor

Father Mark: "Your husband is waiting for you"

Me: "I don't have a Husband!!!"

Father Mark: "Yes you have a

husband!"

Me: "I don't!"

Father Mark: "Let's go" I started praying and an evil laughter erupted from his evil mouth

"That won't work on me child"

Me: "Don't lose focus" I whispered to myself. I prayed and prayed and a screamed erupted from his evil mouth again, screamed followed and I couldn't stop praying.

Father Mark: "This isn't over!" He immediately disappeared and light reflected where I was. I took a deep breath realising that it's over, the light said it all. I stood

up walking to the door handle and opened the door. I came across with a very beautiful garden which looked really beautiful.

There was a woman settled on the bench humming a song. The last time I remembered I was in Ntsiki's apartment, How did I get here

Me: "Hello" I said to the woman who looked up to me

Her: "Oh! You're Awake?"

Me: "Huh?" I asked in confusion, why is she asking me that?

Her: "You've been asleep for Years, I thought you would never

Wake up again"

Me: "I'm....I...I don't understand" I stutter and she looked at me then smiled

Her: "You've been asleep for Years, Two Years to be specific and I'm glad you're awake because your daughter needs you"

Me: "My daughter?"

Her: "Yes, She's a 1 year looking so beautiful and innocent" I was total confused. I've been having some episodes and now I have a daughter? I was asleep? Does it mean I was dreaming all these years?

Me: "I'm confused"

Her: "I'm a Seer, A good one at that and Two years ago I found you in a road looking lifeless"

Me: "What happened to me? I... I just had some episodes, Or was I dreaming?" She shook her head

Her: "No, You were in another world"

Me: "But---How?"

Her: "They were using your Soul, that's one of the thing which caused you not to wake up in time. They Trapped your soul in that world and the life you had there is different from the life you have here"

Me: "Before I became a Sister, A

Nun I was in love with this man. He was so handsome and one day I went out on... On a lunch "I breath out "I called for a cab, the driver drove to the forest and I... I asked about that and he didn't say anything. I don't know they did to me until...I.. I woke up and I was still at the Forest. I dragged myself to the road and that was it. When I wake up I found myself in a Catholic Church and my mind was replaced with something else" Her: "They manipulated your Mind, making you think you have agreed to this by yourself but they have

forced you to it"

Me: "How do you know all of this?"

Her: "I'm not from around, I came to help too. Help people like you"

Me: "Who are you?"

Her: "Rather ask what am I but I'm a Seer"

Me: "I don't understand"

Her: "It doesn't matter, You need to go home and start off your life"

I nodded still confused as hell, Meaning I've been living some kind of a lie?

Me: "My sister was In hospital in one of tha... that" I sighed

"Episodes"

Her: "They haven't seen you in Years"

Me: "But I spoke to them, I spoke to Ntsiki and Mlungisi"

Her: "That was a phrase, Yes Your sister is In hospital and your so called man is getting a divorce but they haven't been in contact with you for Two Years"

Me: "Who were those? Some Zombies?"

Her: "As I said they were manipulating your mind, From the start when you met up with them"

Me: "Sister Betty and Sister

Leticia weren't real?"

Her: "They are trapped in there, Unfortunately Betty has just died"

Me: "So I...I was really in another world? They were manipulating my mind making me think I... I'm a Nun! I lost time with my family and friends" A tear escaped and I wiped it off

Her: "You're given a Second chance" This is confusing and hurting at the same time

Me: "Where are we?"

Her: "Western Cape, You can travel to Johannesburg anytime you want" I nodded

Me: "Can I see her?"

Her: "Yes you can" I smiled and he stood up and we walked back to the house I was in. We walked inside and the house was totally different, so beautiful and exclusive than when I came out from it

Me: "How? When I.. I... It wasn't like this"

Her: "You were in a different world" We heard to the other room and there was a baby who looked so beautiful. I smiled and immediately fell in love with her as soon as my eyes landed on her. She was fast asleep

Me: "She... She looks like him, His Father" A sob immediately escaped from my lips. How can this world be so evil?

NKOSINATHI

I kept smiling at my beautiful wife, she's such a beauty but I'm worried about her lately. She is always stressed

Me: "You look stressed"

Katlego: "I'm fine"

Me: "No you're not, Talk to your husband my love what's wrong?"

Katlego: "I'm thinking about your chosen wife, how is she like and if you will meet her soon"

Me: "Baby you can't be stressing yourself over such thing"

Katlego: "You won't understand, But then your ancestors are selfish"

Me: "Don't sa---"

Katlego: "What? It's true! What will happen to me when they give you a second wife!?"

Me: "I love you"

Katlego: "Until when? Until she comes into your life and takes over?"

Me: "Baby stop thinking about such thing! I love you and you're the Queen of my Castle"

Katlego: "Let me go to sleep" It's

afternoon and that's what she always does. Sleep and eat or go out for some minutes coming back so stressed

Me: "Don't please"

Katlego: "I love you too" She flashed a smile before she walked away. This is messed up.

LINDA

Me: "What?"

Nhla: "You've heard me, I want a DNA test proving that Nonhlakanipho is mine"

Me: "You're doubting me?" I asked in disbelief

Nhla: "I don't trust anything from

that mouth of yours"

Me: "So you won't trust me when I tell you on who wanted me dead"

Nhla: "Who?"

Me: "You said you won't trust what I utter so better yet fuck out of here"

Nhla: "This is my Father's house, you don't get to cuss or kick me out"

Me: "Fuck you Nhlakanipho Mhlongo Fuck you" I was about to walk upstairs but he held my arm tight

Nhla: "I don't beat up women Linda but you're daring me"

Me: "Let me go"

Nhla: "Who was trying to kill you and why?"

Me: "Let me go" his grip tighten on my arm and I flinched

Nhla: "I asked you a question"

Me: "Nhlakanipho" I whispered

Nhla: "I asked you a question damit!!!" He roared out so loud

Me: "It's Bontle Dube, She tried to kill me because I couldn't stay away from you" I shouted and his grip loosen and I stepped away.

.....

CHAPTER 83

SEASON FINALE

PHINDILE

Me: "What am I going to tell everyone? That I have disappeared to some world for Two years?" The lady whom I have learned to call Merci placed her hand on my shoulder

Merci: "Tell them what you know, Two years ago you were trapped in another world and there was nothing you could do about that" I nodded lightly

Me: "So How did I give birth? I didn't even know that I was pregnant"

Merci: "As I said, I'm not a Human like all of you so I managed to keep you and the

baby alive for Nine Months" I chuckled

Me: "My Life is complicated, It's so complicated and a terrible mess"

Merci: "Explain to them, You didn't know what was happening for Two Years and they will understand"

Me: "So She's really my baby? She looks like her father" I sighed "Exactly like Mlungisi, You could actually tell that she's his"

Merci: "She knows you, She's also a special kid so she needs her family" I nodded

Me: "I'll have to travel to

Johannesburg Tomorrow Morning"

Merci: "There's no problem, I also have to go back to my own world"

Me: "Where is your world?"

Merci: "Where you come from, where you were trapped" I narrowed my eyes at her

Me: "Huh?"

Merci: "We're from the same world as those so called Nuns but we were created by different systems and for different purposes" I slowly nodded

Me: "Ow, seems like you're some kind of the Terminator ish, do you know John Connor?" I tease and she softly laughed

Merci: "You watch so many Movies, This thing will happen again next year though I don't know who's the target"

Me: "It always happens?"

Merci: "Yes always, Every Year but different Target though sometimes it goes from Generation to Generation" I sighed

Me: "I hope it has ended with me, I wouldn't want my children or grandkids to go through that"

Merci: "Just pray and everything will go well"

Me: "I----" I was interrupted by a scream then a figure made its

way at me. I screamed pushing it away "Leave me alone" I stood up then I realized it's her; My daughter. Merci looked at me with pained eyes as she comforted her back to sleep. She picked her up and placed her on the nearest couch.

Merci: "Phindile" Tears streamed down my cheeks

Me: "I'm a bad Mother" I whispered through my tears

Merci: "You didn't know and you've just came back from a very scary experience so you're not a bad Mother" I moved to where Nonkanyiso was; Yes that's her

name. I settled next to her and I looked at her beautiful self

Me: "She's so beautiful, I don't deserve her"

Merci: "You deserve her, You're a great person Phindile and you should start leaning on that" I faintly smiled still looking at Nonkanyiso.

NHLAKANI PHO

I couldn't believe it, How can Bontle do something like this? In matter of fact how could she do this to Mlungisi and I? I thought she was good but the Devil in her is just too thin to be

noticed sometimes

Mlu: "Are you sure?" I nodded and I sighed, I want to put everything behind me after this.

Me: "She gave me this" I placed a copy of a Clip on top of the table. The Clip was in the USB.

Mlu: "I Married a Devil indeed"

Me: "You can say that again"

Mlu: "I Married a Devil indeed" I laughed

Me: "Fuck off man did you have to?"

Mlu: "You said I can say it again so I did, I don't see anything wrong with that"

Me: "You don't?"

Mlu: "I don't" I chuckled and it goes quiet "What's happening now? After this?"

Me: "I'm getting Married to the love of my life, I should not complicate things any further because I'm in love with Nosibusiso" he looked straight up to me

Mlu: "Don't hurt my daughter Nhlakanipho, she's my baby girl"

Me: "I won't hurt her, She's my soulmate and I'll do anything to marry her"

Mlu: "Then this is it, You're finally going to be my son-in-law bro" I laughed throwing my head

back, He joined in.

Me: "Don't do that"

Mlu: "Oh Man, I'm glad you're becoming a man though"

Me: "I'm glad too, She made me a Man. A King is a King with a Perfect Queen by his side and I am happy to say I have found my Queen" He smiled then looked away "What is it?"

Mlu: "I'm happy for you"

Me: "Don't make me do something I don't want to do"

Mlu: "And what is that?"

Me: "Punching your face until you spit what's the matter with you"

Mlu: "I'm worried about Phindile"

it's been 2 years man"

Me: "You need to move on from her,
She's gone"

Mlu: "I couldn't believe my eyes
when I found her gone at the
Hotel with only a letter written
'I'm sorry'" he chuckled. I know it
hurts, He is hurt because he's
definitely in love with Phindile.

Me: "Phindile will come back to you
when the time is right, If you're
meant to be you'll find each other
again" He lightly smiled.

NOSIBUSISO

Me: "You guys are spoiling me" I
giggled as they placed everything

down. We settled on the fleece blanket having our junk

Lethabo: "We're spoiling the Mommy to be and I missed you so damn much"

Me: "I miss you too, I miss school but I'll be attending my Classes on Monday"

Candy: "No Way! It's Your Wedding in two weeks so you need to prepare"

Me: "I don't have to stop living my life because of Marriage you know, I'll be starting with school on Monday and there's nothing you could do with that" They both rolled their eyes.

Lethabo: "Fine!"

Me: "Lethabo how's your love life?"

She sighed

Lethabo: "Great but Mpho hates me"

Me: "Don't mind his arse! Focus on your Babe Mpho will come around"

Lethabo: "Hopefully"

Candy: "You guys and Drama"

Me: "Leave us alone you white Arse"

Lethabo: "Or is it Pink?" We both laughed and my phone rang. I stood up walking to the kitchen while answering to it

Me: "Hy"

"You think you have won?"

Listen, That shame of a wedding won't happen and it's a promise" The call was disconnected and I looked at the phone screen without saying anything

BONTLE

I could feel that it's the end of me, I walked inside over to attend the door and there they were in blue uniform wearing their everyday smirk feeling really proud.

Officer: "Phindile Dube?" I wanted to say No but my stupid head nodded, slowly "You're under arrest for the attempt murder of Linda

Sindana, You have the right to remain silent. Everything you say will be used against you in the court of Law" I could hear my baby crying from upstairs as they handcuffed me.

Me: "No....No please!!!!!" I screamed out loud once in 2 years since I was served the Divorce papers. I thought my life was over then but I didn't think I could be a jailbird.

Officer: "Go Along" I kicked as they dragged me to the van.

Mlungisi's car parked on the driveway followed by

Nhlakanipho's car. They climbed

out heading to us.

Mlu: "You don't deserve a happy life Bontle, You're evil" Tears continued streaming down my cheeks

Me: "Don't Allow them to take me Mlungisi! Think about Mpilo please"

Mlu: "My son is better off without you" They pushed me inside the van locking it. I saw my life flashing in front of my teary eyes and I know it's all over, My life is over!

LINDA

Me: "He choose her Mom, I told him about Bontle but it didn't change anything"

Mom: "I think you should come home my daughter"

Me: "My life is with Nhlakanipho Mama"

Mom: "You were able to live without him for 8 Years Linda, You still can"

Me: "Mo I can't and I won't, I'm not losing Him"

Mom: "Linda do----" I disconnected the call before she could continue with her preaching.

Mrs Mhlongo: "Hey Linda" I turned to her and smiled

Me: "Greetings Ma, would you like a cup of tea?" She shook her head

Mrs Mhlongo: "No I'll be fine" I nodded

Me: "Ma can I ask something? A little favor?" She turned to face me

Mrs Mhlongo: "If it won't cause harm so no problem" I nodded looking at her

Me: "Where is Nhlakanipho's wedding?" She raised her eyebrow in confusion "I've come to realize that Nhlakanipho deserves happiness so I want to support him so I could show my support"

Mrs Mhlongo: "Oh, It'll be a

Garden wedding nothing much so
it'll take place in Zulu

Gardening" That's the Biggest
Garden around, She's having

what was supposed to be mine!

Me: "Thank you Ma, I appreciate

it" I faked a smile placing the

glass on the kitchen counter then

I made my way to my bedroom.

TWO WEEKS LATER

.....

The Two Years means Phindile

was living in another world from

the when she and Mlungisi

started dating till now.

Remember the 2 years later

from the previous chapters.

.....

CHAPTER 84 SEASON FINALE NOSIBUSISO

I blinked countless as the sun reflected straight up to me. I yawned getting up as I sat on my bum. Nomsa was smiling throughout, I'm sure she couldn't wait for this. Me, on the other side I was nervous.

Nomsa: "Look who's awake? The Bride" I looked at her without saying anything "I know how you feel baby, Now it's time to get ready because we don't want to keep the groom waiting now do

we?" Lethabo threw herself in the bedroom and dramatically screamed.

Lethabo: "You're getting Married Friend!!!" I didn't understand why everyone is making a fuss about this ceremony. It's just a wedding.

Me: "Don't be dramatic, This is just a wedding" I mumbled while Nomsa walked over to attend what I think it's the door

Lethabo: "Hello? It's not just a wedding, It's Nosibusiso and Nhlakanipho's wedding"

Me: "Simple as that"

Lethabo: "The well known couple,

You're getting married to the business tycoon baby and every journalist, gossipers, exes, baby mamma and celebrities will be there" I sighed as Nomsa came back and handed me a cup of coffee

Me: "Thank you" I murmur to her
Nomsa: "You're welcome, now hurry so we can get ready" I rolled my eyes sipping my tea

Me: "Yeah Yeah" I got done then Nomsa took my cup while Lethabo showed me the bathroom "I know my way to the Bathroom you know" They're too much. We're at Fortis Hotel and this hotel is just

beautiful and elegant. The design is just so perfect and we'll be coming here after the Garden ceremony.

Nomsa: "Now take a slow bath, don't rush baby hear that" I nodded rolling my eyes

Me: "Yeah Yeah I get it Mom" She chuckled and I walked inside the tub. The water was fresh and it did something great to my skin; Relaxing. After that I stepped out of the tub taking the towel as I wrapped it around my body walking back to the bedroom.

Me: "I'm done!" I say immediately as I walked in "who'll be doing my

Make-up? Even though I don't see a reason to apply a make-up" I pouted

Nomsa: "I'll be doing the Make up baby, I want you to look as beautiful as ever"

Me: "Ow I can't wait to see this"

Lethabo: "She's perfect!"

Me: "The Spokesperson, Wow"

Nomsa: "Mvelo loves it when I play with make-up on him" I cleared my throat

Me: "How are you? The relationship I mean" She sighed

Nomsa: "I've learned that Marriage is hard, but I love Mvelo so I had to fight for my

marriage"

Me: "I'm glad you managed to fight for what you love"

Nomsa: "You Should do it too, Baby sis Marriage is not all bliss. Don't rush to make dramatic decisions. Be true to your heart"

Me: "I hear you Sisi"

Nomsa: "And learn to follow your heart, not your feelings because they can deceive you"

Me: "Thank you" A tear escaped from my eye and I wiped it off.

Lethabo: "Please please don't cry" She frowned then smiled again "We need a glass of wine"

Me: "No please"

Lethabo: "Just a glass baby,
Nothing much" I sighed and
looked at the mirror

Nomsa: "She's excited as if it's her
wedding"

Me: "I know right?" I shook my
head with my eyes set on the
mirror.

Nomsa: "Besides we do need a
glass because the Aunties will be
Here Barking orders at us" I
laughed freely and Lethabo came
back with a bottle of wine and
glasses.

Lethabo: "Let's celebrate this"

NHLAKANI PHO

I fixed my tie as they kept on talking, my mind was not very far but I knew I was excited about this day. I've been dreaming to do this with Nosibusiso and I don't intend to do anything which could hurt her.

Nkosi: "Hey Man" I looked up to him and he handed over a glass

Me: "I can't get drunk right now"

Nkosi: "One glass will do, to calm your nerves" I nodded taking it then I gulped it down placing the glass on the table.

Me: "I'm so nervous, Shit!"

Nkosi: "Everything is worth it, The Nerves are worth it even the day

dreaming" I chuckled

Me: "Don't go there"

Nkosi: "I'm happy and very proud of you Nhlakanipho, You're now a man and I hope you will behave as one"

Me: "I will behave as a man that I am"

Mlungisi made his way to us, He looked at me and smiled.

Mlu: "I'm glad I'm your best man but I have never thought about this kind"

Me: "What kind?"

Mlu: "I'm a best man for my Daughter's soon to be husband, Come on"

Nkosi: "You won't get used to that"

Me: "I won't"

Mlu: "Please treat my daughter good, like a Queen she is because we won't get along"

Me: "I give you my word" We shoulder bumb

Nkosi: "Enough with the bromance let's get ready" I chuckled to his party popping arse!

PHINDILE

I held her Soft hand and made our way inside the house. I still remembered my Sister's apartment though I had fears of

walking in there but I had no choice.

Nonka: "Mommy I'm hungry" With her broken English I smiled, she's such a beautiful innocent child.

Me: "Let's prepare something to eat Ohk?" Then we'll go and see Daddy"

Nonka: "Ohk Mommy" I smiled taking the house phone dialling Mlungisi's numbers.

Mlu: "Hy" He answered after a while, he sounded busy though

Me: "H--Hi"

Mlu: "Phindile? Phindile is that you?"

Me: "Y--Yes it's me Mlungisi, We

need to talk"

Mlu:"Where are you?"

Mlu:"I'm attending my daughter's wedding,give me Two hours though I'll be there"

Me:"I'll try and send the directions"

Mlu:"Ohk and Phindile..."

Me:"Yeah?"

Mlu:"I still love you so much"I smiled as my heart skipped that one beat

Me:"I love you too,I have never stopped loving you".

LINDA

I walked inside the Garden, It looked so beautiful and had a elegant design. This should have been me, it's all mine.

Mrs Mhlongo: "You shouldn't have came here" She whispered as soon as she approached me.

Me: "I'm here to support my baby daddy Ma, There's nothing wrong with that" I shrugged my shoulders.

Mrs Mhlongo: "If anything happens I'll put you behind bars"

Me: "Oh Please spare me the details dear Mother, wait I need a drink" I walked away from her then sighed as soon as I was out

of her sight, there won't be a wedding here. Never!

NOSIBUSISO

My Father handed me to Nhlakanipho as flashes flashed left right and centre so annoying. My father walked to his place after saying something to Nhlakanipho. I smiled as soon as my eyes landed on him, My Soon to be husband.

Nhla: "You beautiful" He whispered, I'm sure he couldn't wait

Me: "You're handsome, as always" He grinned and the pastor started with his preaching until it was

time for our vows and I immediately became nervous. Not because I didn't write down my vows but because I'm scared of what would come from my hear. Pastor: "You look so beautiful and I know your vows are beautiful too" The crowd chuckled.

Nhla: "Nosibusiso, from this day forward I promise to be worth it. Worth the time. Worth the trip. Worth the energy. Worth the embarrassment. Worth your love. I promise that you will always count. You will always come first, and of course, if you don't for whatever reason, I will buy you

some Shoes. From the moment you entered my world, you have filled it with life, colour and energy like never before ... like kool-aid in a mud puddle ... or a cupcake in a salad ... or a rose garden in a junk yard. You are my rose, Nosibusiso. I know it sounds dull but I promise to devote my life to being your dirt. Today, I take my place as your husband. May our days be long, and may they be seasoned with faith, love, understanding, and respect, forever and ever. Today is the beginning of the rest of our lives. I choose to spend today, and all of my tomorrows,

with you" There was a silence of emotions. Tears were streaming down my cheeks, I feel loved. I know this is worth it.

Me: "From the moment our paths crossed, you've captivated me, challenged me, frustrated me and improved me in ways no person has done before. And I have fallen in love with you again and again. I promise to be true to you, to support and encourage you and to challenge and frustrate you. I truly believe we are good for each other and that we will continue to grow stronger together. Today we move from I

to we, Nhlakanipho, take this ring as a symbol of my decision to join my life with yours until death should part us. I walked to this place to meet you today, we shall walk from it together. I love you so much" There were screams and I swear I saw tears in Nhlakanipho's eyes.

Pastor: "Now we'll be joining you, we'll start with the Groom"

Nhla: "I Nhlakanipho Mhlongo take you Nosibusiso Dube to be my lawfully wedded wife to have and to hold from this day forward, for better, for worse, for richer, for poorer, in sickness and in

health, to love and to cherish, till death us do part, according to God's holy law. In the presence of God I make this vow "Dad gave him the Ring as he continued " Nosibusiso, I give you this ring as a sign of our marriage. With my body I honour you, all that I am I give to you, and all that I have I share with you, within the love of God, Father, Son and Holy Spirit" It was now my turn.

Me: "I Nosibusiso Dube take you Nhlakanipho Mhlongo to be my lawfully wedded husband to have and to hold from this day forward, for better, for worse, for richer,

for poorer, in sickness and in health, to love and to cherish, till death us do part, according to God's holy law. In the presence of God I make this vow" Lethabo gave me the ring "Nhlakanipho, I give you this ring as a sign of our marriage. With my body I honour you, all that I am I give to you, and all that I have I share with you, within the love of God, Father, Son and Holy Spirit" After Exchanging the Rings we knelt down on the pillows as the Pastor's prayed for us. We stood up after he was done.

Pastor: "I now pronounce you

Husband and wife, Y----"There was a sound of a gun, someone have pulled a trigger. Then it went silence.

Me: "Nhlakanipho" It came as a whisper

.....

CHAPTER 85

FINALE

NOSIBUSISO

I quickly came back to reality after zooming out for a while. My eyes roamed around the crowd whom were running around. I was puzzled in my own space as I couldn't move.

Lethabo: "Friend we must leave" I ignored her, I totally ignored her.

Nomsa: "Baby sis please, we need to leave" I shook my head

Nhla: "Sweetheart" I looked up to meet his eyes but still, I couldn't move.

Me: "What's happening?" I whispered, I didn't trust my voice. What's really happening?

Nhla: "We have to go" I shook my head but he took my hand into his then I took a step forward.

Me: "Ow" The pain, so aggressively eating out my intestines.

Nhla: "What's wrong Sweetheart, Are you fine? We have

to go" I shook my head placing my hand softly on my belly which was slowly becoming visible. I'm three months pregnant but I'm not showing that much in

Me: "Nhlakanipho it hurts"

Nhla: "What?" That pain, again. I pushed Nhlakanipho's hand back then held on to my waist.

Lethabo: "What's wrong? Nosi what's happening?" I couldn't really answer that

Me: "It hurts so bad

Nhlakanipho" My Father was now next to me in minutes shouting at Nhlakanipho who looked confused.

People were running out already

Nomsa: "She needs a Doctor" She shouted a little bit louder but I didn't think they got her.

Nhla: "Mlungisi what's happening? Who got shot?"

Mlu: "Fuck off Nhlakanipho we need to take Nosi to the hospital" My Father roared at him and that's when he realized what I'm going through..

Nomsa: "We'll follow behind you"

Nhla: "Where's Nkosinathi and Sizwe?"

Mlu: "Don't mind them"

Me: "It's too much" I shook my head while they picked me up running away with me to one of

the cars. We climbed in, with their help and as soon as we settled the car swayed on the road heading straight to the hospital. Nhla: "Sweetheart everything will be fine"

Me: "My Baby Nhlakanipho, Please protect my baby" I whispered as tears were already down my cheeks. Soon I was at the hospital being wheelchaired to one of the wards if not theatres.

Me: "Nhlakanipho please don't leave me" My wedding dress was still the same as the fabric was thick. It was a Royal blue Dress which fitted me so perfectly, I

really looked beautiful in that attire but now I was not on that.

Nhla: "Sweetheart"

Me: "Please" I beg, Sounding a little bit desperate but I need him by my side

Doctor: "We have to hurry so we could see what's going on" I nodded letting go of Nhlakanipho's hand

Nhla: "I'll be here waiting, I love you" He kissed me "That was supposed to be done at the altar" I smiled but the pain struck

Me: "Aaaaw"

Doctor: "Let's go" They wheeled me in further.

LINDA

I drove straight from Sandton to some Mountain as Sizwe's car raced behind me. I packed on the end of the hill and got out of the car, Sizwe's car packed few meters from mine.

Sizwe: "Linda what's up with you?"

Me: "What?" He chuckled

Sizwe: "You wanted to kill Nosi"

Me: "Be grateful I missed"

Sizwe: "The Police are on its way, This is attempt murder and

I'm sure that gun is not legal" I stepped back but remembered the hill then I took two steps forward.

Me: "Fine, Please let me go I'm sorry I tried to kill Nosi"

Nkosi: "You're pathetic! How can you do such thing?" I shook my head, I love Nhlakanipho that's why!

Me: "I love Nhlakanipho, I'm in love with him"

Nkosi: "You're obsessed, I don't understand why you're deeply obsessed with Nhlakanipho" He Huffed looking so scary. Never mind that he looked exactly like

Nhlakanipho.

Me: "I'm sorry, I can't go to jail!" I screamed as tears started to stream down my cheeks. Maybe I wasn't thinking!

Sizwe: "Oh Please Spare us those crocodile tears"

Me: "Please, I have a daughter to look after. I can't go to Jail"

Nkosi: "You Should have thought about that before you did that stupid act" Sirens

Sirens

Sirens

Me: "Oh Please! I can't go to Jail I'm sorry, I will disappear I promise"

Sizwe: "It's too late" I looked at them both, I'd rather die than spend time in Jail. I took few steps back

Me: "Please take care of my Daughter then, Tell Nhlakanipho that I'm sorry"

Nkosi: "Sorry? You'll say th----- "

Sizwe: "You can't kill yourself" I sniffed my fears away. Maybe coming back was a bad idea after all but I'm a better person when I'm not breathing even a second.

Me: "I'm sorry" I whispered stepping back then I felt myself flying down the Hill, seconds,

minutes, minutes, minutes,
minutes till a pain found my back
and I was down the hill with a
paining body. I could feel my soul
leaving my body there for a second
until I closed my eyes. Fully with
tears streaming, I sighed as I
accepted death as an escape.

BONTLE

"Hamba Sboshwa" I was dragged
by my uniform to my cell. The
Orange uniform looked Better
than I thought, I was sentenced
10 years in jail. I couldn't believe
my ears when the Judge uttered
those words.

Me: "Not that hard"

Warden: "Don't piss me off, Go along" He dragged me to my Cell. I walked inside and there were two ladies playing cards while one lady was laying on the bed.

One L: "Aaaw New Roomie"

Two L: "Behave Skallar, Behave" the one I believe it's Skallar raised her Hands up in surrendering.

Skallar: "You may leave"

Warden "The wardener walked away and they laughed standing up"

Me: "Please don't hurt me"

Skallar: "What will prevent us from"

doing that?" The one girl who was settled on top of the bed was still there, quiet not moving an inch but you could hear her breathing pattern.

Me: "Please" A tear dropped. One placed her hand on my throat holding me tight. The other one walked over to me and placed her hand inside my overall causing me to piss myself. I felt that warm fluid flowing and it was confirmed that I urinated myself.

NONTSIKELELO

I smiled at him, Musa as was finally proposing a relationship to

me and I loved him so much that I could wait to say Yes.

Musa: "You mean that?"

Me: "I love you Musa so why not?"

He pulled me in a tight hug and I melt in his arms

Musa: "You don't know how happy I am" I held him tight. We pulled out of the hug

Me: "Me too, I love you so much

Musa Sangweni" He grinned

pecking my lips

Musa: "I'll be going"

Me: "Going?"

Musa: "I'm coming out of this place" I frowned

Me: "Oh"

Musa: "Don't do that"

Me: "What? What have I done?"

Musa: "Frowning, I'll be waiting for you when you come out of here"

Me: "I love you, It might be early but I do love you"

Musa: "I know my Love, I love you too" Life could not be any better.

PHINDILE

I opened the door for him, he stood there looking at me. I looked back at him not breaking the eye-contact.

Mlu: "Phindile" He whispered

Me: "I'm sorry"

Mlu: "What are you sorry about? For disappearing? Leaving me?" I took a step back and he did too closing the door behind him.

Me: "I'm sorry for everything but I...I didn't plan for this, I don't know what was happening" I mumbled what I know

Mlu: "What do you mean?"

Me: "I was in some strange world for two years, I was out there with the Devils Mlungisi and I didn't know anything"

Mlu: "You...You were with Devils?"

Me: "I can't explain this, but I will tell you everything" I started

telling him, every single detail not leaving out anything.

Mlu: "I'm sorry, I.. I'm sorry couldn't protect you"

Me: "I'm sorry too, My life is complicated Mlungisi"

Mlu: "We will fight this, Me and You"

Me: "Me and you?"

Mlu: "Come on I love you" Nonkanyiso walked up to us slowly. I looked at her before I picked her up

Me: "Hey baby" I smiled and she did too. Mlungisi looked at her, narrowing his beautiful eyes which Nonkanyiso inherited.

Mlu: "Is this her?" I nodded

Me: "Yes"

Mlu: "Wow, I have a daughter? Oh my word this is becoming straight and...and overwhelming" He took her from me as they started to communicate.

NHLAKANIPTHO

I held her hand as she slowly opened her eyes, so beautiful and perfect. I smiled planting a kiss on her lips

Me: "Hey" her hand found it's way to her stomach "Our baby is fine, He's fine"

Nosi: "Really?" I nodded

Me: "Yes Really, The Doctor said it's Usual for what happened to happen" just then the Doctor walked in

Doctor: "How's my Patient?"

Nosi: "Hungry" We laughed

Doctor: "Don't worry you will soon eat, I just need you to keep yourself safe and healthy"

Nosi: "What's wrong with me? The Pain?"

Doctor: "During pregnancy your body is going through many changes. These changes are triggered by hormones that prepare your body for pregnancy. These hormones can also cause

many physical discomforts. Luckily, there are easy ways to relieve your pains so I'll Give you a list"

Nosi:"Oh, That's all?"

Doctor:"Yes, and please keep your mind healthy too. Don't stress" She nodded

Nosi:"Ohk Doctor"

Doctor:"I'll leave you to it then"
He walked out and I looked at Nosi

Me:"Let me get my Kiss before the Family budge in to see you" I placed my lips on hers without waiting for her response. I kissed her so passionate, slowly and full of love then I pulled out

Nosi: "Where's the Honeymoon to?"

Me: "United Arab Emirates, We'll be going to your favorite Place" I kissed her cheek and as

expected, the whole family threw themselves inside the ward

Lethabo: "Wedding gone wrong" She clapped her hands as we laughed

Sizwe: "Nhlakanipho can we talk" I looked at Nosi who looked happy

with the rest of the family

before I made my way out

followed by Sizwe.

Me: "What's up?"

Sizwe: "Linda was the one who pulled that trigger"

Me: "What? She wanted to kill my

wife?"

Sizwe: "Something new? But then
Yes"

Me: "Where is she?"

Sizwe: "Dead" It goes quiet "She
fell down the hill what what" I
sighed as a laughter erupted
from Nosi's ward and I smiled

Me: "I have important things to
do, Maybe she deserved to die
after all" We laughed

Sizwe: "I don't know what those
chicks saw in you to be so
obsessed" I chuckled and walked
back inside.

Nosi: "Where's my Father?"

Me: "Went to take care of

something" It goes quiet.
Lethabo: "Anyone wants wine?" Chuckles and giggles erupted again as I walked over to Nosi kissing her forehead
Me: "I love you, Both of you" My hand was on her belly
Nosi: "We love you" I smiled widely, what can a man asked for besides this? I'm complete.

*******THE END*******

**More New African
novels PDF Downlaod
Here**

Www.AskCoty.Com